

CONTENTS.

CHAP. V.

A well-laid scheme disappointed. The great advantage of being well-read in the drama. The scene of action is changed, 20

CHAP. VI.

Squire Sugarcape arrives in England. An odd medley of high and low life. Prejudice of education involves him in many disagreeable circumstances, and at length brings him into imminent danger, 23

CHAP. VII.

An hair-breadth escape. The happiness of being absolutely disengaged in life. An unexpected piece of news shews the perverseness of the human heart, 27

CHAP. VIII.

The pleasures of theatrical society. The squire commences critic and patron: he acts the part of Ixion, and embraces a cloud instead of a goddess, 32

CHAP. IX.

Mr. Sugarcape commences statesman. Signal instances of ministerial confidence and favour. A common change. The conduct of a patriot, 38

CHAP. X.

The history of a cobbler, who would correct the times. The best way to win the hearts of the mob. He over-acts his part, and is turned out as a wrangler, 45

CHAP. XI.

He rises in life, but cannot leave off his old tricks. A repulse overturns his patriotism, which is again renewed by another. The great advantage of a certain quality, generally decried, but as generally practised, 50

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XII.

Luck is all. He returns home, and triumphs over his enemies. Great discoveries in philosophy. His story concluded, and himself left in a fog, 55

CHAP. XIII.

An odd way of expressing favour or dislike. The History of the Crier matched by that of A Crier, 60

CHAP. XIV.

Set one knave to catch another. An instance of moderation as much out of course as in character. The parson swallows a sugar-plumb, and does what he is bid, like a good child, 65

CHAP. XV.

A game of football. A false step gives the crier the better of the match. He kicks the ball in his master's face; but makes all up, and comes off with flying colours, 70

CHAP. XVI.

Muzzle a bear, or he'll bite you. Three remarkable characters. Boys that play tricks should beware of tell tales, 76

CHAP. XVII.

A bad excuse better than none. The advantage of a friend in court. A maxim in law solves all, 81

CHAP. XVIII.

Modern modesty and gratitude. Companions are odious. A good memory often makes a bad companion. It is prudent to make hay while the sun shines, 85

CHAP. XIX.

Signal instances of greatness of spirit. Consistency

CONTENTS.

of character maintained. A scene of uncommon tenderness, 91

CHAP. XX.

The opening of a new scene gives occasion for some reflections, which will probably be least agreeable to those who have most occasion for them, 97

CHAP. XXI.

A life concluded in character. An uncommon legacy of love and gratitude. A particular circumstance necessary to be attended to through the course of this curious work, is explained, 102

CHAP. XXII.

An account of an universal genius. Some curious secrets in the trade of an author; with a new way of replying to impertinent remarks, 109

CHAP. XXIII.

Extraordinary instances of one author's regard for the reputation of another; with a short method of silencing competitors for literary fame, 117

CHAP. XXIV.

A rare example of modesty and respect, on a most trying occasion. A sure way of getting a good character; with some short reflections on literary ambition, and other more serious matters, 122

CHAP. XXV.

The pleasures of being a great man. Mistakes in politicks. One drawn-battle leaves room for another. Children and fools fall out at play, 127

CHAP. XXVI.

A good way to make up for a bad market. Mysteries of state preferment. Servants must not advise their masters. The comfortable effects of modern honour. An heavy cloud gathering,

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XXVII.

A strange apparition disperses the cloud. A new method of making a good steward. The perilous adventures of the knight of the halber, with other savoury matters, 140

CHAP. XXVIII.

An appearance of danger the most convincing argument. A strange character of a strange sort of people. The best foundation for popularity. The mystery of patriotism, with some low prejudices of education, 146

CHAP. XXIX.

A famous war-scene. The modern art of generalship. A new method of reformation, with the lamentable history of a penitential profession, 155



B O O K II.

CHAP. I.

The happiness of having more money than a man knows what to do with. The extensive knowledge of the lovers of Virtù accounted for. Poets not judges of painting, 166

CHAP. II.

Success no proof of merit. The impropriety of being pleased against rule. A curious account of the great advantages of the ancient drama. Painters not judges of poetry. — A capital defect in the designs of the two famous architects, with the wonderful effect of a low window, 173

CHAP. III.

No bag without a bottom. The advantage of keeping a good resolution, an evening spent in taste; and a jaunt to Bath. The misfortune of wanting something to wish for; with some uncommon reflections in praise of what no one desires to possess, 179

CHAP. IV.

History of Mr. Chamælion. The pleasure and advantages of the friendship of the Great. Episode of Monsieur Frippeau and his lady opens some secrets not very pleasing to the hero of the tale, 183

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. V.

Misfortunes multiply. A new method of engaging the assistance of the Great. Common occurrences. Chamæleon breaks with his great friends rather impolitely. His history concluded with some odd reflections, 192

CHAP. VI.

A rare character. Description of a lady's closet. Pleasing meditations; with one side of a remarkable conversation. The history of Cælia and Strephon. Masqued batteries most dangerous in love as well as war, 199

CHAP. VII.

The history of Cælia and Strephon, continued.— An extraordinary method of holding conversation at a distance. People often pay for peeping. Love is a riddle, 206

CHAP. VIII.

Continued.—Perplexity worse perplexed. A slight prejudice of education opens a new scene of confusion. A curious account of a juggler. He foils the Devil at his own weapons; but is surprised himself in the midst of his triumph, 212

CHAP. IX.

The History of Cælia and Strephon concluded. The juggler juggled; and the mystery cleared up at last. Habit too powerful for conviction. The advantage of making the first story good, 218

CHAP.

THE
REVERIE:
OR,
A FLIGHT
TO THE
PARADISE of FOOLS.

*—All things vain, and all who in vain things
Build their fond hopes of glory, or lasting fame,
Or happiness, in this, or th' other life—*

MILTON.

Published by the EDITOR of
The ADVENTURES of a GUINEA.

IN TWO VOLUMES.
VOL. I.

LONDON,
Printed for T. BECKET, and P. A. DA HONDT,
in the Strand. MDCCLXIII.

UTOPIA

RBR

566R

V1

THE
CONTENTS
OF THE
FIRST VOLUME.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. A sudden excursion of an extraordinary nature opens an uncommon view of common scenes, 1

CHAP. II.

Fruitless reflections. The history of Mr. Surarcane is introduced by that of his illustrious father, 7.

CHAP. III.

The hero of the tale makes his appearance. The happy fruits of good education, 13

CHAP. IV.

Love triumphant over nature, but foiled by art. Theatrical morality, 15

CHAP.

19710

“ in asking such a question ; but as you appear to be more of a gentleman, than to trepan such a poor devil as me to the gallows, I will e’en tell you. As to paying me, I shall leave that to yourself, when you get them ; and shall only desire a guinea at present, to buy me some little necessaries, as you see I am rather out of repair.”—

This demand was immediately complied with, on which he named a place above two hundred miles from London. However, without hesitating on the danger of being deceived, he set out directly, and found, to his unspeakable joy, that once in his life the other had acted honestly. As soon as he had made some necessary enquiries, he went to the old gentleman, who was still living, and after a little introductory discourse told her, that he had come, in obedience to the dying request of an unhappy person, to make her the only reparation in his power for the injuries he had done her, by paying for the things he had taken away.

At the mention of his name she burst into a flood of tears ; after the first violence of which was over, she consented to accept of the satisfaction he offered, and finding he was no stranger to his *friend's* other seats in her family, told him, that matters had not proved quite so bad as might have been apprehended, her eldest daughter having miscarried privately, on his going away ; so that she suffered no injury in her character, and was since well married to a man-midwife in the next village ; as her second was to the squire's only son, who, for reasons best known to themselves, made no objection to her for being with child.—Pleased with

with this account, he payed her what she demanded for her things; and then carefully enquiring whether his *friend* had not left some books and papers there, had the pleasure to receive them all, tied up as they had been left; the good woman declaring she had all along been convinced, that a man who knew so much of religion as his *friend* the *parson*, would certainly pay her some time or other; and therefore she had taken the greatest care of them.

Flushed with this success, he returned to London, and going to Bridewell to communicate the good news to his new *friend*, he found that the guinea he had given him had put an end to his adventures the very night he got it, one of his fellow prisoners and he having, for a trial of their heads, drank such a quantity of gin as killed them upon the spot. This event gave him an absolute property in his acquisition, which he now offers to the Public, with the same scrupulous fidelity he observed in relation to the former works of this author; and he hopes this honest account, added to what he said in the Preface to that applauded performance, and the arguments urged in the Advertisement prefixed to the second edition of it, will obviate any suspicion of its aiming at particular characters, or being other than a mere work of imagination.

POSTSCRIPT.

IT may not, for obvious reasons, be improper to inform the Public, that this concludes the works of our author, of this or any other entertaining kind; the rest of his writings relating solely to his attempts to find the Philosopher's Stone.

THE
R E V E R I E;

OR, A

Flight to the Paradise of Fools.

C H A P. I.

Introduction. A sudden excursion of an extraordinary nature opens an uncommon view of common scenes.

AS I indulged myself one evening in the pleasure of reading the divine poem of PARADISE LOST, which I do as often as health and serenity of mind make me capable of enjoying so sublime an entertainment in a proper manner: when I came to the passage * from whence the lines, prefixed to this work are taken, my imagination caught the sacred fire, and I pursued the thought, 'till, wearied with the inexhaustible

* B. III. l. 444, &c.

variety which it opened to my view, I sunk into that suspension of sense, which is called A REVERIE; when the soul only wakes, and, breaking through its corporeal incumbrances, ranges at will over the boundless expanse of creation, and joins in converse with congenial spirits.

The objects about which my mind had been employed remained so strongly imprinted on it, that it immediately continued the scene, but with that consistency and connection which distinguish the visions of imagination from the confusion of common dreams.

I thought I found myself (I knew not how transported thither) on the confines of that world, which MILTON so beautifully describes. The idea of such a scene raised my curiosity so high, that, in defiance of the dread of venturing alone in a place where I was an utter stranger, I was going to mix directly with the multitude, that I might take a more distinct and particular view of the wonderful things which I expected to see there, when a being of most tremendous aspect, appeared suddenly before me; "Hold presumptuous mortal! (said he, with a frown that nailed me to the ground) nor run into a labyrinth, from whence it is impossible to return, without the assistance of some superior being to direct your steps, and disperse the mists of prejudice and ignorance, which at present obstruct your sight."

Such an interdiction was not ineffectual; I stopped, abashed and terrified; but curiosity again getting the better of my fear, "Pardon, mighty lord! (answered I, prostrating myself before him) the error of inadvertency, nor impute

pute to thy servant the fault of his nature. The description I have read of this place has inflamed my soul with a curiosity too strong to bear. O let thy beneficence indulge it for a moment. To thy direction I resign myself. Do thou present the necessary clue to guide my steps, and open my eyes to the wonders which surround me."

"Arise! (replied he, smoothing his brow, with a smile of complacency) I blame not thy curiosity; under the direction of reason, its impulse is the strongest and most extensive cause of human knowledge. But the more important duty of my particular station permits me not to attend to the gratification of it myself. I preside over these regions of folly and confusion, which my strictest vigilance is not more than necessary to keep from falling into utter anarchy. However, thou shalt not be disappointed. The spirit who conducts my subjects hither from the earth will soon arrive. Him will I order to go with you, and give you the gratification you desire, which the nature of his office, and his conversation in the world, enable him to do more satisfactorily than I can, who am too much taken up with other matters, to attend to such trifles as the actions of mankind. And opportunely here he comes. ARIEL, (continued he, addressing himself to another spirit who just then joined us) this mortal is permitted to take a view of our mysterious empire. Do thou conduct him in safety through it, and inform him of every thing that is proper for him to know, and for thee to reveal."



ADVERTISEMENT.

IN the following work the judicious reader will directly trace the hand of the author of *CHRYSAI*. The uncommon approbation with which that performance has been received by the Public, determined the editor to spare no pains nor expence, to recover the other remains of so successful a writer. The difficulties attending such an attempt are obvious. From the supposed *Clergyman** alone, into whose hands they first fell, could any account of them be expected: but how to trace him through all the various characters, which such persons usually assume, was the question. At length, after a most fatiguing search, he was indebted to accident for that success which all his diligence had failed of. He was called upon one evening by an acquaintance, to go with him to Bridewell, in search of a servant girl of his, whom the laudable vigilance of the constables had taken up in the street the night before, when she was sent on an errand, and the strict justice of the magistrate had committed to the house of *correction*, as she unluckily had not a penny in her pocket to prove her innocence, or even pay a messenger for going for her master. While they waited in the public room

* See the preface to *CHRYSAI*, p. 21.—

for the return of a person who was sent for her discharge, they were struck with the uncommonly droll look and behaviour of the woman who served the company with liquor. To divert the melancholy reflections, therefore, with which such a scene of wretchedness and debauchery most necessarily affects every human heart, they called for a glass of wine, and desired him to sit down and drink with them. The invitation was readily accepted; and the fellow observing that they expressed some curiosity to know how a man of his apparent abilities could have sunk into so low a station, immediately gave them the following outline of his history.

“ Gentlemen, (said he) there is nothing in this life but *ups* and *downs*. Low as you see me at present, I have often figured in an higher sphere. I have been a player, a doctor, an author, and a parson; and have acted my part with proper dignity in each character till the farce was ended. I have also, indeed, amused myself with taking a view of life in less exalted stations. I have been a broken soldier, a shipwrecked sailor, a fool, a madman, and a gypsie; in reward for some feats of uncommon cleverness in the last of which characters, I have had lodgings assigned me here, rent free, for seven years, where, that I should not be idle, I have descended to the occupation in which you see me. However, I am not dispirited. Seven years will not last for ever; and I hope to be prime minister yet, before I die.” —

ADVERTISEMENT.

The moment he mentioned his having been a villain, it occurred to the editor, that this might be the one whom he had been so long in search of. As soon as he stopped there, going to think of his health, he must be allowed to say, and he said, that you have seen life in various conditions; but there is one circumstance in your history which I do not understand. You say you have been a pirate—"No," he answered the other, "not of your sort;—not a sea-robber, who would stir the world pregnant with poor people out of their homes, and then picking their pockets. But my conscience was too tender for such a villainy, so I left it and turned gypsey; though I have had reason enough since to repent of the manner in which I took that step, as I lost an opportunity of making my fortune by it. You must have heard of the book that has made such a noise lately, *The Adventures of a Guinea*. Sir, that book was once mine; but I had not the good fortune to make a proper use of it. I must needs attempt altering, forthwith; and before I had finished, some impertinent suspicions of my neighbours obliged me to shift my quarters somewhat suddenly; and in my hurry I forgot to put up that book along with the rest of my papers."——

The editor had some difficulty to conceal the pleasure which this account gave him, though he was sensible that the utmost address was necessary, if he hoped to succeed with such a voluble genius. "And pray, sir, (said he therefore, with a careless air) were you the author of that book?"——"No, sir, (answered the other)

“ I was not the author of it, but it was mine
“ notwithstanding. That, and some other
“ papers of infinitely greater value, were given
“ to me by the woman in whose hands the au-
“ thor left them. If you have read the pre-
“ face to that book, you must remember she
“ says, that her old lodger was succeeded by
“ a *Clergyman*, who left her house to go preach-
“ ing about the country. I was that *Clergy-*
“ *man*, sir. But it is not the loss of that book
“ which I lament. Well as it has succeeded,
“ it was not to be compared with another of
“ the same author’s, which I made a shift to
“ carry off, and which would certainly have
“ made my fortune, had I not lost it in much
“ the same manner as I did the other. But
“ it is in vain to grieve at what cannot be
“ remedied; and so, gentlemen, my service
“ to you.”

“ You must know, gentlemen, (continued
“ he, as soon as he had drank off his wine,
“ which now began to warm his heart, and let
“ all his secrets abroad) that in the course of
“ my *ministry* I insinuated myself so far into
“ the good opinion of the wealthy widow of a
“ country farmer, that she took me into her
“ house, to instruct her children in the true
“ reformed principles of religion, having fallen
“ out with her vicar about his dues. If I
“ could have contained myself, I might have
“ lived happily enough with her; but the flesh
“ was frail; I was then a young fellow, and
“ her daughters were good clever wenches.
“ In short, I taught the two eldest of them
“ other lessons beside religion. Such matters
“ cannot be long concealed. My kind pu-
“ pils

ADVERTISEMENT.

“pils soon began to feel symptoms that shewed me it was time to decamp; which I did accordingly, without taking any leave, to avoid the pain of parting: but as I was not so well provided for my journey as I could have wished, I made bold to break open a chest in which the old woman kept her most valuable things, and took as many of them as I could conveniently carry off. This obliged me to leave my own baggage behind me, which, to say the truth, was of no great value, except those papers; and the worth of them I was also ignorant of at that time; though I am sensible now, that it greatly exceeded that of my booty, which consisted only of an old silver tankard and cawdle-cup, and a parcel of linen; for, the beldame kept her cash somewhere else.”——

This account was far from giving the editor satisfaction, as he apprehended that it would be very difficult to prevail on him to make a discovery that might endanger his life; by telling where he had performed those exploits. However, he resolved to make the attempt, and, taking him into another room, told him, if he would let him know where those papers were left, he would give him the most sacred assurance that no ill consequence should attend his confidence, and that he would honestly pay him the value of them, if he should be so fortunate as to recover them. The other turning his head on one side, and fixing his eyes intently on him, with a look of inexpressible archness, for some time, “Why? (said he) there is something odd enough, to be sure,

CONTENTS.

CHAP. X.

Different appearances of the same object seen in different lights. A whimsical representation of the last efforts of gallantry, with other no less curious matters, 227

CHAP. XI.

Anecdotes of a celebrated female. A fencer foiled at his own weapons. Secret of a correspondence not so uncommon as unaccountable; with a striking instance of vicious vanity. A new scene, 232

CHAP. XII.

Account of a remarkable person. Common consequences of a common connection. The scene changed. A good partner often helps out a bad game, 237

CHAP. XIII.

Looking back often dangerous. Female artifice triumphant over reason and virtue. The natural consequences of this. A remarkable instance of the effect of complying with the fashion, 244

CHAP. XIV.

Worse luck, and more of it. A new method for breaking a bad habit. Travellers often return without their errand, 250

CHAP. XV.

Anecdotes of a professed wit. A lucky hit made the most of. Too much of one thing won't do. A rough retort of a coarse jest; with other curious matters of the same kind, 256

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVI.

Instances of the compassion common on such occasions. The practical joker enjoys a double triumph over the wit. Other worse consequences of the prostitution of genius, 264

CHAP. XVII.

An old observation confirmed by a new character. A remarkable instance of the inconsistency of the human heart. A curious love-scene proves that the pleasure of variety is sometimes attended with danger and inconvenience, 270

CHAP. XVIII.

A new motive for turning soldier; with a short view of the military profession. The scene is changed, and a more extensive prospect opened, 277



from the additional danger of offering them to sale to strangers, In return for which services they generally gave him such cheap bargains, that the profit over-weighed his fears, and confirmed his hopes of making an easy fortune in a short time.

“ But this happy prospect was soon overcast. Some of his most intimate friends having the bad luck not to come off so cleverly in their enterprizes as usual, his zeal for the public good prompted him to turn evidence against them; by which precaution also, he prevented their making discoveries to his disadvantage. But though he saved his life by this prudence, circumstances appeared so strong against him, upon the whole, as the original contriver, and principal manager of the scheme, that he was ordered to take a voyage to the *West-Indies*, to assist in civilizing the savage natives, and improve the interests of an infant colony, by his superior abilities and address.

“ I have been so particular in this affair, which happened when the person before us was about three years old, because it laid the foundation of his present fortune. His father naturally took him with him; and as his prudence had made him be always upon his guard, he was able to make such provision for his voyage, that it was neither so uncomfortable, nor his prospect so desperate as is usual with persons in his circumstances.

“ The first thing he did on his arrival, was to purchase a plantation, which he was able to stock so well, that in a very few years, between the profits which he reaped from that, and the advantages his superior knowledge gave him

him in other dealings, he not only acquired a fortune beyond his most sanguine expectations, but also arose to the highest honours and power, in that part of the world to which the ignominious manner of his going there was no obstruction, as it had been the general case.



CHAP. III.

The hero of the tale makes his appearance. The happy fruits of good education.

“**I**T may be judged that his worship’s mind was too intent upon matters of more moment to permit his taking much thought about the education of his son. Indeed, the notions he had formed of such affairs, from the education he had received himself, made him think any great trouble or expence about such a trifle quite unnecessary. He therefore had him taught to read and write a little by an attorney, who had unluckily carried the practice of his profession rather too far in his own country, by signing a client’s name to receipts for money, without his knowledge, for which he had been compelled to travel hither, where he now served his worship in the capacity of his clerk; and the politer accomplishments of dancing, musick, fencing, &c. &c. he was instructed in by a young gentleman from the theatre, whose intense application to the business of his profession had so entirely wrapped him up in personated characters, that he had unfortunately forgot to lay them

them aside, and re-assume his own in the common affairs of life ; but had gone in many different ones, according to the parts he meant to play, to different tradesmen with whom he had a desire to have dealings, who, upon the discovery of the mistake, were such illiberal discouragers of merit, as to impute it to a fraudulent design, and lay him also under the necessity of making the same voyage.

“ As the young squire's parts were lively, he soon made a happy proficiency under such eminent masters. Before he was quite fifteen, he could dance, sing, and play on the guittar almost as well as his master ; and repeat several speeches out of plays, which he had learned by rote from him, to the great delight and surprize of all who heard him : and by eighteen, he could make a shift to read a play himself, and write a billet-doux, as well as was necessary for a gentleman of his rank and fortune.

“ Nor was the care of his tutors confined to the accomplishments of his person only : they also formed his mind in proper principles, civil, social, moral, and religious. Accordingly, to open his way of thinking, and free him from the narrow prejudices of vulgar education, he was taught, that religion was a cheat ; virtue, want of spirit, and law a bugbear, fit only to restrain and terrify the ignorant and poor ; and these opinions, far from being merely speculative, ruled the constant practice of his life. Bred-up among a crowd of slaves, who trembled at his nod, he looked upon himself as entitled to treat every one with haughtiness and tyranny. He indulged every passion with which youth and flattery could inflame his heart,

heart, laughed at every thing that was called sacred, and enquired what was law, only for the pleasure of transgressing it.

“ While his pleasures affected only himself, he was safe from interruption or restraint from his father; but at length, some consequences happening to attend them, which interfered with his business, such as the disabling and deaths of some of his slaves, whom the squire had diverted himself with proving his strength and dexterity at his weapons upon; and the flight of others, for rapes committed on their wives and daughters, he resolved to send him over to *England*, to polish his manners, and complete his education.

“ Nor were these, weighty as they were, the only motives for his forming this resolution. An affair of another nature made him also think his son’s absence necessary, at least, for some time.



CHAP. IV.

*Love triumphant over nature, but foiled by art,
Theatrical morality.*

“ THERE lived in the neighbourhood of his worship a clergyman, who had been obliged to leave his native country, to avoid being thrown into jail for a debt he had contracted by going to law, to defend a living which had been given him by a nobleman, to whom he had been tutor, and whose right of presenta-

presentation was disputed by the bishop of the diocese.

“ His lawyers had encouraged him to carry on the suit by the most confident assurances of success, and his patron promised him to defray the expence of it ; but, on his being cast by the bishop, his lordship denied his having ever given him such a promise ; and his lawyers absolutely refused to make even the least abatement in the bill of costs, which they immediately brought him, and which was so entirely beyond his ability to discharge, that he had no way of preserving his liberty but by flight.

“ It must be thought, that the conversation of such a person could not be much in the taste of his new neighbours ; but the inoffensiveness of his conduct, and the convenience of the influence which his virtues soon obtained him over the ignorant savages, insensibly reconciled them to him, and even gained him some degree of their esteem and respect.

“ *Euphrasor* (that was the clergyman's name) had a daughter much about the age of our young squire, who was blessed with every beauty of mind and body. Neighbourhood naturally introduced an acquaintance between their families, which was soon improved into a tenderer connection between the young pair.

“ Nor was this to be wondered at ! Her it was impossible for man to behold unmoved ; and in the gifts of fortune, and the external advantages of form, he had a confessed superiority over all the young men in that part of the world. As to the defects of his mind, they seemed to proceed rather from want of proper education than from any natural propensity to vice ; and therefore,

fore, as he was still so young, might easily be removed.

“ From the time he became acquainted with *Maria*, (so *Euphraner’s* daughter was called) his heart felt sensations which it had ever been a stranger to before. He was unhappy every moment he was from her, yet when in her sight, there was a majestic delicacy in her whole behaviour, that humbled him in his own eyes, and held him in a state of distant awe and almost adoration.

“ This necessarily had an immediate effect upon his whole conduct. He grew thoughtful, discontented, and reserved; complained of the deficiencies of his education, which her accomplishments of every kind shewed him in the most mortifying light, and avoided the company, and expressed an abhorrence of the pleasures he had always been so fond of before.

“ Such a change soon alarmed his theatrical tutor, (the other had been long dismissed from his care of him) as he saw that it threatened the subversion of his ascendancy over him. To obviate such a misfortune required his immediate care; in which he was so far from doubting of success, that he even hoped to turn it to his advantage, by his experience and address, and make it a foundation for a firmer power than he yet enjoyed.

“ Accordingly he threw himself one evening in his way, as he was returning from *Euphraner’s*; and observing him more than usually thoughtful, “ What is the matter, (said he) clapping him familiarly on the shoulder; Has *Dulcinea* frowned upon her love-sick swain? Hah! hah! hah! Come cheer up! we will find

At these words, he vanished from my sight; and Ariel advancing to me with an air of affability and kindness, "Come, thou most favoured of mortals, (said he) and enjoy an indulgence hitherto denied to man. The adventurous bard, whose bold description led you hither, snatched but a general glimpse, as he flew by. The whole shall be disclosed to you, and all its mysteries explained."

Encouraged by the manner in which he spoke, I raised my eyes from the ground, where fear and reverence had fixed them, and addressing myself to him, "Accept, (said I) most gracious spirit, the warmest expression of my gratitude for this inestimable favour. Lead where thou wilt, thy willing servant follows; but if it be not too much for me to ask, vouchsafe first to inform me what is this place called, and who are the inhabitants of it?"

"The world, which is thus opened to your view, (answered he) is THE PARADISE OF FOOLS; where self-deluded man, thro' endless ages, continues to act over the absurdities in which he blindly placed the happiness of his life. 'Till you have completed the appointed probation of mortality, and are purified by death, from the stains and infirmities of a corruptible body, you are not able to see their actions in their genuine colours, stripped of the disguises which impose upon themselves; for as they are actuated by their former passions, they still labour under all the weaknesses and imperfections of their former senses: however, I will remove the veil for a moment, and give you a sight of human nature, in a state that never was before revealed to mortal eyes."—Saying this,

his, he touched my eyes with the end of a wand which he held in his hand, when instantly a flood of light broke in upon them, that illumined all my soul.

It is impossible for words to convey an idea of what I felt at this view of human life, divested of all the specious colouring which men mutually put on to deceive each other, and that with such eagerness and industry, as often to hide the imposition from themselves also in the end, and so become the dupes of their own deceit. Amazed at such a scene, I could not help exclaiming, "O sapient spirit, what can this be? The actions of these beings bear the strongest resemblance to those of man; but there is a vein of folly runs through them all, which makes them look as absurd and ridiculous as the tricks of children in their mimic plays. Can this be their eternal employment? Or is it possible that they should be insensible of the grossness of such folly!"

"Such is the life of man, (returned the spirit with a significant smile) and so appear the most important of his actions, to beings unaffected with the weakness of his nature. This world is, as it were, A REFLECTION of that which you have lived in. In it, AS IN A MIRROR, you behold the human heart in all its various situations. You shall have a view of the whole; but to make the gratification of your curiosity the more satisfactory, I will lead you first to yon fantastic scene, where your knowledge of some of the actors will make the farce more interesting to you; for you must observe, that as this world of ours is but a shadow of that of man, it necessarily is divided like it into

6 THE REVERIE.

different countries, which bear the same names, and are in every respect under the same circumstances as these. But I see your sight is dazzled with this extraordinary degree of light; I will therefore draw the veil over it again, and restore things to that appearance which is suited to your present state."

"Whenever occasion requires, I will remove the obstacles which obstruct human sense, and enable you to perceive the particular objects which I point to, at the greatest distance; free from the confusion that an unlimited view of such a complicated scene must unavoidably throw you into. The walls of the closet shall be transparent to your eye; and the secret whisper sound distinctly in your ear."—With these words, he waved his wand before my eyes; and immediately the scene sunk into its original obscurity.

The spirit then took my hand, and rising with a bound, we glided through the air, with a velocity that distanced thought, though without any apparent motion of our own, till we arrived at the place which he fixed on as a proper station for our purpose.

As soon as we stopped, "We are now (said he) in the midst of the busy scene; but I have made your form imperceptible to those purblind beings, so that you may indulge your curiosity, without interruption or discovery."



C H A P. II.

Fruitless reflections. The history of Mr. SUGAR-CANE is introduced by that of his illustrious father.

THE first thing that caught my attention, when I had recovered from the astonishment with which my method of travelling had struck me, was a mixed multitude of all ages and degrees of mankind, clapping their hands, and shouting round a person, who was addressing them in the most insinuating manner, while people, employed by him served them with wine, in quantities sufficient to drown every glimmering of reason, and deprive them of all power of attending to what he said.

My guide saw my surprize, and without waiting for my desiring an explanation of the cause of it, resumed his discourse in these words, which he uttered in a voice, that, to the gross senses of the beings round us, seemed the soft whisper of the passing breeze.

“ I see you are amazed at the unaccountable extravagance of the scene before you. This one instance, even were there not ten thousand others equally flagrant, would be sufficient to shew how absolutely folly rules the heart of man.

“ Of all the transactions of human life, there is scarce one of more real importance to it than this in which these people are at present en-

gaged. They are chusing a person to represent them in the legislature ; to protect their properties, to promote their interests, and provide laws for the preservation and increase of their happiness and glory ; and consequently into the hands of this representative do they commit the care of every thing justly dear to them in the world. (You are to take notice, that in conformity to the illusion under which these infatuated beings act, I speak of them and their actions, as if they still were in the world they have left ; and this caution I give you, once for all, to prevent mistake and confusion.)

“ But what are the qualifications required for this sacred trust ? and by what arts does the candidate for it insinuate himself into the confidence of the people, to obtain such an unlimited power over them ? Examine the scene before you, and there you see the whole mystery. The ambitious are plied with promises, the covetous with bribes, and all with liquor, till they are heated to a degree of intoxication sufficient to make them give credit to whatever he says, it matters not how contradictory to common sense, and the conduct of his past life : for who could be expected to sacrifice his fortune, and prostitute his reason in the manner this person does, to a romantic desire of doing service to those who are so wretchedly improvident that they will not serve themselves ? What has he who sells himself a right to expect, but to be sold again ?

“ Thus far the electors seem to be the only fools, and to leave a name of still a blacker import to their elected representative. But to a nearer view the imaginary difference vanishes,
and

and all appear equally entitled to admission into this place.

“ For who, that gave the least attention to the voice of reason, would dissipate his own wealth, and sacrifice the solid happiness of independence, to acquire a power of committing a breach of trust, as absurd as it is perfidious? Or what are the mighty advantages even proposed by the most sanguine pursuer of such a scheme? Nothing but a deceitful smile of court-favour, an ignominious preference in the execution of some iniquitous job, for which he receives the paltry reward of a precarious pension or employment, the value of which is inconsiderable, in comparison of what he has lavished in the infamous pursuit; not to mention the prostitution of his conscience and honour.

“ Nor does the folly of his electors, in suffering themselves to be seduced by such base motives, in the least acquit him of perfidy. The most venal elector who ever took a bribe would refuse the candidate with detestation, who should openly avow the iniquity of his intentions, and tell him, he bought his power on purpose to sell it again. Professions of honesty, however improbable, are always expected; and though partiality palliates to himself his own venality and corruption, he looks for promises of the opposite virtues from the candidate, which he implicitly believes, because it is his interest that he should have them.

“ Thus gross as this prevarication is, it obviates every excuse the candidate can make for his corruption, and convicts him of perfidy even against his equally corrupt elector. But not to dwell upon the iniquity of this practice,
B there

there is a degree of folly in it, that would exceed belief, did not too frequent experience prove it. It is selling a man's birth-right for even less than a mess of pottage; for what security has the elector of enjoying his bribe, or the representative his pension, when the very act that earns them these wretched wages of prostitution, absolutely enslaves them to the tyranny of that power which they have thus jointly laboured to erect, and which can deprive them of these and every other emolument of life at pleasure?

"I have been insensibly led into these reflections, by the execrable folly of the scene before us; but, obvious and just as they are, the force of them will appear in a still stronger light, when illustrated by a short view of the life of this very candidate, the circumstances of which prove the truth of every remark that I made, beyond a possibility of doubt. General reasoning is too often founded on false principles, and leads the unwary mind into error; but instances from matter of fact can never deceive.

"His name is *Sugarcane*: he was born in *London*, where his father, for some little time, followed one of the meanest mechanic trades; to which, after unexpectedly outliving the neglects and cruelties of a parish nurse, he had been bred at the parish charge.

"The sanguineness of his temper equalled the strength of his constitution, and would not permit him to remain long contented in so low a station, though poverty seemed to preclude every possible hope of rising to an higher, except by the slow steps of honest industry. But this

this he despised as beneath him ; and being freed from every restraint of honesty and virtue, by the principles which he had imbibed in his education at a charity-school, he resolved to strike out a shorter way, or fall in the attempt.

“ Accordingly, in a little time after his marriage with my mother, he quitted his trade, and laid out her fortune, which was no more than the savings of a life of servitude, on the stock of a public house, as the way in which he could exert his abilities to best advantage.

“ In the course of his education at the charity-school, he had formed acquaintances with several of the most promising youths of the age, his school-fellows, the vivacity of whose parts had been early displayed in offering insults to the very hands which reached them bread, patrolling the streets at midnight, beating the watch, breaking up brothels, which refused to submit to their pleasure, and standing bullies for whores ; and who as they advanced to riper years shewed equal genius and spirit, in striking out and executing various ways for remedying the partiality of fortune, and wresting her favours from the less worthy hands into which she had blindly given them.

“ With these he immediately improved his former acquaintance into the closest intimacy, not only affording them an harbour in his house when they were under apprehension of the ungenerous severity of the laws, for few of them ever fell from the hopes of their youth ; or relinquished the practices in which they had been so early trained ; but also frequently purchasing the prizes which they had so gallantly taken at the hazard of their lives, and so saving them

“ Such an action struck them all with horror. They instantly took to flight, in which he attempted to follow them; but conscious affright deprived him of the little strength which liquor had left, and he fell at his length in the street, where he lay unable to rise, though not insensible of the danger that hung over his head, his apprehensions of which were far from being lessened by hearing the wretch cry out murder; as he thought it impossible for him to outlive such a wound, though the joke he had designed was disappointed, and it happened not to put him to immediate death.

“ The first cry of murder brought a number of the neighbouring watchmen to the place, who found the squire with his drawn sword lying on the ground by him, and every circumstance of his appearance confirming his guilt. But if this had not been sufficient, there wanted not direct proof of it; for some of his companions considering the consequences of having been known to have been in his company, and aware of the danger that might attend his impeaching them, returned immediately to the place, and charged him directly with the fact.

“ On this he was dragged away to the round-house; where his fright soon recovered him from his drunkenness, and shewed him all the horrors of his situation. In vain did he offer immense sums for liberty to make his escape; the affair was now public, and the watchman's wound was declared mortal, by a surgeon who had been called up to dress him.

“ Accordingly, after suffering the insults of the watch; and the revilings of his companions, who strove to shew their own innocence by
aggravating

aggravating his guilt, for the remainder of the night, he was taken before a magistrate next morning, where the circumstances of his crime were examined into with the most excruciating minuteness, and the consequences of it hazarded in such terrifying colours as were sufficient to strike the boldest heart with despair; and when thus properly prepared, he was committed to the common prison, to wait the sentence of the law, among the vilest malefactors who disgrace the human name.



C H A P. VII.

An hair-breadth escape. The happiness of being absolutely disengaged in life. An unexpected piece of news shows the perverseness of the human heart.

“THE news of the squire’s misfortune was immediately spread over the whole town, and of course soon came to the ears of his father’s correspondent; who, though he was highly dissatisfied with his manner of life, thought it his duty not to desert him in such a dreadful condition. He therefore went directly to the magistrate, and learning the circumstances of the affair from him, found reason to suspect that it was not so bad as was represented; but was aggravated with a design of extorting money from the terrified criminal.

“In consequence of this suspicion, he sent for a surgeon of character, and going to the
C 2 place

place where the watchman lay (an attorney's house) insisted on seeing his wound opened ; when it appeared so far from being mortal, that the surgeon declared it was not even dangerous, with the least care, the sword having happily hit upon a rib, and so only glanced between that and the skin.

“ On this discovery, the merchant demanded his friend's being admitted to bail ; and on the magistrate's consenting, because he did not dare to refuse, went himself to the prison, with the joyful tidings : where he found the desponding wretch surrounded by a gang of solicitors, and knights of the post, who were planning schemes for his escape by perjury and chicane, and at the same time exaggerating his danger to enhance the price of their own damnation ; in earnest of which, and to quicken their invention, they had already received all the money in his pocket, which amounted to a considerable sum.

“ At the first sight of the merchant, these harpies vanished like owls at the appearance of the sun. The good man saw the squire's distress, and judging that it might be a proper time to work upon him, softened thus by fear, he sat down, and entered into a friendly expostulation with him on the folly, vice, and danger of such a life as he had led ; and concluded by wishing, that his present almost miraculous escape might make a proper impression upon him, for the remainder of his life.

“ The squire heard the former part of his discourse with little's inattention ; but at the mention of his escape, he fell upon his knees, and, eagerly kissing his friend's hand, conjured him to confirm the happy word.

“ It

" It is impossible to describe his situation on being satisfied that his danger was over. His spirits, ever in extream, were raised as high as they had been dejected before; so sudden a transition from despair to happiness (for so his joy for that moment might justly be called) almost depriving him of his senses. He broke out into such inconsistent extravagancies of exultation, that he made his friend for some time fear he should utterly lose his reason. But his strength soon failing under such accumulated fatigue, his spirits sunk into a settled calm; and he left the prison in the most rational state of mind he had been in since he came to *England*.

" The horrors he had endured in this affair made an impression on his mind, which influenced the remainder of his life. His danger determined him for ever against such exploits as that which drew him into it; and the behaviour of his companions gave him so strong an aversion to such society, that he refused their visits of congratulation on his return to his own house, and never would mix with them more.

" He was now in such a state of suspense, for the choice of his future life, that had any principles of virtue been inculcated in his mind by education, he might most probably have followed their direction. But when the voice of pleasure, the tumults of dissipation, and vice, were silenced, all was a wretched void within him, and he was really obliged to give into the first scheme of active idleness which chance suggested for want of knowing what else to do.

" Just in this critical time, he happened to receive a packet of letters from home. That

of his father he threw carelessly by, scarce half read through : but the sight of his tutor's hand raising an expectation of some news concerning *Maria*, his passion for whom he had never been able entirely to subdue, he opened it with eagerness, though he had no reason to expect any account particularly interesting to him.

“ His tutor informed him, that his father looking upon her as the cause of his being obliged to send his son to *England*, the moment he was gone shewed the most rancorous hatred to her and *Euphranor*, which his power gave him so many opportunities of wreaking, that he made their lives quite miserable : they resolved, therefore, to leave that country, and seek some happier retreat elsewhere ; but as they were just ready to go, *Euphranor* received a letter from the brother of the lord to whom he had been tutor, to inform him of his lordship's death, and desire that he would return to *England* as soon as possible, to take possession of a very considerable living just then become vacant in his gift, and which he kept for him ; adding, that he had discharged the debt, which had been the occasion of his going abroad ; and that on receipt of this news they left the place directly, not more to their own satisfaction than to the mortification of his father, at their good fortune and escape from his power.”

This account threw him into a violent conflict : his heart felt the strongest emotions at the thought of *her* being in the same country with him. He at first resolved to find her out, and pleased himself so, that now agree-

ably she must be surpris'd at the great improvements she would see in his appearance and address, which he did not doubt would make such an impression on her in his favour, as should greatly facilitate his desires.

"But a moment's reflection overthrew all the flattering hopes; and shewed him the utter improbability of her ever listening to the addresses, or even receiving the visits of a man by whom she had been treated in so base a manner; for to mitigate the severity of his father's rage, and wipe off the disgrace of having proposed marriage to one so much beneath him, he had openly declared the designs he had formed for her ruin.

"But this was not what gave him the greatest pain. The advantageous change in her father's affairs removing the only objection which he thought could be made to her, it immediately occurred to him, that some person of distinction would most probably be captivated by her charms, at her return to *England*, and marry her; and it was death to him to think that she should make any other man happy, though he had lost all hopes of ever obtaining her himself.

"But these disagreeable reflections soon gave place to thoughts of another nature. He had not been in such a continued agitation ever since his coming to *London*, that he had not once remembered the many fine things his tutor had so often told him of the theatres; nor the delicious descriptions he had drawn of the pleasures to be found in the company of the players of both sexes. But a repetition of



C H A P. V.

A well-laid scheme disappointed. The great advantage of being well-read in the drama. The scene of action is changed.

“PURSUANT to their plot the squire went next morning to visit *Maria*, as usual; when he declared his passion with the most solemn assurances of sincerity; as an incontestible proof of which, he proposed an immediate marriage, but to be kept secret from both their fathers, till they should find some happy opportunity of gaining their approbation of it.

“At the former part of this proposal, a modest blush overspread *Maria*’s face; and shewed that her heart had no objection to it; but the first mention of secrecy restored her to herself. She thanked him politely for the favourable opinion he professed to have of her, but assured him, at the same time, that she never indulged even a thought which she imagined improper for her father’s immediate knowledge, much less would venture upon the most important action of life, without his advice and approbation.

“The determined manner in which she said this, convinced her lover, that it was in vain to press farther. He, therefore, returned to his tutor, greatly dejected at the disappointment: for had she consented, the tutor was to have

have disguised himself, and perforated the chaplain of a man of war that happened to lie upon the coast at that time, to marry them; which his theatrical talents enabled him to do, without danger of detection, and then, when his pupil's passion was gratified, it was only confessing the stratagem, (and all stratagems are lawful in love and war) and parting with her at once; or, if she should prove refractory, and discover the whole, his worship's power, which would not fail to be exerted on such an occasion, was sufficient to bear them through triumphant.

"But unexpected as this disappointment was, the tutor soon found resources in the fertility of his own genius to remedy it. After a pause of a few moments,

"*Calista!* (said he, speaking to himself as if in deep consideration) *Calista!* and then prove a criminal correspondence, both before and after her marriage, with some fast friend who would not deny the charge! Yes! that might do; but stay!--*Monimia!* Aye! *Monimia* is the thing.—Then speaking to the squire, as if he did not know that he had over-heard him:

"Well then (said he) if she will preclude herself from the poor consolation of pity, let her blame herself. My bow is not trusting to one string. Yes! you shall have her, my friend; you shall have her as long as you please; and when your desires are satiated, you shall get rid of her without reproach. My plot, it is true, is deeply laid; but I have precedents enough in dramatic writ to justify it. You shall marry her publicly, (leave me to reconcile your father to it!) and then what is easier at any time than to catch some faithful

faithful friend in bed with her, which may be brought about by your stealing from her in her sleep, and letting me, for instance, take your place; after which a divorce will be obtained without difficulty.

“ Then pluming himself in his sagacity, and strutting a step or two back and forward with an air of importance, “ I have not studied the drama so long (said he) to be at a loss now for a scheme to supplant the virtue of a girl, or elude the vigilance of a bookish doating father; let her therefore tell him her story, as soon as she pleases, I am prepared for both. As for his worship, I know that he will readily join in any thing to pull down the pride of that parson, in revenge for his having the assurance to arraign his conduct by preaching up to others, and practising himself, a course of life, in all respects, so opposite to his own.”

“ But deeply as this design was laid, it met with the same fate, and from the same motive, with the former. The moment her lover left her, *Maria* informed her father of his proposal, who in the uprightness of his heart went directly, and disclosed it to his worship. It is impossible to describe the rage into which such a story threw him. He immediately sent off his son to *England*, to prevent the disgrace of his making so unworthy a match: and, far from being obliged to *Euphranor* for making the discovery, bore him ever after the most implacable hatred, for being father to the object of his son's passion.

“ As for the tutor, the time appointed for his travels not being yet expired, he was obliged to stay behind, and trust his pupil to his own management.”



CHAP. VI.

Squire SUGARCANE arrives in England. An odd medley of high and low life. Prejudice of education involves him in many disagreeable circumstances, and at length brings him into imminent danger.

“OUR hero arrived in *England* without any accident. His father, it may be judged, did not burthen him with much advice. Two things only he cautioned him against, which were extravagance, for his pride had prompted him to give him unlimited credit, and matrimony without his express approbation. In every thing else, he left him to his own government, or indeed, more properly speaking, to chance.

“But he might have spared himself the trouble even of this much. The moment his son was out of his sight, he scorned all restraint, however easy and just; and if his father’s advice had any influence upon him, it was only to raise a desire of opposition to it.

“Accordingly, as soon as he got to *London*, he ran into every fashionable expence, with an eagerness that seemed to court ruin. He had houses sumptuously furnished at all places of pleasurable resort; he set up equipages which vied in magnificence with those of a sovereign prince, kept running-horses, hounds, and .whores; and, to complete his character, played deeply

deeply at every game, in which art and experience could give his antagonists an advantage over his ignorance.

“ All this he did, from an absurd vanity of following the fashion; to indulge his own taste, which the manner of his education had fixed upon the most vulgar pleasures, and grossest sensualities, he ran into the opposite extreme of low life. Thus he oftener slept in some filthy brothel, than in any of his own elegant houses; while his equipage waited whole mornings at his door, he was in a dirty disguise driving an hackney coach; he got drunk with his grooms, and rode his own races; and the conversation of his dog-boys was the greatest pleasure he reaped from his hounds. The mistresses whom he kept at the most profuse expence, he seldom even saw; his amours rarely soaring higher than the humble patrollers of the streets; and while he was throwing away thousands among gamblers of fashion, his heart languished for a game of put, or all-fours, for a pint of beer, or a dram of gin; and he often stole away, from the most elegant entertainments which luxury could devise, to carouse and riot among chairmen and porters in a night cellar.

“ Such a course of life necessarily involved him in numberless scrapes and troubles. Accustomed to converse with none but dependants, and lord it over slaves, who dared not even murmur at his cruelty and abuses, he could not bear to be treated as an equal by persons whose more moderate expences made him think them of inferior fortunes; and on the slightest contradiction to his will, in his servants, or any others of the lower stations of life, would fly
out

out into his usual outrages, beating and wounding them in the most cruel manner.

“ The consequences of this conduct were always disagreeable. The former returned the insolence of his behaviour with the most mortifying contempt; or with personal affronts, which pride and cowardice equally prevented his resenting in the only manner that could put an end to them; and the harpies of the law extorted ample satisfaction from his purse for the injuries to the latter, and that often after he had suffered sufficiently before from the superior strength of those who complained of him.

“ Such an hurricane of riot and debauchery was too violent to last long. An accident that happened in one of his nocturnal exploits lowered his spirits for a time, and gave his pleasure a less tumultuous turn.

“ A party, among whom he was, having sallied out one night from the tavern in the madness of inebriation, to scour the streets, and signalize their bravery on all who should be so unfortunate as to fall in their way, stumbled upon a watchman asleep upon his stand. The figure of the wretch would have bespoke compassion from any human creatures under the direction of reason. He was worn out with age, and appeared an object much more proper to receive, than give protection. But the misery of his appearance only raised their mirth; and one of them of uncommon wit and humour saying what a surprize it would be to the old fellow to awake in the other world, our hero, who was the most drunk in the company, and perhaps most accustomed to such feats, directly drew his sword, and plunged it into his body.”

find some way to appease her wrath ! What, sigh for a woman ? for shame, let no such thing be said : it is beneath you, quite beneath you.

*Who'd be that sordid foolish thing call'd man.---
The lordly bull ranges thro' all the field,
And from the herd singling his female out,
Enjoys her, and abandons her at will.---*

“ There’s an example for you to imitate ; follow the dictates of nature, unsophisticated by priestcraft, and be happy. What mischief have priests done in the world ? If it were not for the writings of poets, and the practice of players, to open the eyes of mankind, there would be no such thing as happiness or pleasure. Before men were made fools of by religion, the sexes conversed without restraint, and variety gave a relish to enjoyment : and so it does still in my country. Dear *London* ! thou paradise of pleasure ! there is opportunity for indulging every passion : opportunity, that is not neglected. There the wise world laughs at every foolish notion which interferes with delight. Beauty is not kept only to be looked at ; it meets desire half way, and courts the use it was designed for ; and so it would here, if men would manage right, and not raise obstacles to their own happiness.”

“ This elaborate speech had the desired effect. The awe in which the squire had been kept by his mistress, had already begun to sit very uneasy upon him, and his own inclinations confirmed his tutor’s arguments. Accordingly he resolved to follow his directions for
the

the attainment of a pleasure, which he saw no other prospect of enjoying.

“ He no sooner signified this resolution, than it filled his tutor with the highest joy. He embraced him in rapture ; and, in the fullness of his heart, disclosed a variety of schemes for accomplishing their design ; all objections to the justice of which he easily removed ; proving by the unerring morality of modern comedy, that *woman is but a creature made for man’s pleasure, and therefore that every method for making her subservient to this original end of her creation, is lawful for him to use.*

“ This doctrine he confirmed both by the practice of the finest gentlemen, and by the implicit confession of the finest ladies of the age, who would never go to see the plays, in which those principles are openly inculcated, with such eagerness, nor encourage the players, whose greatest merit consists in giving them all the force and graces of expression and action, and whose own lives are invariably formed upon them, with such distinguished marks of their favour, if they could dispute the truth, or disapproved the practice of them.

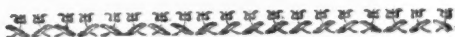
“ This reasoning appeared so conclusive, that it removed every shadow of scruple ; and they directly entered into consultation upon the means for putting their schemes in execution ; which they settled without any foolish restraint from the mistaken prejudices of honour, virtue, or religion.

39 THE REVERIE:

soon inform him, dressed herself with the greatest composure, and wishing him a good morning, left him to go to breakfast with what appetite he could.

“Nor were her threats in vain; she went directly to a lawyer, by whose advice she took such measures as obliged her husband to compound matters with her, and give her such a settlement (as he did not chuse cohabitation) as enabled her to pay the debt of gratitude, and keep those now who had kept her in former days.

“This affair broke off all his theatrical connections, and left him as much at a loss what to do with himself as he had been when he first entered into them. But the death of his father, of which he received the account just as he had concluded this transaction, freed him from this uncertainty, and engaged him in pursuits of a quite different nature from those he had hitherto followed.



C H A P. IX.

Mr. SUGARCANE commences statesman. Signal instances of ministerial confidence and favour. A common change. The conduct of a patriot.

“THE death of his father put Mr. Sugarcane (for he must no longer be called by the familiar title of squire) in possession of such an immense fortune, that he immediately considered himself as one of the pillars of the state; and looking on every thing else as beneath

neath his dignity and importance, devoted himself entirely to the care of nations.

“ In pursuance of this resolution, he waited directly on the minister, and displaying his own consequence in the strongest colours, informed him of his desire to become a member of the senate, and offered him his service in the most unlimited terms.

“ The minister, whom long experience had taught to read the human heart, immediately saw what use he might make of such an offer, from so sanguine a volunteer. Accordingly he thanked him for the honour of his friendship in the most polite manner, encouraged him in so laudable a design, and treated him with such a respectful intimacy, as quite won his shallow heart.

“ As soon therefore as he was satisfied that he had him secure, he told him one day, with an air of the highest satisfaction, that he now had an opportunity of shewing him the confidence he had in him, and at the same time procuring him that rank in the state which he deserved, by getting him returned for one of his boroughs.

“ Mr. *Sugarcane*'s joy at this news may easily be conceived; he thanked him in the warmest terms of gratitude for so great a favour; and on the minister's expressing some concern for the expence which might possibly attend an opposition that was designed against his interest, declared the strongest contempt for such paltry considerations, and insisted on the honour of defraying the whole himself.

“ Accordingly he went directly down to the borough, where he entered on the complicated business

business of electioneering with such spirit, and carried it on at so profuse an expence, that his opponents were glad to submit to the minister's terms, which they had absolutely rejected before, to avoid the vexation and disgrace of being foiled by a stratagem.

"It may be thought that his being made a property of in so notorious a manner, would have made him see his folly; but it was no such thing. Far from being offended, he took it as an instance of the highest confidence in his friendship, on the minister's representing to him, that the business of the state could not have been carried on without giving him up for that time, and promising to make him ample amends on a more favourable occasion.

"Gross as this imposition was he blindly submitted to it several times successively, cajoled by assurances of friendship and artful hints of having his services rewarded in the end by a peerage.

"He lived thus upon air for several years, squandering more in pursuit of a shadow than the acquisition of the substance could ever possibly refund him. At length, however, his eyes were opened; and he saw the abuse he had suffered in the most mortifying light: but instead of being cured of his madness, it only gave it another turn. He directly commenced patriot, in the present sense of the word, declaiming against the minister and his measures, with as much vehemence and heat as he had declaimed for them before; and lavishing his fortune as prodigally, in opposition to his interest, as he had formerly done to support it.

"Evident as the motives of this change were, the giddy multitude suffered themselves to be deceived

deceived by it ; or rather indeed, they received it as a colour to palliate the absurdity of their confiding in him, and justify their taking the bribes with which he buys them.

“ On this system he proceeds now, undiscouraged by the many disappointments he has met with, and the difficulties into which such complicated dissipation of his fortune, immensely great as it was, has thrown his affairs. In his present attempt, it is true, he has a prospect of success ; but how far this will answer his expectation of making him happy, or what use even he will make of it, the least experience of human life sufficiently shews.—But I see an uneasiness in your looks. If I have said any thing that you do not comprehend, speak your doubt with freedom, and I will resolve it with pleasure”.

“ This condescension (answered I) O most benevolent spirit ! is agreeable to the excellence of thy nature ; and I were unworthy of the favour you offer, if I let a false modesty, a proud reluctance to shew my ignorance, prevent my accepting it. It is most true, that you have said some things which I cannot understand the meaning of. You say he commenced a patriot, in the present sense of the word. Can any word be plainer ? Or what sense but the obvious natural one can it be taken in ?”

“ Your inexperience, in the ways of the world, (replied he with a smile) leads you into this difficulty. Your notions are all merely speculative, formed on reflection and not on observation. You consider things as they ought to be, supposing man to act upon the principles of reason, not as they are, under so contrary a direction ; and this mistake of the merely-learned,

is the cause of the very little service which their works do in the world.

A patriot, in the original and proper meaning of the word, is the noblest title which can be given to man; and includes every virtue, moral, social, and civil. But so entirely is the use of words changed with the course of things, that stripped of every idea which can deserve respect, it implies only a factious opposer of the measures of the court, who pretends a regard to the public welfare, to gain the confidence of the people, and make himself of sufficient consequence to be admitted to a share of the spoil which he declaims against. (You are to observe that I speak in the general. That there are sometimes men who really deserve the title in its most exalted sense, and possess every virtue which they make profession of, I will not deny; but they are too few to place in opposition to the multitude; and the exception only proves the rule.) You heard with what vehemence Mr. *Sugarcane* harangued against the minister, accusing him of betraying the interests, and over-turning the constitution of his country, and founding his own pretensions to merit with the public on the effectual means he designed to make use of, to defeat such pernicious designs. These professions you see have been successful; how far they were sincere, there is a scene just opening which will inform you."

The crowd by this time was dispersed, satisfied with what they had got, or expecting no more then; and the candidate was retired to enjoy his success with a few select friends. But scarce was he seated, when he received word, that

that a strange gentleman wanted to speak with him in private that moment.

Mr. *Sugarcane* imagined that it was one of his opponents, who was coming over to him, and wanted to make terms; and therefore gave directions to have him shewn into his closet, whither he soon followed him; but what was his surprise to see that it was a friend of the minister's, whom he well knew to be in the greatest confidence with him.

As soon as the common compliments of civility were paid, "You wonder probably, Sir, (said the stranger) at this visit from me, but the motive of it will excuse the abruptness. I come to propose an accommodation between you and the minister. The necessity of affairs obliged him to treat you with an appearance of unkindness; but that is now over, and he is willing to make you amends."

"Amends, Sir! (answered Mr. *Sugarcane*, with an haughty air) I do not understand you. I have discovered the iniquity, the danger of the minister's designs, and am determined to defeat them. I scorn any accommodation with the enemy of my country."

"This way of talking, Sir, (interrupted the other) may do very well amongst a crowd of drunken voters, but to me it is nonsense. If you will deserve the minister's friendship, it is offered to you; if not, he is not afraid of you. He is sufficiently acquainted with the practices by which you have carried your point here; and you know what an appearance they will have before the committee upon a petition."

The mention of a petition threw Mr. *Sugarcane* into evident confusion, as he was conscious

of

of the illegality of his proceedings. This the gentleman instantly observed, and resolving to take the advantage of it, "My message, Sir, (said he in a peremptory tone) requires not a moment's consideration. In a word, will you, or will you not, be the minister's friend? This is the last time you will be asked."

"On what terms? (answered Mr. *Sugarcane* faltering, and even blushing at his own baseness)" "On the terms you have so often proposed, (replied the stranger)" "How Sir! I propose terms to the minister!" (interrupted *Sugarcane* with an air of surprize and disdain) I do not understand you, Sir. I would have you to know, Sir"—"Look you, Sir, (said the stranger dryly) this way of talking signifies nothing, as I observed to you before; nor have I much time to stay. You have solicited, frequently and earnestly solicited for a particular place: pray, Sir, what was this, but implicitly offering your service to the minister, if he would give you that place? Now, Sir, that very place is vacant, and at your service, provided you will write the minister word, expressly and positively, to prevent mistakes, that you will support his interest, in every thing required of you, without reserve: and I would recommend it to you to consider, whether you are like to get so much by opposing him. In the mean time, to secure your interest with your electors, he consents that you shall abuse him as much and as grossly as you please."

Mr. *Sugarcane* seemed to hesitate for a few moments, and then reaching his hand to the gentleman, "Give my compliments to our friend, (said he) and tell him he may depend upon

upon me. I never was his enemy, farther than my interest required, and now he has gained that to his side, he has gained me also."

He then sat down to write the letter required of him, to prevent his forgetting that he had made terms; as soon as he had finished which the stranger departed, to avoid suspicion, and Mr. Sugarcane returned to his company, where he professed patriotism, and railed at the minister with greater rage and vehemence than ever.

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

CHAP. X.

The history of a cobbler, who would correct the times. The best way to win the hearts of the mob. He over-acts his part, and is turned out as a wrangler.

SO glaring a representation of human folly overwhelmed me with confusion. I was ashamed of participating, in a common nature, with such monsters of absurdity, and turned away disgusted from the odiously ridiculous scene.

The Spirit read the sentiments of my heart, and smiling with ineffable contempt, resumed his discourse in these words:

"Your vanity is offended at this story, as if it reflected any disgrace upon yourself. This is another instance of the folly of man, to think his consequence so extensive, as to be affected by any thing not immediately levelled at him. Careless of deserving praise himself, his pride is piqued at the reproof offered to others;
but

them in this letter had an immediate effect upon him, in his present undetermined state; and he resolved to look there for that happiness which he had missea of hitherto."



CHAP. VIII.

The pleasures of theatrical society. The squire commences critic and patron. He acts the part of Ixion, and embraces a cloud instead of a goddess.

"IN pursuance of this resolution he directly became almost an inhabitant of the play-house. He made acquaintances with all the players; he attended rehearsals, drank tea in the green-room; and in a very little time had all the terms of theatrical criticism at his fingers ends.

"He now thought himself an happy man. The mirth and wit of the actors, the freedom and ease of the actresses, and the obsequiousness and flattery of both quite charmed him. His table was constantly filled with them; while they in return for his hospitality convinced him, that he had overlooked his own abilities, and was really endowed with the most refined taste, and exquisite judgement of the age.

"As soon as he had made this discovery, he assumed all the consequence of this new character. He retailed the phrases of criticism, which he had lately picked up, on all occasions with the most decisive air; spoke with contempt

tempt of authors whose names he scarcely knew, and praised those of established reputation; but all in general terms, and merely as an echo to the town.

“It may be thought that this course of life, idle and insignificant as it was, must be more harmless at least than that which he had led before; but still it was not free from its inconveniencies also.

“Such a set of company necessarily precluded him from that of all persons whose conversation might have been either an advantage or an honour to him; besides, to support the dignity of his character, he was obliged to set up for a patron of the polite arts, which laid him open to the impositions of every ignorant pretender to them; as he was utterly destitute of the least degree of judgment to direct him in the distribution of the rewards which their flattery and importunities extorted from his ignorance and vanity; so that, though he had retrenched most of his former expences, on his entering into his present way of life, he found but very little advantage from his œconomy; the cravings of his new dependents proving as effectual a drain to his money as all his more shewy extravagancies had been before.

“But this was only a trifle; in comparison of other consequences which attended this connection. Such a fortune as he possessed was a lure to every scheming genius, to try their abilities upon him; the actresses, in particular, spread open all their nets, to take him in for a settlement; at least, if not even entrap him in the marriage noose, as he was a bachelor. This was the secret reason of that officiousness

to please him, which has been observed before ; but his attention was too much taken up with the addresses paid to his understanding, to admit his minding those offered to his person.

“ At length, however, one of the female adventurers of the stage hit upon a plan, in which her experience promised her success. She saw that vanity glittered through his shallow heart, and was the ruling principle of all his actions : to catch this, therefore, a gilded bait was all that was necessary. For this purpose, she contrived to convey him a letter, glowing with the warmest professions of love, but lamenting the restraint which a superior station laid her under from making herself known, or gratifying the passion that preyed upon her heart.

“ The receipt of this letter threw him into the highest perplexity ; he ran over every scene of his life, to try if he could, from any circumstance, find out who this enamoured fair could be ; but all in vain. However, his ignorance by no means eased him of his anxiety ; he had too good an opinion of himself to doubt the truth of what she said ; and his darling vanity was too strongly flattered by the thought, to admit his slighting such an honour, could he possibly discover by whom it was done him.

“ The fair one, who saw him every day, soon had an opportunity of observing his distress, which was the signal she wanted to convince her that the lure she threw had taken. Accordingly, in a day or two after she wrote him another letter, in which she appointed him a place of meeting, but under the most solemn adjurations of secrecy and honour, when she availed herself so well of her theatrical art of varying
her

her appearance, and personating a fictitious character, that, with the assistance of the play-house cloaths, and a good quantity of paint, she passed upon him for a beautiful young lady of the first quality, who had accidentally been smitten with the charms of his person.

"The delicacy and modest reserve with which she revealed her own passion, and received his addresses, gained so complete a conquest over his intoxicated heart, that he outwent her most sanguine expectations, and made distant proposals of marriage, at the very first interview; but these the character she acted would not permit her to understand too readily; and his respect prevented his speaking plainer, on so short an acquaintance.

"But an accident soon removed this difficulty, which was equally distressing to them both, though from so different motives. Going to the play the next evening as usual, he was surprised to see *Maria* glittering in all the pride of dress in one of the stage boxes; the sight of her put him so much off his guard, that, happening to catch her eye, he bowed to her directly in the most familiar manner: but what was his confusion, to find, that instead of acknowledging his salute, she turned from him with a look of ineffable contempt.

"Such an affront, in so public a place, could not escape notice. The eyes of every one were immediately fixed upon him, in so significant a manner, that he could not stand it; but was forced to retire, bursting with resentment, behind the scenes, where he had the additional mortification to learn, that she was above every attack he could make upon her, being lately

THE REVERIE.

married to the young nobleman who was sitting with her, and was the same who had recalled her father and her from the place of their banishment.

“It is impossible to describe the malignant passions which tore his heart at this news: his love was instantly turned to the most rancorous hatred; and envy prompted him to ruin an happiness which he had not been able to prevent.

“While he was revolving various schemes for this purpose, his unlucky genius blundered upon one, which drew that mortification ten thousand fold upon his own head which he designed for her. He thought that the safest way he could take to humble her pride (for his courage was cooled from any attempts which might possibly endanger his dear person) was to shew her, that he had been as great a gainer as she by not being married to her, and to return her contempt in kind.

“Accordingly, at the very next meeting his enamoured fair one indulged him with, he proposed an immediate marriage, which he pressed with such unfeigned ardor, that, after some few struggles between her love for him, and her regard to the dignity of her rank, she consented, her fear of being prevented by her noble friends and family palliating the precipitancy of such a step.

“The exultations of two persons, happy thus in the success of their designs, well supplied the place of pomp and ceremony at the wedding; but what was the bridegroom's astonishment next morning, to find a faded veteran of the stage in his arms, instead of a dutchess in all the pride of beauty, rank, and fortune; for the warmth

warmth of the night had melted the painted bloom upon her cheeks, and restored her to her natural appearance, which day-light displayed in no very favourable light.

“ He started from her in horror ; and as soon as he had recovered the use of speech, which such a sight for some time deprived him of, flew into the most outrageous fury, and swore he would be revenged, in the dreadfullest manner, for such an infamous piece of deceit.

“ But his bride was too well acquainted with the world to be terrified at his threats. She arose with all the expedition, that her delicate regard to decency would permit, and throwing herself at his feet, alledged the violence of her passion as an excuse for her stratagem ; (and all stratagems, she said, were lawful in love) besought his forgiveness in the tenderest terms, and vowed the most exemplary duty, love, and virtue for the rest of her life, promising to make ample amends for the imaginary disparity of rank ; (for his own fortune placed him above regard to mercenary considerations) by her incessant attention to his pleasure.

“ Well as she acted her part, the abused husband remained inflexible, vowing to pursue her with the utmost severity ; a resolution which the remembrance of his own treatment of *Maria*, now retorted in such a signal manner on himself, enforced with every motive of hatred and revenge.

“ But his wrath had as little effect upon her as her entreaties possibly could have upon him. She arose from his feet with an air of disdain ; and telling him, that if he did not know what was due to the character of his wife, she would soon

“ To this purpose he drew up a pompous epistle, which he got the schoolmaster of the town to write out fair, and correct the spelling of; and putting on his Sunday coat, went to deliver it himself, as the surest messenger: but the town-clerk not being at home, he was forced to leave it with his maid, saying he would call next morning for an answer.

“ He went accordingly in the highest expectation; but you may judge what was his disappointment, when he was told, that it was impossible for him to see his worship, his shoes being just then carried to the cobbler's to be mended, so that he could not come down stairs to him.

“ A wise man is never dejected at a disappointment, and often turns a misfortune to his advantage in the end. Our hero thought this an excellent opportunity for getting his worship's custom in the way of his trade; from which he promised himself more solid advantage, than any he could expect from his first scheme. As soon as he received this account therefore, he went directly home, and prepared another epistle, in which he informed his worship, that hearing he had had the misfortune the day before to have one of his shoes rip, he thought it his duty to inform him, that he had discovered a method of mending shoes, that effectually secured them from such accidents ever after, which he was ready to practise upon his worship's, or even to communicate to his cobbler, whenever he pleased to consult with him upon the affair. And as a proof of the excellence of this invention, he farther told him, that he had tried it with great success upon his own shoes, which had been made

made of such bad stuff originally, that they were bursting out every moment; so that he was generally confined two days in the week, patching them up, before he had the good fortune to make this discovery; since which they stood so well, that he did not fear but they would last out their time with satisfaction: and lastly, to enhance the value of this offer, he added in a postscript, that he was the cobbler who had been driven out of such a village, by the malice of a parcel of scoundrels, and now kept a shoemaker's shop in that town, where he did not doubt but his talent of speaking would be as serviceable to his worship, by bringing over the mob to his side, as it had been terrible to the others.

"This letter also he carried himself, as he had done the former; and to encourage the maid to deliver it carefully to her master, gave her a pinch of snuff out of his own box, telling her, as before, that he would call again for an answer.

"But cunningly as this scheme was laid, the success fell quite short of his expectation; for the next time he called, the maid returned him both his letters, telling him that her master thanked him for his kind offers, but had no occasion for them at that time; and was beside so very busy just then, that he could not have the pleasure of taking a cup of ale with him, but should be glad of his company some other day.

"It is impossible to express the rage into which this affronting repulse threw him. He returned directly to his former principles of patriotism, and railed at the town clerk with as much virulence as the most interested of his enemies.

“ Though modesty is a virtue praised by every body, the quality directly opposite to it is much oftener successful in the world. This was exactly the case with this person. There was nothing, however desperate, in the way of his trade, that he would not undertake, and promise to perform with the greatest confidence, not in the least discouraged or abashed by the many miscarriages he met with. It must be acknowledged, at the same time, that by thus indiscriminately undertaking every thing, he sometimes happened to cobble up a breach, which much abler hands would never have attempted.

“ But this was far from proving his having any real merit, any superior skill in his trade, or recommending him to the custom of persons of prudence and consideration ; as among such a number of attempts, it was next to impossible but some should succeed. However, he plumed himself upon every accidental instance of success, as if he was the only one who understood any thing of his business ; and though he was no better than an interloper, as one may say, himself, and had never served a regular apprenticeship to the trade, he treated all his brethren with the utmost contempt and abuse, calling them ignorant pretenders, and blundering fools, who knew nothing of the business they professed.

“ Though this conduct naturally disgusted every person of sense, the unthinking shallow crowd was pleased with it ; and taking his abuse of the rest of the craft, for a proof of his own superior skill, so many of them brought their shoes to his shop to be mended, that he
made

made a shift to live tolerably well ; which was more than he could have expected, had he modestly waited to be recommended by his merit, and not proclaimed his own praises in this manner."



C H A P. XII.

Luck is all. He returns home, and triumphs over his enemies. Great discoveries in philosophy. His story concluded, and himself left in a fog.

"**I**T is an old observation, that one lucky hit, no matter how accidental or improbable, oftener makes a man's fortune, than the best concerted scheme or greatest merit. Of this the hero of our tale had the happiness to be a most signal instance.

"One of the principal gentlemen of his own village happening to tear his shoe quite across one day when he was a great way from home, sent for several of the most eminent cobblers and shoe-makers of the place to try to have it mended, but after many unsuccessful attempts, they all pronounced it beyond the reach of their art, to make it ever do again.

"As it was quite a new shoe, this gave the gentleman a good deal of vexation, and coming to the town where this person lived in his way home, he was prevailed upon to apply to him. Though his former knowledge of him gave him but a mean opinion of his skill, as the case was desperate he thought is no great matter to try what he could do ; accordingly he sent for him,

who no sooner saw the shoe, and heard in what manner the others had attempted to mend it, than he at once pronounced them botchers in his usual stile, and, without the least hesitation, undertook to set it to rights; which he had the good luck to do so effectually, that the gentleman not only gave him half a crown for his trouble (which by the by, many thought to be more than the shoe was worth the first day) but also recommended him to all his acquaintances, so that he had as much business as he could possibly do.

“Could he have been contented, he was now in a fair way of doing very well; but the old lord of the manor where he had formerly lived happening to die, he prevailed upon this gentleman to use his interest with the heir to have the presentment of the court-leet withdrawn, and on obtaining his request left the business of his shop, and went back to his old trade of harranguing the mob, which he did so successfully, that at the next vestry they bore down the gentry by their numbers, and chose him churchwarden, in spite of all opposition.

“In this situation you behold him at present, boasting to his infatuated followers what great things he designs to do, for the good of the parish. But all this ease and confidence in his words and looks are nothing but affectation and grimace. He is sensible, now his having obtained the immediate object of his ambition has given him time to think, that he has climbed to the highest pinnacle of his popularity, from whence he must inevitably soon fall; as it is absolutely out of his power to perform the least part of his fine promises to his deluded party, who

who will therefore hate and despise him as vehemently as they admired him before, the moment they find their disappointment.

“ Much as a conscious apprehension of this allays the pleasure of his present success, there is another reflection which comes nearer to his heart, and fills him with fears of a still severer nature.

“ Though the business of his shop, after that lucky accident of setting the gentleman's shoe to rights, was much more profitable to him than he had any reason to have expected, the natural restlessness, and vanity of his temper prevented his making the proper advantage of his good fortune, and providing for a reverse, by prudent oeconomy: so that all the horrors of want already began to stare him in the face, as he can never expect the same success where he is at present, the better sort of people having, most of them taking just offence at the insolence of his present behaviour, as well as his former abuse, and having beside no opinion of his skill in his trade, and his own party being too poor to afford him any profit by their custom.

“ Nor is this all. Provoked at the self-sufficiency and arrogance with which he affects to look down upon all his brethren of the craft, the worshipful company in the village where he now lives have unanimously entered into a resolution never to consult with him, on any of the affairs of their business, such as fixing the price of leather and hog's bristles, and many other things of equal importance, without he will submit to be examined in the terms of their mystery, which would not be likely to prove much to his credit, as he never served an ap-

prenticeship to the business to learn them as they did; so that he will be left to trade entirely upon his own judgment, which, beside the hazard and discredit of it, will also lose him many a good job, as there are several people so fond of acting with due deliberation, that they will not have a crack in an old shoe cobbled without summoning half a dozen of the most eminent of the craft, to consult upon the matter.

“ His freedom of the trade in general they do not deny, but, by a bye law of their own corporation, they have this power of refusing to confer with him, which they are determined to exert.

“ It may be thought that their acting in this manner betrays a prejudice beneath such a grave and reputable society; but the truth is, they have abundant reason to justify their proceedings.

“ To gain a reputation on his first setting up the shoe-making trade, he had ventured hap-hazard to assert many things which were contrary to the common practice of his brethren, and reflected great dishonour on them, for having followed such absurd opinions so long.

“ The principal of those, and that which he laid the greatest stress upon, was a new discovery he pretended to have made of *the cause of some particular water's tanning asses-hides better than others*. The fact had long been known to the whole craft, who managed their business accordingly, and sent their wares to those places, satisfied with the effect, without giving themselves the trouble of enquiring into the cause.

“ But

“ But he looked upon this as beneath his sagacity. He wrote a book, in which he demonstrated by many learned arguments and curious experiments, that *water was water and not fire*; and to give the greater weight to this important discovery, he made a parade of going to all the tanners yards about the country, where he raked in the mud and filth of the common shores, till he was almost suffocated by the stench; and then proved to the entire satisfaction of the ignorant croud that stood gaping at him, that the *scum which stuck to the sides of the shores was no longer floating in the water*, and branded all his brethren of the craft with his familiar titles of *fools and blockheads*, for not having found out this important secret before.

“ Such an opinion was beneath an answer. But though his brethren did not think it worth their while to enter into a dispute about nothing with one who gave positive assertions for proofs, and answered rational arguments with personal reflections, they resolved to take the first fair opportunity of humbling his pride, and shewing the world their contempt of him, which they have now done in a manner that he will not easily get over.

“ You now see what a poor prospect he has of business in his trade, sufficient to support him in the state he assumes; but this is not his only distress. *The common motive of patriotism is the price for which a man can sell himself and his party*, to the lord, or steward of the manor, whom he was raised on purpose to oppose. This price is always in proportion to the opposition, which it is in the patriot's power to give.

but in this he only betrays his own infirmities. No man was ever hurt at hearing a fault re-
proved of which he was not guilty himself. The conscious heart is easily alarmed. His too ready sensibility takes the imputation that was never meant, and turns general satire into particular reproach.

As for me, think not that I take pleasure in painting things worse than they really are. If the picture is disagreeable, the fault is in the original; I copy nature, and am equally above flattery and abuse. You must therefore drop this review, if you are dissatisfied with truth in its genuine colours."

"Have compassion, gracious Spirit, (answered I, with a most respectful obeisance) on the weakness of my nature, nor impute to pride the effect of shame. I felt the force of that ridicule, to which you held up such egregious follies, and hope to receive this advantage from it, that I shall never fall into the like myself. Continue therefore the instructive picture, and your servant shall join in the honest laugh you raise, even though it be against himself."

The humility and candour of this declaration removed the Spirit's displeasure, and he proceeded. "Nothing shews folly in a more contemptible light, (said he) than its being repeatedly duped by the same deceit. Of all the pretences which have imposed upon the credulity of mankind, this of patriotism has been oftenest used. The reason is evident; the whole system of human politics is such a medley of folly and corruption, even under the wisest administrations, that if a superior power did

did not constantly interpose, to disappoint the deepest designs of man, and obviate the effects of his wisdom, the very face of nature would be changed, and all her works overwhelmed in confusion and ruin.

“ Observation of this uninterrupted series of errors and misfortunes, without attention to the source of them, gives weight to the clamours of every self-elected reformer, against those in power, and makes the giddy multitude listen to his specious promises of redress, as a drowning person catches even at a straw; their constant disappointments not in the least abating their credulity.

“ Nor is affectation of reforming confined to the higher ranks of life, where affluence may seem to give a title to idleness, and flatter ambition with a prospect of success. The meanest mechanic will undertake to mend the state; and if he can but harangue with noise and virulence, will find fools of all denominations to listen to what he says.

“ An instance of this may be worth attending to; and yonder little village, at this very time, affords one of a most striking nature. Observe that man, sitting in all the mimic pomp of state, and haranguing to the gaping croud around him, with all the affected agitation and vehemence of voice and gesture of a ranting player, tearing a passion to pieces on the stage. Listen to him but a moment, and you will find him utterly ignorant of every rule of speech, as well as every principle of reasoning, continually committing blunders in each beneath a man of sense to utter, and which none but persons under the strongest degree of intoxication could

could hearken to, without disgust and contempt. Yet by these very harangues, frothy, extravagant, and blundering as they are, has he arisen to the state of consequence in which you now behold him.

“He was bred a cobbler, and worked at his trade for some years in that very village with tolerable credit: but nature having unluckily given him some vivacity of parts, without any prudence to direct them, he soon grew weary of working, and spent all his time in railing at the parish-officers, and accusing them of numberless abuses in the performance of their several duties.

“This naturally drew a crowd every market-day about his stall, to whom he set forth the public grievances in so pathetic a manner, and with such strong intimations of his own integrity and ability to redress them, if they would put the power in his hands, that they promised to chuse him churchwarden at the next vestry.

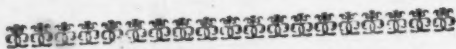
“Intoxicated with this success, he immediately enlarged his plan, and ventured to attack the steward of the manor, for having (as he alledged) encroached upon the common, and extorted exorbitant fees in the course of his office. Nor did he shew greater respect to the lord himself, but had the assurance to charge him directly with countenancing his steward's oppressions, and designing to destroy the court-rolls and turn all the tenants out of their farms; and for fear these charges should be refuted, he involved in them every one in the parish who had any opportunity of knowing the truth; and to invalidate their testimony,
and

and deprive them of all respect, branded them and their families with the most atrocious crimes, publishing every private calumny that malice had ever invented, and raking up the ashes of the dead for scandal and defamation.

“Such a conduct soon won the hearts of the mob, as it pulled down those above them to their own level. Accordingly he became their idol to such a degree, that they implicitly believed every word he said, and resolved unanimously to support him at the approaching vestry.

“But he had over-acted his part, and in the warmth of his passion provoked the better part of the parishioners so much, by his personal reflections and abuse, that before he could be elected, he was presented in the court-leet as a common disturber, and condemned to be set in the stocks for a public example.

“Though in the heat of his patriotism he had often braved danger, and boasted that he would bear any persecution, rather than desert his friends, in such a glorious cause; when it came to the test, his resolution failed him, and he manfully ran away to the county-town, where, as he was out of the power of his persecutors, whose subordinate jurisdiction was confined to their own parish, and could not reach him there, he gallantly bade them defiance, and renewed his abuse, railing at them with all the rancour of impotent resentment.



CHAP. XI.

He rises in life, but cannot leave off his old tricks. A repulse overturns his patriotism, which is again renewed by another. The great advantage of a certain quality, generally decried, but as generally practised.

“ **A**S he had nothing to support him but what he earned by his trade, which he had also greatly neglected ever since he had turned reformer, to the no small embarrassment of his private affairs, he had reason to apprehend all the miseries of want, on his removal into a strange place.

“ But his friends relieved him from his fears, and generously subscribed their shillings a-piece to buy him a new suit of cloaths, and set him up in a shoe-maker’s shop; for he was above cobbling any longer, and had been made free of the gentle craft for a pot of beer, and a fine speech or two, in one of the little corporation-towns he passed through in his travels.

“ The racket that had been made about him drew so many customers to his shop, that he was in a fair way of earning honest bread, if he could have kept himself quiet, and applied diligently to his work; but the itch of reforming had taken such fast hold of him, that he could not help meddling with other people’s concerns, every where he went.

“ Accordingly

"Accordingly in some little time after he was settled in the county-town, he took an opportunity one day, when the principal inhabitants were met together at a charity-feast, to present them with a full account of all the great things he had promised and proposed doing in his own parish, had he not unluckily been driven out of it, which he had got an attorney's clerk to write out fair for him, in a fair hand, and on gilt paper, and kindly offered his service in the same manner to them.

"But they had heard his character before, and judging that they could get nothing but trouble by admitting such a wrangler among them, prudently declined his offer, and returned him his paper.

"It must be imagined that such an indignity provoked his wrath to the highest degree; but he thought proper to suppress it, in a great measure, for fear of disobliging some of his customers; and so only expostulated mildly with them, instead of flying out into scurrility and abuse, as he had done on the former occasion.

"This rebuff damped the ardour of his public spirit so far, that there happening to be a law-suit at that time between that town and the next, about the bounds of their several commons on a barren heath, and all the inhabitants not agreeing in their opinions of the town-clerk's manner of carrying it on, and applying the revenues of the corporation, as is always the case, in such affairs, he resolved to change sides, as all great men have done, and offer him that assistance which the others had before refused to take, against him.

at particular times, in consideration of a stated sum of money, which was clear gain to them. By these means the tenants looked upon the lands as their own inheritance; and had built houses, and settled themselves upon them accordingly.

“ But the late parson, thinking they had too great bargains, refused to renew their leases at the usual time, unless they would give him much higher fines than they had ever given to any of his predecessors; which they resolved not to do, imagining that as he was very old as well as very avaritious, the fear of dying without getting any thing would make him abate of his demand.

“ In this manner things stood for some years, neither party chusing to comply, when the death of the old parson, and his being succeeded by one whose youth gave him a reasonable expectation of seeing their leases determined, when it would be in his power either to turn them out, or raise their rents to the full value, alarmed them all in the highest degree.

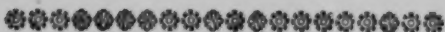
“ To prevent such a misfortune therefore, they directly agreed to offer their new parson the sum which had been demanded by his predecessor, and which they had always so positively refused to give him. But what was their astonishment when, instead of accepting their offer, he coolly told them, he thought the income of the living, as settled by the incumbent immediately before the last, was sufficient, wherefore he desired no more; and prayed to God to enable him to make as good use of that as he had done.

“ Such

“ Such an act of true generosity, not only won the hearts of those who reaped the benefit of it, but also gained him the general esteem of the whole parish ; especially as he lived entirely amongst them, and spent his income in the most unbounded hospitality ; not hoarding it up, or laying it out in other places, as most of his predecessors had been accustomed to do.

“ On him the crier’s enemy pitched, as a proper person to rival him in the favour of the people ; accordingly, having gained his good opinion by going constantly to church, and behaving there with a great appearance of devotion, he took an opportunity one day to insinuate to him, that he ought to exert himself more than he did in the affairs of the parish, and not tamely submit to the usurpations of the crier, who was for engrossing all the power into his own hands, without ever regarding whose right he invaded.

“ These insinuations were not without effect. The parson’s heart, though above avarice, was not insensible to ambition. He readily took the bait ; and, as he was quite unexperienced in such affairs, submitted himself implicitly to the government of his adviser, who, while he pretended to have nothing but to restore him to the consequence due to his station and virtues, in view, really made a property of him to promote his own schemes.



C H A P. XV.

A game of football. A false step gives the crier the better of the match. He kicks the ball in his master's face, but makes all up, and comes off with flying colours.

“**T**HE regard with which the parson began to be spoken of by the whole parish soon gave the crier the alarm; which was confirmed by his opposing him in two or three trifling things in the vestry; in which his opinion was received with such deference, that it was probable he would have risen fairly above him in a little time, had not fortune, the crier's constant friend, stood by him effectually on this occasion.

“A friend of the parson's had been appointed by the steward, to repair and set up a parcel of scarecrows, to frighten their neighbours cattle from trespassing on their common; for which purpose, the court-leet had ordered him a sum of money out of the parish stock.

“Such commissions had usually been given as a plausible colour for bestowing so much money, without any design of their being executed. In this sense, did this person understand his; and accordingly gave himself no trouble about the performance of it.

“The crier, who had connived at many things of the kind before, immediately took fire at this, and resolved to prosecute the man for embezzling the money of the parish.

“For

“For this he had many reasons: he knew that an action, which had such an appearance of public spirit and justice, would greatly repair his credit with the people, which he could not but be sensible was on the decline; and then, as the parson's intimacy with the delinquent would probably make him take his part, he thought that would be a favourable opportunity for giving a check to his growing popularity.

“Nor was he mistaken in his conjectures. The parson, in the warmth of his heart, not only espoused his friend himself, but also engaged all his party to support him, without ever considering that appearances were so strongly against him, that every one, who was not in the secret of such affairs, must harbour a disadvantageous opinion of himself for abetting such an action.

“Accordingly, the next court-day the crier made his attack, and displayed the heinousness of such a flagrant act of injustice to the public in so strong a light, that the mob, who never examine more than one side of a story, were all of his party; so that the parson was not only foiled in his attempt to save his friend, but also entirely lost his credit with the people, who, in the phrenzy of their resentment, loaded him with every scandal and execration, which the most envenomed malice could invent.

“This affair effectually restored the crier's credit; but though he had succeeded in this first object of his design, it was attended with consequences he had not foreseen, and which were far from being agreeable to him.

“The steward, who had appointed the parson's friend to the employment which had in-

volved

volved him in this disgrace, thought it incumbent upon him to support him in conjunction with the parson; and when the crier had carried his point against them both, represented the affair to the lord of the manor, as an insult upon his authority, and a certain mark of disaffection to his interest.

“The crier, who meant nothing less than to have embroiled himself with the lord, or even with the steward, was surprised at this charge. However, he had gone too far to think of retreating now; and therefore resolved to oppose their measures in good earnest the first time they seemed to clash with the rights or interest of the people, which he knew to be the certain way to secure his party to him, as it would make them all as desperate as himself.

“This he did not long want an opportunity of doing. There had been a sum of money raised by the court-leet some time before, to defray the charge of repairing the manor-house, of which there remained a good part unexpended, there having been more levied than was necessary for the occasion.

“As it had been the custom of this manor to give money to the lord himself on these occasions to lay out as he thought proper, he had always appropriated any surplus that remained to his own use, without thinking himself accountable to the court-leet for it: but now the crier, who, by his place of clerk of the kitchen, had an opportunity of looking into all the lord's accounts, finding that the sum was pretty considerable, proposed to the court-leet to lay it out, in discharging the bills of some poor tradesmen which had been left unpaid on a former occasion,

casion, and to whom the whole manor had passed their words; and to this effect he drew up an address to the lord.

"Though this was a direct attack upon the lord, and in a most tender point, there was something so plausible in the proposal, that he did not chuse absolutely to reject it. However, not to give up too much, or establish a precedent for such attempts for the future, he gave general orders to the court-leet, to pay off those tradesmen with that money as of his own free motion, and without taking any notice of the application, which it had made to him to that purpose.

"But the crier, perceiving the design of this proceeding, refused to accept those orders, and insisted absolutely on having the authority of the court-leet to dispose of the money allowed, in which his old support the mob followed his opinion so firmly, that the orders were rejected in spite of all the parson and steward both could do to prevent it.

"Such a triumph filled the mob with the most extravagant joy. They extolled the crier to the skies for his public spirit and fidelity to their interest; and were drunk for a whole week with drinking bumpers to his health, while they offered every kind of insult to his opponents, particularly the parson, and branded them with the most infamous and improbable crimes.

"But though the lord had not been able to make them receive his orders with due respect, he resolved to shew them, that he would have them obeyed without regard to their opposition.

“ Indeed nothing can be more ridiculous than the manner in which they express their sentiments on such occasions. *While a man is their favourite, they are continually getting drunk with drinking his health, when he is out of favour with them they get drunk with drinking his confusion*; a bumper toast in either case being the highest, and often the only mark of their approbation or dislike.

“ Nay so far are they from harbouring a dangerous resentment, even for the grossest ill-usage of this kind, that, if the party has procured money enough to give them plenty of drink by the very sale of themselves, they forget all that has happened, and flock to him, with as much pleasure as if he were their greatest benefactor.

“ Strange as this conduct may appear, every day’s experience furnishes instances of it; but of the many which mark the character of the present age, the most glaring is that of the person whom you see in yonder closet, spurning the ensigns of grandeur from him, with an air of dissatisfaction, that shews their insufficiency to procure their owner happiness. His whole life is so strong a satire on this particular folly of patriotism, that a short view of it can not be improper.

“ He was born in this manor, where his ancestors, who were but peasants, acquired so considerable a property by their honest industry, as enabled them to make a better appearance than many of the gentry.

“ When he came into possession of his fortune, he lived in so hospitable and genteel a manner, that he was greatly liked by his neighbours.

THE REVERIE. 63

hours of all ranks, who never suspected that his generosity was ultimately subservient to the most enterprizing ambition; but a lucky event secured his hopes before they discovered, and could take any measures to defeat them.

"There happened to be at that time a vagabond-fellow in the next county, who pretended a claim to the lord of this manor's whole estate, which he talked of going to law to recover, as soon as he could raise money to support the suit, for he was himself very poor, and lived upon the charity of one or two great folks, who maintained him rather to plague the lord, than from any personal regard to himself, or opinion of the justice of his claim.

"The lord was convinced of his own right, and very well able to support it. However, to prevent trouble, he gave notice to all his tenants not to give his adversary any assistance on pain of forfeiting their leases, in which there was a clause expressly to that purpose.

"But this did not hinder some desperate fellows, who had ran out their fortunes in whoring and gaming, or were upon their keeping for deer-stealing, and such illegal practices, from joining with him underhand, in hopes that if he should recover the estate, he might be easily prevailed upon, in return for their services, not only to forgive their offences, but also to reinstate them in their farms, or grant them leases of those which belonged to the friends of his opponent.

"Such a combination naturally alarmed all those who were in the interest of the present lord, especially as it was headed by a very bold-spirited turbulent fellow, one of the principal gentry

gentry of the parish, who had just before ran away with the wife of one of his neighbours; and therefore, though he bullied the husband into compliance, could not expect to live in quiet under a landlord who was remarkably strict in the execution of the laws.

“ This was a fair opportunity for one of such an enterprizing spirit as this person before us, to ingratiate himself effectually with the lord of the manor. Nor did he fail to improve it; for putting himself at the head of his family, and all those whom his hospitality had attached to him, he drove that gentleman, great a bully as he was, quite out of the parish.

“ So signal a piece of service did not remain long unrewarded. The CRIER *of the court-lect* happening to die just then, he was unanimously chosen into his place the next court-day; and the lord thought him so firm in his interest, that he not only approved of his tenant's choice, but also made him CLERK *of his own kitchen* the very next vacancy.

“ In this situation of crier he conducted himself with such address, that he was able to put only those he pleased on the grand-jury, and by that means frequently to oppose the steward himself in things which he knew to be disagreeable to the parish: at the same time managing matters so artfully, that he never absolutely broke with him, nor gave him reason sufficient to justify his turning him out of his clerkship; having always some plausible excuse to palliate what he did; and professing the highest fidelity and attachment to the lord's service, which he took every occasion of promoting, that he thought would not injure him, in the opinion of the people.

“ The popularity and power which he acquired by this conduct was far from being agreeable to many of his neighbours, particularly of the better sort, who did not like to see a man whom they looked upon as their inferior rise over their heads in such a manner, that they were become no better than mere cyphers in the parish, not being able to make a petty constable, or get a presentment for mending a road, or even making a stile, without being first obliged to cringe to him for his consent.



C H A P. XIV.

Set one knave to catch another. An instance of moderation as much out of course as in character. The parson swallows a sugar-plumb, and does what he is bid like a good child.

“ **A**T length one of the gentry, a cunning old fellow, who knew the world and all its ways well, resolved to try if he could not supplant him in the favour of the people, by making him appear a favourite of the lord's; after which he knew it would not be difficult to do his business with him also, who was already far from being well pleased with his conduct.

“ Accordingly he employed emissaries to insinuate to the parishioners, when their heads were hot with liquor at fares and wakes, that it was imprudent in them, to put themselves so much in the power of a person who held so profitable a place under the lord of the manor

as clerk of the kitchen, as he would not fail to give up their interest, on any great occasion, for fear of being turned out of his employment.

“ These insinuations soon came to the crier’s ears, who, without waiting to let the people ruminate upon the matter, went among them directly, as if he knew nothing of what had passed ; and took occasion to tell them, in the course of his conversation, that he had accepted of the clerkship, only that he might be able to serve them more effectually, by taking care that the provisions, which they were obliged by their tenures, to supply for the support of the lord’s house, were not embezzled privately by the servants, and they put to the expence of more ; and, as a proof of the advantage of this care, he assured them, that many a time, when the lord had given some of his hungry followers a letter to him, to get a basket of broken victuals, he had returned for answer, that there was scarce enough for the family, and so sent the beggars away with empty bellies.

“ This artful turn gave the affair quite another look. They implicitly believed every word he said ; so that he foiled his enemy, cunning as he was, at his own weapons, and made the attack, designed to have over-turned him, serve to establish his interest more firmly.

“ But this disappointment did not discourage the other, who now had new motives for striving to get him out of favour ; for having married two of his sons to the steward’s daughters, he judged that if he could contrive to have the crier turned out, it would not be difficult for him to get the younger, who was a fine promising

misfing lad, and fond of living at home among his friends, chosen in his stead; by which means the management of the whole manor would come into the hands of his family, several of his relations, who all depended upon him, having good employments under the steward already.

“ But how to effect this was the question; for the crier’s popularity seemed so firmly established, that it appeared dangerous even to attempt any thing against him. After much deliberation, he resolved, as the method most likely to succeed, to set up a rival against him for the people’s favour; and then he did not doubt, but their own fickleness would soon make them quit their old engagements and readily enter into new.

“ Nor was he long at a loss whom to fix upon as most proper for his design. The old parson of the parish dying suddenly one day just after eating an hearty dinner of pork and pease-pudding, the lord gave the living to a young man who had lately come into the parish with the steward.

“ A particular circumstance made this choice very disagreeable to many of the principal parishioners. The greatest part of the income of the living consisted in the rents of a large quantity of glebe land, which was let out in parcels to several people for a certain number of years.

“ The leases, by which these farms were held, were never suffered to run out; for as the parsons were only tenants for life, they had no great regard to their successors; and had therefore come into a method of renewing the leases

at

“ But unluckily for this person, his whole consequence depends upon the actual exertion of that opposition, and must inevitably cease the moment he attempts to drop it. This the steward knows as well as himself; so that his hopes from that quarter are effectually cut off, should his poverty prompt him to make the base attempt.”



CHAP. XIII.

An odd way of expressing favour or dislike. The history of THE COBLER matched by that of A CRIER.

“ I SHOULD imagine (said I, perceiving that my guide had finished his account of the cobbler) that he has something to fear more immediately than want, which in a great measure obviates the danger of that.

“ You say his deluded party will despise him, Will they not do more? Will they not be provoked by such egregious abuse, to take personal revenge? To pull down his house over his head, and bury him in the ruins? or tear him limb from limb, the first time they catch him in the streets? the mob is capable of any outrage, and here they have an appearance of reason to justify whatever they do.

“ I think his case is really desperate, and that the only hope he can have of escaping is to fly hence more to the county town, and follow his trade. His ambition must be pretty well cooled by this time, and therefore he will be able to
apply

apply diligently to his work, and may possibly earn an honest and comfortable livelihood."

"To unexperienced reason (answered the spirit) your remark appears just. But better knowledge of the ways of man shews that such fear is quite unnecessary. Did the people express their resentment in the manner you mention, it is most certain that they would not be so often abused as they are by pretended patriots. An example or two of the kind would effectually put a stop to that trade, how lucrative soever it is, which would be a real advantage to the community in general. But the remedy might be attended with consequences more dangerous than the disease. Would the mob, if once permitted to take the power thus into their own hands, never rise but on such occasions? would they lay it down when their end is answered, and go no farther? would not the best members of the state be involved in the same danger, on every miscarriage in their measures, though impossible to have been prevented by human means. The mob is a many headed monster, that must be kept in subjection, or it will become the most insupportable of all tyrants. It knows no mean, and therefore must not be trusted with power.

"But as to these people, they have been so often imposed upon in this manner before, that the abuse is become familiar to them, and they will not even feel it after the first moment, and then too their resentment will spend itself in scurrility and invectives, levelled oftener against faults in the person's private character, than his abuse of them.

"Indeed

“Accordingly, he ordered his receiver to pay the money in dispute to those people, and take their receipts for it of his own mere authority, without designing to consult the court-leet any more about the matter; and, to shew his resentment to the crier, turned him directly out of his clerkship, as he did all his friends out of the several employments they had in the manor under his steward, giving them to the friends of the parson, and of the gentleman who first stirred him up against the crier.

“The latter was now at the highest pinnacle of popular glory; the idol of the mob, and the apparent victim of the perfidy and oppression of his enemies.

“But he knew the world too well to be content with such an unsubstantial phantom as the favour of a mob. He had laboured all his life, it was true, with indefatigable assiduity to arrive at this point; but he soon shewed he had other views than those he pretended; and that all his professions of regard and attachment to the good of the parish, were only lures to draw in the giddy multitude to trust themselves so implicitly in his power, that he might be able to get the price he desired for betraying them when he saw a proper time.

“Accordingly, upon some hints of his intentions, the lord sent a new steward to take care of the estate, the former one having been made disagreeable to the tenants, by the violence and over-bearing of some of his servants, who had not spirit to support what they said, when they were called to account for it, though he was himself a good-natured easy kind of man

in the main, and had formerly been very well liked by them.

"The new steward and the crier soon came to a proper understanding over an hearty bottle, of which they were both remarkably fond; and the latter bargained to sell his friends, and resign his criers place, in consideration of being made an esquire, and getting a salary to support him suitably to his new dignity.

"It is impossible to express the rage of the mob, at seeing that they had been so long the dupes of his designs. They got drunk for a week together with drinking to his confusion, made scurrilous ballads against him and his family, and loaded him, in his turn, with execrations and abuse.

"But a new patriot standing forth to engage their attention, they forgot the crier, and went on in their old way with as much eagerness and credulity, as if they had never been deceived.

"As for the parson, his polite friend served him nearly in the same manner as the crier did the mob. As soon as his turn was served, and his son chosen into the crier's place, chiefly by the assistance of the parson's friends, he not only dropped his acquaintance, but even gave him up to the crier's resentment; who had privately made it apart of his bargain that he should be struck out of the *quorum*, in revenge for the trouble and expence he had put him to in the course of this affair.

"As the old crier has been so successful in all his schemes, I see you wonder how he came into this place; but if you consider that vanity and an absurd ambition of being made a gentleman, were the original, the leading motives of

all his labours, you will acknowledge that the egregious folly of the end, takes off all merit from the means, and makes his success ridiculous.

“Nor is he insensible of this himself now that it is too late. Though the unthinking mean spirited mob have forgot his abuse of them, and croud to his table to eat his meat and drink his wine, with as much readiness and pleasure as if their own and their family’s interest had not been sold by him to purchase them; the reproaches of his own heart embitter his enjoyment of their company, and make their professions of respect nauseous. He pines for his former popularity; and, unhappy in the accomplishment of his hopes, finds too late, that the end of all his labours is vanity.”



CHAP. XVI.

Muzzle a bear, or I'll bite you. Three remarkable characters. Boys that play tricks spend hours of tell-tales.

I WAS, by this time, so sick of patriotism and public spirit, that, as soon as my guide stepped, I resolved to beg that he would change the subject, to something more deserving of the observation of a rational being.

“Enough, most judicious spirit! (said I) enough hast thou said to prove the justice of thy remark. In every rank of life, I see the same causes produce the same effects. Cobblers and criers differ but in name: but surely it must be otherwise in higher scenes, where the great
affairs

affairs of nations are transacted. The mind must be extended in proportion to the greatness of the subjects upon which it is employed, and can never look down to the trifles which engross the attention of poultry villagers. Let us therefore turn away from this scene of drunkenness and folly, and seek for matter more worthy of our observation elsewhere.

"I will indulge you; (answered my guide) but you will find little advantage in the change of place. Folly reigns every where alike, and more exalted stations only make it more ridiculous: and luckily a scene presents itself to our view, which shews this in the most striking light.

"Turn your eye this way.---You see these three persons yonder. They are just entering into a conference upon one of the most extraordinary subjects that ever shewed the inconsistency of human actions. We will hear of from themselves; but first, while they make the common preface of empty compliments, and unmeaning questions, which are made the introduction to conversation even on the most important subjects, I will give you a short sketch of their lives as far as is necessary to make you understand what they say.

"They were born in different manors belonging to the lord who owns that in which the crier made such a figure; but their being educated together at the same free-school gave rise to an intimacy which has grown up with them through life.

"When they were taken from school they were put to different professions, as interest or inclination directed. He on the right chose the

the law, in which the acuteness of his genius enabled him to make such a proficiency, that in time he was entrusted to search for informations against such persons as trespassed on the lord's demesne, or killed his game, and to sue them and the tenants who did not pay their rents punctually.

"This employment was not only very profitable in itself, but also gave him an appearance of so great consequence in the court-leet, that he was generally on one side or the other in every private dispute that arose in the manor.

"The next, as you see by his habit, was bred to the church, in which he laboured so successfully, that he got a good vicarage before he was very old, and, having the character of being a great scholar, was also preferred to the honourable employment of teaching the lord of the manor's son and heir his letters.

"As for the third, he was too idle to take to any particular profession: but, by the interest of his friends he got into the steward's office, where he had several petty employments, which brought him in a good penny in the whole.

"But this was not all. Having always shewn a remarkable turn for making bawbles and nick-nacks, and being a perfect master of the punctilios of dress and address, and all the other accomplishments of a small genius, he was chosen as a proper person to provide rattles and paper-kites for his young master, and to teach him to cock his hat, and ride his hobby horse with a good grace.

"As they were all known to be very well qualified for these important places, there was no objection made to their being honoured with
them,

them; and they executed their several charges with proper dignity and ease. But an unlucky affair soon happened, that threatened not only the loss of their present employments, but also to prevent their being ever entrusted with any other.

“ You may remember I told you there was a fellow who pretended a right to all the estates of this lord. His family came originally from the manor in which the lawyer was born, and where most of the inhabitants had a strong attachment to him, both as they were naturally very proud, and thought it would be a great honour to them to have their townsman made lord of the manor, and also that they flattered themselves with the hopes of getting good farms from him, in some of his other manors, in case he could make good his pretensions; for they were all as poor as they were proud.

“ Beside, there was another reason for their desiring to change their land-lord. Before the estate came into the possession of the present lord, they had been accustomed to have their landlord live among them, and hold his courts and receive suit and service in this manor. But this lord, having many better houses to live in, had removed his habitation; and of course discontinued those ceremonies, so that they lost all that parade of grandeur in which their pride had taken such pleasure.

“ Now, as this fellow founded his pretensions on being descended from the family of their old lords they expected that he would come and live among them, as they had done; or at least restore them their court-leets, and all their ceremonies and perquisites again, never considering that the employments and places of honour and profit,

profit, which they held in the other estates of the present lord yielded them more than the entire income of their manor.

"It is not strange therefore that the lawyer should have received an early bias in his favour; which was also confirmed by his being educated at that free-school, the master and ushers of which were all notorious for the same principles, and took all possible pains to instil them into their pupils, in which they were not unsuccessful, with the lawyer's two friends as well as with many others.

"It happened in some little time after they were preferred to those employments above-mentioned, that a person who had formerly been very intimate with them all three, having been educated at the same school along with them, said, among a mixt company in the unguarded openness of conversation, when wine removes all reserve, that he had once little thought of their being ever put into places of such confidence under the lord of the manor, as he had often seen them, on their bare knees, drink confusion to him and all his friends, and success to the hopes of his enemy.

"There was something so singular in this speech, that it struck all the company with surprise; but one gentleman in particular, who was warmly attached to the lord's interest, desired all present to take notice of what this person had said, as he was resolved to put him to the proof of it, it being as hate in him to throw those aspersions on the characters of persons of such note, if they were innocent, as it would be criminal in all who heard him to conceal an affair of such consequence, in case they were guilty.

"Thunder-

THE REVERIE. 81

“Thunder-struck at this, the other who had no intention of turning informer against his friends, and had only said it in the course of general chat, strove to evade the subject, and give the discourse some other turn, hoping that the gentleman would think no more of it; but finding that he would not be put off so, but persisted in his resolution, he appealed to the sanction of private conversation, where all that was said had ever been held sacred, and the disclosing of a syllable accounted a breach of the laws of society, and that mutual confidence which alone makes it a blessing.

“To this the gentleman answered that he was neither ignorant of, nor designed to infringe upon these laws; but that here a superior duty intervened and superseded them; nothing private being to be put in competition with the welfare of the public which he thought to be concerned in this affair.



CHAPTER XVII.

A lion's mouth is better than none. The advantage of a friend in court. A maxim in law serves well.

“ACCORDINGLY he went the very next morning and informed the lord of the whole matter, who called all his principal servants together, to consult what was proper to be done in this case; for as it concerned his

E 5

own

own family particularly, he would not act without advice, that he should not be suspected of partiality, who all agreed that it ought to be enquired into with the greatest strictness.

“ On this the person who had undesignedly given the information was brought before them, when he gave such a vague account of the affair, that the lawyer, who was appointed by the other two, to speak for them all, as best qualified by his profession to defend a bad cause, thought it the best way not to deny the charge directly, but to strive to turn it off, by saying it was not impossible but they might have played such foolish tricks, when they were boys at school, but that the conduct of his whole life ever since he came to man’s estate was a sufficient proof of the sincerity of his attachment to his lord; and, to confirm this, he instanced his having prosecuted with the greatest vigour, several of the parish in which he was born, and even some of his own family, for this very offence with which he was now so absurdly charged, since he came into his present employment.

“ Plausible as this defence was, the gentleman judged from the manner in which the story had been originally told, that there must be more in it; he therefore insisted that the person who had told it should declare positively, and without prevarication or reserve, whether he had ever known them drink those toasts since they left school? where? and on what occasions?

“ These questions were too close to be evaded. He was therefore obliged, in defence of his own character, which was now at stake, to declare the whole; accordingly he said that he
had

had heard them drink them several times, at the house of an haberdasher of small wares, who kept a shop in the county-town, where for many years they used to meet constantly twice or thrice a week, and indulge themselves in the most sanguine professions of those principles over their wine; who was so strongly attached to that person himself, and so well persuaded of their attachment to him also, that when he came to die, he bequeathed his real estate, which was very considerable, to the lawyer, with handsome legacies to the other two, leaving him (the informer) but a meer trifle, as he doubted his being staunch to the cause; and, as a confirmation of what he said, added that the settlement which the lawyer had since made upon his wife at his marriage was of that very estate which the haberdasher had left him.

"This gave a different face to the whole affair. The lawyer in particular gave himself up for ruined, and would gladly have compounded for the loss, not only of his present employment, but also of all farther hopes.

"But he had better luck. The majority of the servants, who had been called into consultation upon the affair, did not think it prudent to establish a precedent for looking so far back, and one of them particularly, who had been bred to the law himself, said "that this estate should be considered as a fee, given by the haberdasher to his lawyer, and that it was an established rule that a lawyer should say any thing that his client desired for his fee, without being called in question for it; for if it were otherwise, and lawyers made answerable for what they said, there would be an end to the
E 6 business

" business at once, as the great art and mystery
 " of it consisted in saying any thing that might
 " any way conduce to carrying the point, with-
 " out regard to decency, truth, or any such
 " immaterial considerations: whereas if gentle-
 " men of the law were to be called to account
 " for what they said in the way of their business,
 " and for their fee, no one would ever undertake
 " a weak cause, and so the profession would fall
 " to the ground. Beside, it was a point agreed
 " upon, in all the books, that what a lawyer says
 " for his fee, is never to be considered a his pri-
 " vate sentiment or opinion; else how could law-
 " yers rail at, and abuse their most intimate
 " friends, in the manner they do every day, for
 " a stranger they never would go, and in a cause
 " they are considered to be wrong, without
 " breaking with them, or giving them the least
 " offence; as an instance of which, he added that
 " he had himself often gone directly from court
 " to dine with the man whom he had *spoke* at the
 " whole morning for abusing; therefore no man
 " was to be called to account for what he said
 " for his fee: and this opinion he supported by
 " a string of quotations from all the great and
 " learned sages of the law; and by the con-
 " stant and uniform practice of the profession
 " from time immemorial, to this very day."

" So learned a defence saved the delinquents,
 for it would have been unjust to have made a
 distinction between them. The majority of
 the servants (as I said) therefore gave it as their
 opinion, that the accusation, *though not false*,
 was malicious, frivolous, and unworthy of fur-
 ther notice.

" Thus blew over a storm, in which their
 very friends expected they would have sunk.

On

THE REVERIE. 85

On the contrary, the lawyer was soon after made a justice of the peace and deputy to the seneschal of the principal manor, the parson got a better living, and the hobby-horse-man on his pupil's growing too big for his care, was preferred by his best friend the steward to be his head clerk, which places they all enjoy at present; while the poor informer drew upon himself such universal contempt for his indiscretion, that he was never able to shew his face after."



C H A P. XVIII.

Mobility of the mind and gratitude. Companions are vain. A good memory often makes a bad companion. It is prudent to make hay while the sun shines.

"I might be imagined that after such an affair their present preferment should satisfy their ambition. But far from it, emboldened by that escape, they think there is nothing which they may not do, and the favour that has been shewn them since, instead of making them contented and grateful, has given them such a high opinion of their own merit, which they foolishly judge to have been the reason for it, that they reckon all they have got as nothing, while there is any thing else for them to desire, and look upon themselves as ill-treated, if they are refused whatever they please to ask.——
But quit!——Their conference at length begins.——Let us attend.——

86 THE REVERIE:

"I say, sir (said the lawyer, fire sparkling in his eyes) that I am ill-used. Had there been any objection to my abilities to fill such an employment, or could it have been even pretended that the person who is put over my head, was superior to me in any respect, it would have been another case; but, to be continued a deputy, where I had so good a right to be made principal, is not to be borne. Nor will I bear it. No man provokes me with impunity.—"

"Really, sir (answered the parson) I cannot but own you have some reason to complain. But what would you say, if you were in my place? To be taken no notice of where there were so many opportunities! so many better livings vacant! it is enough to provoke the patience of *Job*. After all the pains I have taken to teach him to read, and my care in chusing out such lessons as were proper for him, that he might not receive wrong notions of things, to be slighted in this manner; it is too much! He could not have served his former tutor worse, who was turned off for teaching him to spell in that profane ballad. But there is no such thing as gratitude, no regard to past services, to be found in the world!"

"Indeed, gentlemen (added the third, while his reverence stopped to take a pinch of snuff, and the lawyer was walking about the room in a violent chafe) we are all extremely ill-used. But you must both allow, that I have much the greatest reason to complain. You have got places which afford you a comfortable subsistence, and if they are not quite so good as you could wish, you have this satisfaction that they cannot be taken from you.

"But

"But that is not my case. I may be turned out of the poor pittance I have got, without a moment's warning, as it is most probable I shall soon find to my sorrow, whenever the old steward dies. And this is all the reward I have received for the many weary hours I have spent at chuck and push-pin with the young heir, and teaching him to buckle his shoes right, and put on his hat with an air. We have all reason to complain, but my case is certainly the hardest."

"Your case, (replied the lawyer, with a smile of indignant contempt) pray what is your case, good sir? The poultry menial services you did about his person have been sufficiently rewarded. Common servants should not assume such airs, nor pretend to put themselves on a level with their superiors."

"Poultry menial services! (interrupted the other, kindling into a rage) I'd have you to know, sir, that my services were not poultry; and perhaps they give me a better right to expect favour than any which some others can boast of, highly as they may think of themselves. But I should be glad to know in what your great merit has consisted, that you are so ready to call that of another in question."

"My merit, sir, (answered the lawyer, taking fire) my merit, sir, has consisted and does consist, in my ability in my profession, which has enabled me to do the most essential service."-----

"Service!---To whom? (interrupted the other dryly) to yourself only. Your abilities, were they ten times greater than they are, have been amply rewarded by the place you enjoy, and the large sums of money they have brought you

you in from your deluded clients. But pray, sage sir, what important service have your great abilities been of to his lordship, that he should be under such obligations to you? I should be glad to know that."

"What service! (replied the lawyer hastily, being almost put off his guard, by such a cross question) what service do you ask, sir! Sir, I think it beneath me to answer a question that betrays such ignorance. But, if you do not know, they did who gave me the employments I hold; and they know beside that my promotion secured my whole family. My countrymen always stick fast by one another."

"Hah! hah! hah! great services! very great services, truly (said the other) I am really ashamed to hear a man who should know better, mention such things. I am indeed. But you must be blinded, quite blinded by your opinion of yourself, or you would never attempt to put them in competition with the services I have done his lordship, in the instruction of his son's tender youth."——

"How, sir! (interrupted the parson, who had hitherto listened to their dispute as unmoved as if it had been a visitation-sermon, where some country curate pretends to teach his brethren their duty) you instruct his tender youth! Pray, if I have more regard to truth in what you say. The instruction of his youth was committed to other kind of hands than yours. It is well known"——

"That I got you the little share you had in his education (said the other, catching the word out of his mouth) by informing of your predecessor's putting that ballad into his hands; and

and that you positively agreed to be guided by me, in every thing you should attempt to teach him, before you were admitted to come near him. So that if you have any merit in what you did, you owe it all to me. But some people have very bad memories in things done to serve them.

"But do you think that teaching him to read was such a mighty matter? The clerk of the parish, though he was good for nothing else, could have done that much well enough. That is the least part of a young gentleman's education, the very least part, and what many a one makes a very good figure without. It is sufficient for people who have their fortunes to make to mind such things, gentlemen are above them, they can keep servants to read and write too for them, without their taking such a trouble; and let me tell you, sir, the world thinks the living you got a sufficient reward for all you were able to teach him.

"But, gentlemen, I must remind you both of something which you seem to have forgot. There are other material reasons which not only prevent your getting the preferments you look for at present, but will also most probably prevent your ever getting them, and indeed make what you have already gotten be looked upon with surprize and discontent.

"You must have forgot the affair of drinking those *disgustful* *traps*, certainly, or you would never give yourselves such airs as these. How can you, sir, expect that the real friends of his lordship, if they think at all about the matter, can like to see the court-rolls intrusted in such hands as yours? Or the parish-registers in
yours,

yours, sir?---No! no! gentlemen! you may both rest satisfied where you are. You will never rise higher, take my word for it. I know what defence you made, and how you came to escape so easily. But your business is done, take my word for it; your business is done."

The mention of the *toasts* was so unexpected, that it struck them both dumb. They hung down their heads, and heard him out as convicted criminals do their sentence. But the lawyer, soon recovering his natural presence of mind, "The toasts, sir! (said he) I wonder how you can mention that affair to us, in such a manner! Were not you as deeply concerned in it as we?"

"I wish I had, (replied the other) and then I should have been as well rewarded; for to be sure you got a good *fee*, and *lawyers may say any thing for their fee*. Well, it is an old saying, that it is good to have a friend in court. Your brother brought you off with flying colours; and we too had good luck to be in such good company, or I know not how we should have escaped. You brought us off, as well as you drew us into the danger.

"However, that escape has not made me so vain as to think I was not in fault. I have not the assurance to raise my expectations so high as you do, and am humbly content with what they please to give me, conscious that any thing is an extraordinary favour, and more than I should have received in any other lord's family in the kingdom; for which reason I shall strive to make hay while the sun shines; and as soon as a shower comes, retire into a snug corner, and enjoy my good fortune with thanks.

"As

THE REVERIE. 91

“As for you, gentlemen, who aspire to higher honours, you will find, perhaps, when it is too late, that you had better have followed my example. And so, most worshipful Mr. Seneschal, and most reverend Mr. Rector, I wish you both a good morning. — Paultry, mental services !”

With these words, he flung out of the room, leaving his two friends staring at each other in a situation whimsical enough.

CHAP. XIX.

Signal instances of greatness of spirit. Consistency of character maintained. A scene of uncommon tenderness.

THE parson was the first who broke silence. “Indeed, my friend, (said he, snuffing up his pinch, and shaking his head in a melancholy manner) I fear there is too much truth in what he says, and that we shall never be able entirely to get over the consequences of that unlucky discovery ; for which reason I will e’en strive to make myself easy, and not lose the enjoyment of what I have, by fruitless attempts for more.”

“You are to do as you please, Sir, (answered the lawyer peevishly) but I shall not stoop to be guided by the advice of such a mean spirited fellow. We should never have been forgiven, had they dared to shew resentment against us ; and the same motive will make them

them not chuse to provoke us too far by their refusals. I know how to deal with them. I will speak to all my friends. They are not bashful in asking, nor easy to be repulsed; and if their interest should be unsuccessful, I will take another course, which seldom fails. I shall not submit tamely, I promise them."

"And pray, my dear friend, (replied the parson) may I ask what course that is?"

"I will oppose all the measures of the lord's servants in the court-leet, (returned the lawyer) and that in such a manner, that they shall not be able to make any objections to my conduct, but what will add to my consequence in the opinion of the people. I have a whimsical thought just come into my head. What would you say, if I should turn *patriot* upon the occasion? I have precedents enough to justify me. And then the variety of such a scheme will be highly entertaining. I like the humour of the thing much.

"As for the Seneschal, I'll soon make him sick of his superiority. I'll contradict every syllable he says in the court-leet. My word there is as good as his, and my friends will stand by me, right or wrong; so that I'll make them sorry for what they have done for me, if they will not do more; and that will gratify my resentment at least, if my ambition is disappointed. No one ever provokes me with impunity."

"Nay, for that matter, (replied the parson, setting his hands a kimbo, and putting on a look of importance) I do not mean to be quite passive neither, I assure you. I seek peace, it is true, but then it must be on my own terms, or I shall not ensue it, I promise them.

"Nor

THE REVERIE. 93

“ Nor shall I long want an opportunity of letting them know my mind. The vestry will soon meet on some extraordinary affairs, when I will object to every thing the rector proposes; and that will vex them all not a little, for to my knowledge they have some things in view, which they will not like to be opposed in; such as *making some alterations in the old surplice and cassocks, and enlarging the church, and widening the approaches to the communion-table*; but I will not consent to the stirring a stick or stone, or clipping off the most ragged shred; all things shall remain as they are, merely to disappoint them; and then how silly will they look in the eyes of the crowds, whom they have promised to make room for?

“ They should not have let me know their secrets, if they designed to break with me in this manner. No! no! I do not mean to be quite passive neither, I assure you. Our cloth has never been noted for tameness and submission. I will seek peace, but it shall be on my own terms, I can tell them.”

The two friends then shook hands, and applauding each other's spirit, parted for that time, to prepare for putting their virtuous resolutions in execution.

“ What say you now, (said the Spirit with a smile) to modern modesty and gratitude? — But it is unnecessary to make any reflections on such a scene as this. They occur of themselves, with force sufficient to make a rational being sick of the world, and all its ways; and I hope you are convinced, that changing the scene makes no essential change in the prospect. Folly reigns every where alike. Tho palace is
no

no more exempt from it than the cottage: — But soft! — I see something yonder, which will be worth attending to. You have hitherto been principally engaged in viewing the folly of ambition; I will now shew you the effects of love, its potent rival in the human heart."

Saying this, he directed my eye to a chamber, where lay a woman languishing under a general decay of nature. Much as such a state must necessarily weaken the force of beauty, there was a symmetry in her whole figure, a softness and delicacy in her looks, which even thus in ruin charmed the beholder, and shewed how resistless they must have been when the warm glow of health inspired their bloom. But still an air of debauchery sullied all these charms; and her whole appearance bespoke a life worn out in vicious pleasures, which had taken such deep root in her heart, that whenever she opened her eyes, a feeble glance of loose desire glimmered through all the horrors of her present state.

Every thing around her shewed the highest affluence and most tender care; and the most elegant accommodations strove to make sickness tolerable; and compensate, as far as possible, for the want of health.

What particularly struck me was the tender, anxious assiduity with which she was waited upon by a person, whose appearance shewed him to have been bred to a profession, and on an element, neither of them very remarkable for softening the manners, and giving the mind such a compassionate humane turn.

He was kneeling at the foot of her bed, chafing her clay-cold feet with his hands, to try

THE REVERIE. 95

try if they could communicate any warmth to them. She seemed not insensible of such an act of tenderness, and raising her head from the pillow, "How shall I reward my hero, (said she, with a feebly-wanton leer) for all his care? Will this poor person of mine ever be in a condition to repay his pains and trouble with pleasure?"

"Let me but once more see my dearest girl well, (answered he, with a look of fondness and pity) and I shall think myself amply overpaid for all. Is there any thing that I can do, to give you ease or satisfaction? Command my fortune; command my life; myself, and all in my possession, are solely yours."

"I want nothing, (replied she) while I have you. Stay but always with me, and I have no other wish. - But why should I desire this! What pleasure can you find in the company of a poor sick creature, who is incapable of feeling any herself? I blame you not for seeking that satisfaction elsewhere, which it is no longer in my power to give you."

"Why will my dearest life (returned he, with an air of concern) think so meanly of me, as that I can have pleasure in any other company but hers. I never leave you a moment, but when my duty indispensibly calls me; and as soon as that is over, I fly back to you again with all the impatience of a youthful bridegroom."

"And when will that hateful duty call you again? (added she) How long may I promise myself your company now, without such painful interruption?"

"My

"My love, (returned he) I am this very moment under a necessity of waiting on the admiral. I have had notice that my ship is ready for sea; but I will forego all my hopes of honour and advantage rather than leave my dearest love, till I see you better. I have framed an excuse to evade my going this voyage; and by that time my ship returns, I promise myself that you will be able to take a trip with me in her to Lisbon, where the warmth of the climate will effectually restore your health."

"And how long will it be (said she) before you return from the admiral? I insist upon knowing to a minute, that I may not be tortured by any unexpected delay."

"I fear, my love, (answered he) that it will be impossible for me to leave him before dinner. He has so often asked me, that it will look like disrespect to refuse him always. Besides, as I go to sue for a favour, it would be ill-judged to give him offence. But you may be assured I will not stay a moment that I can avoid. By seven at farthest."—

"By seven! (exclaimed she) and must I! Can I live so long without you!—Well! since it must be so, go; but do not be surprized to find me dead, when you come back."

"My dearest love! (replied he, embracing her most tenderly) this is the last time I shall leave you. I design to tell the admiral that I am going out of town; so that nothing shall interfere with my care of you. Adieu! my love: let me find you in better spirits at my return."

CHAP. XX.

The opening of a new scene gives occasion for some reflections, which will probably be least agreeable to those who have most occasion for them.

DISTRESSED as the disconsolate fair one seemed at his departure, the moment he left the room opened a new scene. "Now is the time!" (said she, raising herself up with a spirit that could not have been expected from her looks) now is the time to put my design in execution! If I miss this opportunity, I don't deserve to find another." Then turning to an elderly woman who waited upon her, "Fly, nurse, (continued she) bid my sister come to me instantly, and observe the last directions I gave her."

The woman obeyed without delay; and the lady being left to her meditations, "Now shall I be happy!" (resumed she in a transport) Now shall I be in some measure revenged on that object of my soul's aversion, man! O! that I could treat the whole perfidious sex in the same manner, exposing them equally to the ridicule of the world, and the reproaches of their own conscious hearts! But, as that is impossible, let this mean spirited, doating fool, bear the weight for all. If I fall a victim to the vice of man thus in the prime of life, it is some consolation, that I can wreak my resentment upon him, who seems alone to merit

VOL. I. F better

better from me. The world will attribute what I do to other motives; but I disclaim them all, and act only from the principle of revenge."—Saying this, she sunk back upon her pillow, waiting with the utmost impatience for the return of her messenger.

There was something so superlatively base and wicked in these sentiments, and the hypocrisy which preceded them, that I could not avoid expressing the pain, they gave me to my guide. As soon as she had finished her meditations therefore, "O gracious spirit! (said I) what life must this vile woman have led, to harden her thus against every sense of virtue and humanity? and what uncommon injuries can she have suffered, to fire her soul with such an implacable passion for revenge?"

"Her life (answered he) has been that of a common prostitute; a life that necessarily effaces every tenderness of nature, as well as every principle of virtue: and the injuries which stimulate her to these more than savage sentiments have been no other than the usual unavoidable occurrences of her wretched profession."

"How! (exclaimed I) does prostitution work such a total change in woman's nature? bad, too bad I am sensible its effects are; but I have always thought, that some, and these not the least amiable of the virtues, were not quite inconsistent with it; I thought I had seen instances of benevolence, charity, and filial duty, exerted by some of those unhappy creatures, which would have been an honour to the chastest of the sex. But I find I have been in an error."

"Chastity

"Chastity (replied he) is not the only virtue of women; but still, it is so essentially necessary to the perfection of her nature, that the want of it, if it does not absolutely incapacitate her from every other, debases any feeble instances she happens to exert of them."

"Nor can it be otherwise. The moment a woman is known to violate this virtue, she is looked upon as a disgrace to her sex, and given up to infamy, even by the very persons who first seduced her to, and still participate in, the crime they pericure."

"Debarred thus from the benefits of society, where virtue is confirmed and enforced to imitation by example, she is obliged to consort with her sisters in vice, who to silence the voice of conscience, and keep up their spirits to pursue their miserable trade, vie with each other in wickedness; and, glorying in their shame, profess to deny the truth, and ridicule the precepts of those principles from which they have departed, till they burden each other in their iniquity, and become incapable of reformation."

"In such an abandoned state of reprobation, what merit can there be in a single act of virtue, that contradicts the constant tenour of their lives, and owes its rise perhaps to accident, vanity, or caprice? how light will it be found in the balance, when placed opposite to the innumerable vices among which it stands, and which always contaminate it in some circumstance or other?"

"But this even is not all. The most prodigate of them sees the necessity of putting on the appearance of some virtues, to palliate the

the horror of her profession. This is the reason of the error in which you may have been. Man requires but weak proof to convince him of what he wishes to be true; and therefore readily believes the reality of this appearance, and receives it as a sufficient atonement for the vice which gives him pleasure."

"Think me not too severe in what I say. There may perhaps be some instances to the contrary; but they are too few, in comparison with the others, to draw a more favourable conclusion from: and the danger which would attend such a conclusion is sufficiently great to justify so prudential and salutary a severity."

"The only safe rule to direct the judgment by, in all such cases, is this, *that a person who persists in the wilful breach of any one moral virtue, cannot be sincere in the profession of any other*; as a proper conviction of the duty of any must necessarily and invariably enforce the practice of all; that is, with allowance for the unpremeditated lapses of human infirmity.

"Nor is there a more dangerous error than this, of thinking that vice and virtue can be so far reconciled as to inhabit the same breast; or, *that it is possible to compound for the habitual transgression of one duty, by the occasional performance of another*; the mean mercenary motive to such a performance taking away every shadow of merit from it, and contradicting the unalterable essence of virtue, which is pure obedience."

The spirit's reflections were interrupted here by the return of the nurse, with the persons for whom she had been sent. The moment they entered the room, the sick lady forgot

forgot her ailments, and raising herself up, "Well, sister (said she, looking at them with eagerness and delight) I suppose these gentlemen have been informed on what occasion they have been brought here.* The moments are precious. Let us therefore do our business without delay; and then we may enjoy ourselves."

As soon as she said this, one of the gentlemen drew out pen, ink, and paper, and lay down directly to write her will, which she dictated with a readiness, that shewed she had long studied it. When he had finished, she read it over carefully, and signed it, in the due form of law, before the other gentlemen, who were brought on purpose to attest this extraordinary transaction.

The moment this important affair was ended, the lawyer received his hire, and then he and the witnesses departed, to prevent surprize; when she immediately sunk into a state of weakness, that shewed her end was approaching very fast, the extraordinary effort she had made on this occasion having quite exhausted her strength and spirits.

Dreadful as such an alarm must naturally be, it shook not her resolution. On notice of her friend's return, she dismissed her sister, without the least mark of tenderness or regret, though the only relation she had in the world, and prepared to go through with her design with a constancy worthy of a better cause.



C H A P. XXI.

A life concluded in character. An uncommon legacy of love and gratitude. A particular circumstance, necessary to be attended to through the course of this curious work, is explained.

AS soon as he entered the room, he ran to her bedside with the utmost impatience, where he found her languishing in the arms of death.

Such a sight awoke his tenderness. He fell upon her neck, and went over her in bitterness of heart. So genuine an expression of love operated as it were mechanically upon her, who had long been accustomed to return the caresses she received, however insipid or loathsome to her. She opened her eyes; and, forcing a faint smile of fondness, "How could you think (said she) that I could live so many tedious hours without you? It is well, that you are come at length, to bless my eyes with one view more of all that they delight in. Take care of this poor body; see that it is laid with decency in the grave; and sometimes bestow a thought on one whose heart's last wish was to give you pleasure. I have a sister who would perform that melancholy duty; but I have long broke all connection with her for your sake. You are the world to me; and every tender tie of nature is summed up in your love."—With these words, she fainted in his

his arms : nor ever recovered strength to utter another.

As soon as her disconsolate lover recovered from the first transports of his grief, he gave orders for her burial, with a magnificence that far exceeded the present state of his own affairs ; but this he thought himself under an obligation to do, in return for her whole fortune, which he had bequeathed to him, by a will made in the beginning of her illness ; and which amounted to a very considerable sum, though all gained by vice and infamy.

The next morning, after this last token of his regard was paid, he was surprised at receiving a visit from a person to whom he was an utter stranger. After the common compliments of meeting, the gentleman told him, that he was come from the sister of the deceased lady, to take possession of such effects of her's as might be in his hands.

" I am sorry, sir, (answered the widowed lover, with a smile) that she should have given you this unnecessary trouble. My dearest girl's effects and fortune are all in my possession ; nor shall I part with them to any one."

" How, sir ! (replied the stranger) Not part with them to the heir at law ! Pray by what right do you claim to keep them ?"

" And pray, sir, (returned the captain, somewhat offended at the manner in which the other spoke) by what right do you ask me that question ?"

" Sir, (said the stranger) I am employed by her sister, to make a legal demand of her undoubted right ; and if you do not chuse to comply with it in this amicable manner, I know
how

how to apply in another, that may be more effectual, though perhaps not quite so agreeable."

"That is to say, (retorted the captain) you are the lady's lawyer. Well then, good Mr. lawyer, as I desire to have as little conversation as possible with you, and all the worthy gentlemen of your profession, I will shew you my right."—Saying this, he unlocked a bureau, and taking out a paper, "Here, sir, (said he) is the lady's will, by which she has bequeathed to me every thing in her possession. If you please, I will read it to you."

"Very possible, sir, (answered the lawyer, with a significant smile) I do not doubt but it may be a will of her's; and therefore shall not give you that trouble. But, pray sir, will you give me leave only just to look at the date of that will?"

"The date! Yes, sir, (replied the captain) here it is. It bears date about a year ago, just in the beginning of her illness."

"I see, sir; (added the lawyer) and in return for your readiness to shew me that, will now shew you my client's title for making her demand. Here, sir, is a will made the very day before the lady died, by which she cancels that, and every other will she may have made, and leaves her whole fortune, real and personal, to her sister, charged only with a few legacies to her particular friends: and though you may not be much conversant with such affairs, you must certainly know, sir, that the last will takes place. As you are one of the principal legatees, I will read it over to you, if you please; at least that part in which your legacy is mentioned."

The

The captain's surprize at this piece of news was so great, that he had not power immediately to make any reply; accordingly the lawyer, taking his silence for an assent to his proposal, opened the will with great deliberation, and clearing his voice, with an hem or two, proceeded to read: "*Item*, in return for the great expence and trouble which my dearly beloved friend captain *Lovejade* has been at, in taking care of me, during this painful and tedious illness, I give and bequeath to him a lock of my hair, which I desire he will have put into a locket, and wear next his heart, for my sake."

"Hold, sir! (interrupted the captain, roused by such a cutting insult) let me see that will. Why, villain, this is not her hand! I knew it was not possible. This is a base and impudent forgery, for which you shall all be punished with the utmost severity."

"Pray, sir, (answered the lawyer coolly) suspend such an injurious opinion for a moment. Look at the paper again, and you will see that it is not an original will, but an attested copy of one, regularly proved this very morning in the Commons, where you may see the original any time you please. As you may think proper to take advice in a matter of this consequence, I shall wait for your answer to my client's demand till to-morrow morning, when I will call upon you for it; if you do not chuse to save us both that trouble, by sending all the lady's effects to her sister's house this evening; to prevent any mistake in which, here is a copy of a schedule of them, which we have signed by the deceased, and bearing equal date

F 5.

with

with her will : and so, sir, I wish you a good morning."

"Pray stay a moment, sir, (said the captain, a good deal cooled by such an unexpected stroke) and give me leave to ask you a few questions. Though she has played me such a base trick, I presume I have a right to demand a reimbursement of the very great expences which her long illness and burial have cost me ; and for which, you must be sensible I have received no consideration. You appear to be a person of character, and as such I expect a direct and candid answer from you."

"I am glad, sir, (answered the lawyer) that you see reason to entertain a better opinion of me, than you were pleased to express a little while ago ; but I cannot give you such an answer as will be very pleasing to you. You say you have received no consideration ; pray, sir, did not the lady cohabit with you, both before and during her illness ? Now, sir, light as you may make of such a matter, the law admits of such cohabitation as a valuable consideration ; not only for whatever expences a man may be at while it continues, but also for the recovery of a promised maintenance, after it ceases ; and therefore you can have no right to expect payment, especially as you buried her of your own free will, and without consulting her heir. If you have any farther commands, I will wait upon you when you please ; but at present I am in haste. A gentleman waits for me at the coffee-house. Sir, your servant."

It is impossible to describe the captain's situation at the discovery of such a base design. He railed at the whole sex in the grossest terms, and cursed his own credulity for being

being made a dupe to one of the most infamous of them.

When he had vented the first transports of his rage in this manner, it occurred to him, that the whole might possibly be a contrivance of the sister's and her lawyer, who having some way learned that he was out that day, fixed upon it as a proper time to date their pretended will.

But this conjecture was soon overturned, upon examining his servants, who all informed him of the nurse's having gone out immediately after him, and brought their mistress's sister, with that very person, and three more whom they did not know, who were shut up in her room a considerable time, and went away but just before he returned.

Disappointed in this hope, he went directly to an attorney of his acquaintance, in whose judgment he had a confidence; to try if there was not some redress in the law for so gross an abuse as he had suffered; but he had the mortification to find, that he must submit to the whole, and be satisfied with *the lick of his beloved's hair*, though he wanted not that legacy to keep her eternally in his remembrance.

“Well, (said my guide, as soon as this extraordinary scene was ended), what is your opinion now of the virtues of a prostitute? Their profession is, to pretend regards they never feel; and you see she has preserved a perfect uniformity of character to the end of her life; and yet she was one of the most remarkable of them all for the virtues you mentioned. As to her lover, base as her treatment of him was, he drew it upon himself, by his insatuated dotage.”

and deserved to be deceived for placing confidence in a woman whose whole life he knew to have been a series of deceit.—What is the matter? You seem surprised at something.”—

“O gracious spirit, (answered I) what can this mean? We have attended the progress of this last scene through a series of many days; and yet I see all the other objects round me exactly in the same situation as when it began. How can this be? Have their actions been suspended, till we should be at leisure to attend to them?”

“Your surprize (replied he) is natural. You judge according to the mode of man's conception, whose limited faculties are incapable of comprehending things at once; and therefore are obliged to receive them in a slow succession, which you call time. But beings of a superior nature are not under that disadvantage. Our powers are more extensive; and the shortest glance shews us the whole progress of the most complicated transaction, bringing all its parts together in one view before us. This power I have for the present communicated to you, as I could not otherwise attend to give you the information you desire in the tedious course of human comprehension. But you will understand this better, when I tell you, that what seemed to you a series of many days, in reality was not a minute, according to your manner of speaking. Attention to this will prevent a like surprize on future occasions.”



CHAP. XXII.

An account of an universal genius. Some curious secrets in the trade of an author; with a new way of replying to impertinent remarks.

WHILE I was reflecting on what my guide had just said, "Turn your eye this way, (continued he) and observe that person yonder. He is one of the strongest instances of the danger of indulging an indiscriminate desire of praise; and being seduced by the first smiles of success to form schemes for acquiring even the most imaginary pre-eminence over the rest of mankind.

"To understand the nature of the distress, which, as you see, corrodes his heart, and makes him incapable of enjoying the favours fortune has heaped upon him, it will be necessary to take a short view of his life.

"He was born in one of the lower ranks of the people, where necessity silences the voice of ambition, and obliges men to have recourse to the more immediately useful arts, of industry and labour, to supply their own wants, and minister to the convenience of those above them. But though the poverty of his parents prevented their extending their views beyond their own sphere, in the way of life they proposed for him, a dawn of genius, which marked the opening of his youth, prompted them to exert the utmost of their abilities in giving him the first rudiments of a good education.

"Such

“ Such care, when dictated by prudence, and not the fond result of injudicious partial vanity, is seldom unsuccessful ; though for a while it seemed to counter-act their principal design, by leading him into pursuits of a different nature from those marked out for him, and making him despise and neglect the low illiberal profession he was bred to.

“ But one of those lucky accidents which govern life, and shew the insignificance of human forecast and wisdom, effected what their most sanguine fondness could never have suggested the remotest hope of.

“ After he had languished for some years in obscurity and indignant discontent at the severity of his fate, he happened one day, in a mixed company, which had met upon some public occasion, to sit next to one of the most ingenious persons of the age.

“ The conversation in such places generally turns on subjects the least agreeable to men of reason ; and is carried on with such noise and confusion, that, in their own defence, they are obliged to enter into private chat with those next them, to avoid being applied to, if they appeared disengaged.

“ Accordingly, the gentleman asked him some of the common questions which lead into discourse, designed only to consume time ; but he, ambitious of appearing to advantage in the eyes of a person of his character, soon took an opportunity to divert the conversation to those subjects which he knew would be most pleasing to him ; in which he displayed such extensive reading, such delicacy of taste, and depth of judgment, with so modest a diffidence
in

THE REVERIE. III

in his own, and submissive deference for the opinion of the other, that he politely invited him to his house, for the pleasure of improving their acquaintance.

“ From that day, his prospects began to brighten. The gentleman, pleased with the thought of having rescued a man of such abilities from obscurity, not only received him into the closest intimacy, but also introduced him to the knowledge of such of the great as were most eminent for patronizing literary merit, whose favours in a manner prevented his very wishes.

“ The first advantage he took of this happy change was to quit the mean profession he had been educated in, and enter into the most reputable in which the abilities of the human mind can be exerted; where the interest of his new friends soon crowned his fame with the solid reward of an honourable and affluent establishment.

“ During the life of his friend he preserved his esteem by the most artful and delicate address. Sensible of the implacability of literary rivalry, he carefully avoided the particular paths the other had advanced in to that envied eminence he now enjoyed, and to which he asserted a kind of exclusive right, directing his studies so different a way, that far from being jealous of an emulation, his friend gave the sanction of his own most sanguine approbation, to establish his fame; and at his death gave the strongest proof of his confidence in his abilities and integrity, by entrusting him with the care of some of his works, which were not yet published.

“ So

“ So honourable a testimony established his reputation in the highest esteem; but a vain ambition of appearing in the absurd character of *an universal genius* soon precipitated him from this envied height.

“ For the reason of the reserve which had hitherto kept him within his proper bounds being now removed, he resolved to give his parts their full scope; and to shew that his taste for the works of imagination was equal to his judgment in the abstruser pursuits of science, he published a collection of *old ballads, with notes and emendations, critical and explanatory*; in the course of which he discovered such a contempt for the opinions of all other writers, and obtruded his own with such an air of authority, without deigning even to give any reasons in their support, that he provoked the universal indignation of that irritable race; one of whom, in particular, levelled the canons of ridicule against his work, in such a spirited, poignant manner, that, in despite of his confidence in his own opinion, and contempt for that of others, he was obliged to suppress it, at a very considerable expence.

“ The least slip on the summit of a precipice is dangerous. The first disgrace he met in this affair gave his reputation a deep wound; and another work, published soon after, in which he advanced opinions contrary to the general sense of mankind, and undertook to support them, by arguments either trifling, or evidently subversive of them, entirely ruined it for ever; and he became of no more consequence in the literary world than if he was actually dead.

“ How-

"However, that very opinionated confidence which drew him into this disgrace, prevented his sinking under the weight of it; and enables him to look down with disdain upon all who presume to differ with him, without even vouchsafing to take the least notice of their objections.

"But under this appearance of unconcern, his heart is a constant prey to the pangs of disappointed ambition, and the most rancorous envy; and he secretly descends to the meanest artifices, to restore his lost credit, and destroy that of his hated rivals."

Just as my guide had concluded his account of this extraordinary personage, a man entered to him, whom he seemed to have expected for some time. "I suppose, sir, (said he, without deigning to take the least notice of the profound respect with which the other approached him) you mistook the time when I let you know I should be at leisure to see you; or you would not have made me wait this half hour."

"I most humbly beg your pardon, sir, (answered the other) but I was delayed by an unexpected affair. A particular friend of mine called at my shop, just as I was coming to wait upon you, to inform me, that there was a very smart pamphlet to come out in a day or two against your last book. As I happen to have connections with the printer, I went to him directly, and by much intreaty prevailed upon him to let me have one of them in sheets, which I have here brought with me, in order that you may have an answer to it ready, before it can have done us much mischief.

Here

Here it is!— Will you please to look into it?"

"No, sir! not I! (replied he) I am not at leisure to read *smart* pamphlets at this time"

"But, sir, (returned the other) consider what a prejudice it may do your book."—

"A prejudice!—No, sir, that is impossible; (interrupted he peevishly) quite impossible, that a thousand pamphlets, though never so *smart*, in your expressive phrase, should do any prejudice to that book. Nothing can do a prejudice to that book in the opinion of the learned and judicious."

"If they cannot do the book a prejudice, sir (said the bookseller, as he now appeared to be) I know to my cost, that they can prejudice the sale of it; which is so heavy already, that I am like to be at a considerable loss, if something cannot be done to push it on. And for this purpose, I have here brought you all the books and pamphlets which have been written against it; and shall take it as a favour, if you will write a general answer to them all together; in which it will not be amiss, to throw in some personal reflections against the authors, that may provoke them to reply; by which means a controversy may be set on foot, that may raise a curiosity to read the book."

"Many a book is helped off this way, that else would have lain long enough upon hands. Nay, I know an author of eminence who always answers his own books, and then replies to the answers again, and both with such animosity, such ripping and tearing, that one would swear they were written by the bitterest enemies; by which management, he not only
sells

THE REVERIE. 115

sells his book, but also makes a good penny of the controversy too."

"Well, and pray good sir (answered the author, who had listened to him all this while with the greatest appearance of indifference) what do you tell me this fine story for? do you want me to imitate the practice of your eminent authors?"

"Pardon me, sir! (replied the bookseller) I would by no means give you that trouble. I am sensible your time is too valuable to be spent that way. But I hope you will think proper to answer the objections which have been made by others. Your own reputation, as well as my interest are concerned. You knew I paid you an high price for the copy, and have printed the book in the most elegant and expensive manner, and it would be hard to let me lose by it now."

"I have told you often, (returned the author haughtily) there can be no danger of your losing. Such a book must necessarily sell; and the attacks of those insignificant scribblers only prove its merit. Envy is always the shadow of excellence. However, as you seem to be alarmed at these answers, or whatever they are called, to satisfy you I will reply to them."

"Sir, I am much obliged to you (said the bookseller, putting a parcel of books and pamphlets out of his bosom and pockets) here they are. You see there have been a good many nibbling at you."

"Pray, sir, (said the author, with an air of disgust) do not give yourself the trouble of taking them out. I have no manner of occasion for them."

"I

"I beg pardon, sir, (answered the bookseller) I did not know you had them. Then I will only leave this last, which you have not seen."

"Sir, I have not seen any of them (replied the author) nor do I desire to see them. Pray be so good as to take them all away together."—"How, sir! I thought you said you would answer them."—"True, sir. But I did not say also that I would read them, I hope."—"Sir,—I do not understand you, sir. How can you answer books, without reading them?"

"Sir, you ask a great many questions. Why, sir, I know that any thing written against that book must be nonsense, which I will say in the preface to another book I am now writing: and this will be a sufficient answer."—"And in the mean time, before that book comes out, they will have damned the other eternally. Sir,—Sir,—I beg pardon; but I cannot help speaking. I am much afraid that such an answer will not be sufficient. That—that---that is only giving your opinion of your own book."—"And pray, sir, whose opinion is better? who is a better judge?"—"I do not say any one is a better judge, sir. But, sir, the public may require a—a—a more particular answer. If that would do, any author would say so much in defence of the worst book that ever was written."

"Well, sir, (said the author, putting on a look of offended dignity) as I do not think that book the worst that ever was written, I shall not say any more in defence of it, let the public expect what they will. I am positive it must work its way, in spite of a thousand

and such ignorant cavillers. But, to make you easy, if it should not sell, I will make good the loss to you. You shall not suffer by it."

"I am much obliged to you, sir (answered the bookseller, making a most profound reverence) That is sufficient, full sufficient. I hope you are not offended at my anxiety. I would by no means."—

"Pray, sir, (replied the author) let me hear no more of it. If you are satisfied, I hope that is enough."



CHAP. XXIII.

Extraordinary instances of one author's regard for the reputation of another; with a short method of silencing competitors for literary fame.

THE adjusting of this delicate affair dispelled the cloud that hung upon their brows, and restored their mutual complaisance and good humour.

"I imagined, sir (said the author, reaching the bookseller his snuff-box, as a pledge of perfect amity) you must have had some particular business with me, by the earnestness with which you desired to see me."

"Sir (answered he) I wanted to beg your opinion of that manuscript which I took the liberty to send you last week. The author called upon me yesterday; and insists upon having my definitive answer this afternoon."

—"And pray what does he ask for that fine affair?"—"Sir, he says he will not abate of the

the price I wrote you word ; which, high as it is, I think I had better give him, as his name will not fail to sell the book."

"Sir, you know your own business best ; but I am satisfied it can never sell, and will certainly ruin the gentleman's reputation : to prevent which, as I have a great regard for him, if I thought my interfering in it could never come to his knowledge, I would even buy it myself, and burn it ; by which means his necessities would be supplied, and his character saved."

"You are very good, sir. There are few who would be at such an expence, to serve a friend now a-days. As to his knowing any thing of the matter, I hope you are sensible you can depend upon me."

"Then, sir, here is the money to give him."
—"The money, sir ! yes, sir ; that is just the author's money. But pray what do you design to let me have, for my profit on it. You cannot expect that I should buy and sell, without some profit ?"

"Profit, sir ! I did not imagine you could desire profit in such an affair as this, where you have no trouble, nor run any risk of loss."

"No trouble, sir ! Dear sir, you little think what trouble I shall have with this gentleman about the publication of this book ; nor how many evasions and lying excuses I must invent, to put him off. The generality of authors, it is true, give themselves no farther trouble about a book the moment they receive their copy-money. It is equal to them, whether it is burned or published. But this is a different case. This gentleman expects to establish a character by his works."

"Well,

"Well, sir, and what profit do you expect?"

"Why, sir, every thing being considered, I cannot possibly let you have it for less than as much more as the author gets."

"How, sir! as much more as the author gets! is not that a very unreasonable demand?"

"Not at all, sir. Not in the least. But if you think it is, I am far from pressing you to give it. It is paying very dear, to be sure, for doing a man a piece of service; and I shall lose considerably also, by obliging you. Why, sir, there is such an expectation of this book, that the common number of a first edition is bespoke by the trade already. In short, I do not know what I may lose by parting with it. As to its being double what the author gets, that is no rule. What authors get is but a trifle, in comparison of the profits of a good book. The gentleman had but an hundred for that atheistical book you answered; but the bookseller made a good thousand of it. I was very unlucky in missing that book."

"I hope, sir, the answer made you amends. You paid no such price for that; and christian charity will not let me doubt its selling better than such a vile book. The age, bad as it is, cannot be so depraved as to prefer that book to the answer."

"Alack a day, my dear sir. The answer was quite another sort of thing. It never sold at all. No body had the least desire to read the answer."

"That is very odd! very odd indeed! Well, sir, I shall not dispute with you. Here is the money."

"Sir,

“ Sir, I thank you. But that is right ! Have you heard, sir, that the gentleman who wrote that other book, the first edition of which I bought up for you, along with the right of copy, from the publisher, and sold again for your account, to the pastry-cooks and chandlers shops as waste paper, has written another on one of the most interesting subjects that can be conceived, which he designs to publish himself ; as the trade, prejudiced by the supposed miscarriage of the former, have refused to give him his price for it.”

“ Obstinate, shameless wretch ! To write again, after suffering such a disgrace ! But is there no way to prevent his exposing himself in this manner ?”

“ No, sir, but by buying his books from him, which, as I said before, is a very dear way of doing him service ; especially as his pride makes him hold it at a very high price, to shew that he is not conscious of any demerit to have deserved the former disgrace.”

“ Opiniated coxcomb ! However, I will disappoint his vanity, at least for this time ; so even buy it for me as cheap as you can : and I hope you will not desire any profit in this affair.”

“ Only the allowed profit of the trade. Ten per cent, no more ; though you must be sensible, that as the failure of the former book proceeded not from any want of merit in it, I might reasonably expect to make much more by publishing this myself. There is another affair, that gives me a great deal of uneasiness. The author of that book in which you made the alterations called at my shop yesterday, and
abused

abused me in the grossest manner, charging the miscarriage of the book entirely on them, and threatening to take personal revenge of me, if I did not discover who had served him in so base a manner. I put him off for that time as well as I could, by declaring that I knew nothing of the matter, and would make the strictest enquiry about it; but what to say to him when he calls next I know not, as I imagine you would not have your name mentioned."

"Ignorant blockhead! The only merit in the book is in those alterations. No! my name must not be mentioned by any means; and your best way is to insist that you know nothing of the matter; and if he gives you any abuse, or offers to threaten you, put him into the hands of a lawyer, and he will soon make him quiet."

"Indeed, I believe that is the only method of getting rid of him. Sir, I wish you a good morning. I shall observe every thing you have said to me."

As soon as he was gone, the other began to reflect upon the transactions of the morning.

"Well, (said he, after musing for some moments) if I do pay something dear for those books, I remove two formidable rivals without any more trouble; and not that only, I can also take what I like out of them, and insert it in my own works; in doing which there is nothing unfair, as my buying them has made them absolutely my own property. As to answering those pamphlets, it is by no means worth my while. I will not immortalize such paltry scriblers, by taking any notice of them. Had *Virgil* treated *Bavius* and *Mecæus* with

proper contempt, their names had perished with themselves, and not been handed down to latest posterity, in his works."



CHAP. XXIV.

A rare example of modesty and respect, on a most trying occasion. A sure way of getting a good character; with some short reflections on literary ambition, and other more serious matters.

AS he was in the midst of this modest meditation, a servant came to let him know that a particular gentleman was come to wait upon him. "Shew him into the parlour (said he) I am engaged at present. When I am at leisure to see him, I will ring."

"He is come (continued he, as soon as he was alone) to insult me with the success of his insignificant, trifling book. But, I will mortify his pride; he shall see that I am not in the number of his foolish admirers."

Saying this, he fell into a silent contemplation of his own consequence, which he indulged so long, that his visitor skewed the height of complaisance, in waiting for him.

At length, however, the important bell rung, and he was admitted; when advancing with a profound reverence, "I have made bold to wait upon you, sir, (said he) to impart an affair that I hope will not be displeasing."

"Pray, sir, what may that be?" (answered the other, without descending from his dignity, by making any return to his salute.)

"Sir,

"Sir, (replied he, rubbing his hands, and looking at them, as if to admire their whiteness) I have a very advantageous offer made me, to write a second part to my last book; I should be glad to know in what particular manner you would have me mention you in it."
—"Mention me, Sir! I do not understand you."

"I mean, Sir, what you would have me say of your works, as I design to take notice of all the eminent writers of the times."

"Sir, I am obliged to you for your intention to pay me a compliment; but I had much rather you would let it alone. I have no ambition to be classed among your *eminent* writers, nor even mentioned in their works. I would gladly have excused it before."

"I hope you do not think it a discredit, sir, to be spoken of in a work that has ran through fifteen editions?"

"The number of editions is most certainly an excellent proof of the merit of a book; witness *Onania*, and the *Pilgrim's Progress*. Indeed, my friend, I must be candid with you. I had much rather that book had never been published, for your own sake. I know the breath of present approbation is apt to intoxicate; but if you will make *(an estimate of the manners and principles of the times)*, you will own that it implies a discredit to please such an *effeminate* debauched taste as reigns at present; and that no work which succeeds now can possibly meet the approbation of posterity. And who would be at the pains of writing, if it were not for the hope of making his name immortal?"

"All, sir, have not the same sublime way of thinking, nor the abilities to execute it,

which you are blessed with ; but that must not make us neglect to improve the talent given us. Present fame in such matters as these is present profit ; and that is the first object to be desired in my humble state. For the opinion of posterity, I must rely upon the manner in which you shall please to mention me in your works : but there is one thing in which I must have expressed myself imperfectly, as you seem to have mistaken my meaning. When I mentioned eminent writers, I was far from designing to rank you in a class with any other. There are degrees in eminence ; the first of which, I am sensible, you possess alone, and that in so distinguished a manner, that your writings only are sufficient to vindicate the age from the reproach of ignorance and barbarism. The eminence of other writers is only in comparison to the common herd of mankind, and raises them not to a level with you, "there sitting where they dare not soar."

"Well, sir, if you think my name will be of service to your book, I am satisfied that you should insert it ; and, to save you, trouble will write that part myself, as I did on the former occasion. But, pray sir, do you not think it necessary to answer the objections made to your last book before you write another on the same subject?"

"No, sir, not in the least ; I intend to follow your example, and take no notice of them."

"But—sir—your case and mine are quite different. My works are designed for future ages, and therefore cannot be affected by such feeble attacks. But yours, which are but the blossoms of a day, are liable to be blasted by
by

every breath of wind. The deep-rooted oak feels not the breeze that overturns the gawdy tulip."

"Pardon me, sir, I presume not to make any comparison. I am justly sensible of the difference. However, as I do not find that they have been able to do me any prejudice, I shall take no trouble about them. You will please to let me have your account of your own works as soon as you can, as I shall send the book to press directly. Sir, your most humble servant."

There was something so despicably mean and disingenuous in these last scenes, that I was really glad when they were ended.

"You see (said my guide smiling) how low ambition can stoop. Of all the passions which actuate the human heart, the strongest and most universal is the love of fame, next to those of self-preservation and continuing the species; both of which even it often surmounts.

"To this in some, however mistaken sense, may every pursuit of man be traced. The felon who fired the temple had the same desire of an immortal name with him whose better genius prompted him to build it; and most of the atrocious crimes which disgrace the history of mankind, may in some measure be deduced from the same principle.

"But of all the instances of the tyranny of this passion, the most violent and at the same time the most absurd in its effects, is literary ambition.

"The obvious motive of a person's undertaking the laborious task of writing to the publick, is a benevolent desire to promote their happiness, either by informing the understand-

ing, or alleviating the cares and anxiety of life by rational entertainment.—I mention not those whom necessity drives to this method of supplying their wants.

“But there are very few who write from this motive alone; and even of those who may have originally set out with it, scarce one perseveres without yielding to biases of a nature directly contrary, and sacrificing the most sacred principles of strict and moral virtue to a vain lust of popular admiration, and a jealous envy of his competitors; the virulence of which not only poisons the enjoyment of that fame which he has already acquired, but also precipitates him into schemes for engrossing more, which disappoint his design, and deprive him of what he really deserves.”

“Of the justice of these observations (said I) this person is a sufficient proof; but there is one thing the reason of which I cannot comprehend, and that is the servile complaisance with which the other author bore his haughtiness, and the fulsome adulation he paid him in return of his insults and contempt.”

“You may remember (answered he) I told you he was advanced to an honourable establishment in his profession. In virtue of that establishment he has many opportunities of preferring others to very lucrative employments under him. This is the secret motive of that behaviour in them both, which gave you such just offence.

“Of all the professions of men, there is not one whose principles are so pure from every reproach of this kind as this; yet such is the force of human perversion, that there is none in which

which those vices of servility and pride are so universally practised; and that with so little disguise, that, as if the very institution was inverted, the former is become the general means of rising in it, while the latter is looked upon as the first prerogative of power, and borne with patience, from an hope of exerting it on that exaltation which all aspire to; for, however strange it may sound in speculation, experience invariably shews that meanness and pride spring from the same base principle, and always succeed each other on a change of circumstances."



CHAP. XXV.

The pleasures of being a great man. Mysteries in politics. One drawn-battle leaves room for another. Children and fools fall out at play.

"TURN your eye now (continued my guide) to yonder little village, and behold a shadow of human grandeur, that may enable you to form a just estimate of the substance. That person whom you see embarrassed with the ensigns of state, and sinking under the weight of his imaginary importance, was one of the principal servants in his master's house.

"So near a view of power fired him with an ambition to exert it himself, though in the most limited delegation. Accordingly, he prevailed with his master to make him steward of that manor where he now is; some particular circumstances in the tenure of which oblige him to indulge the tenants with all the pageantry of

power, all the formalities of liberty, though without any of the real advantages of either.

“Nor is the power entrusted to their temporary governors more solid. The servant of the superior servants of his master, he goes with his hands tied up; and acts a part prescribed for him, in which the least departure from his orders is immediately over-ruled, and his presumption checked with a severe reprimand.

“Such a mockery of command is the most painful aggravation of servitude. It is an insult that makes even wretchedness more wretched. Yet so strong is the vanity of the human heart, that the inestimable advantages of independence are daily sacrificed to this worthless, empty shew.

“How this mimic state is supported by those monarchs of a day, and what pleasure it affords to balance the pain of such a tantalizing situation, you will soon see. But that you may more distinctly understand the scene, which is just ready to open, it is necessary to give you a general sketch of the principal things upon which it turns.

“I observed to you, that there are some particular circumstances in the tenure of this manor. The chief of these, and that on which all the rest depend is, that *“though*
“subordinate to, and dependent on the principal
“manor, in which the lord resides, it is still a di-
“stinct manor in itself, with a right to hold
“courts, and make laws, for its own government;
“but that these laws are not to be of force, till
“they are approved of by the courts of the prin-
“cipal

"cipal manor, which courts have also a right to make laws to bind this."

"The perplexity and contradictions in this complicated affair are too evident to require being pointed out; yet, far from striving to remove them, in the proper management of this very perplexity consists the whole mystery of the politicks of this manor.

"For the stewards, and those whom they can attach to their party by lucrative employments, always make a pretext of the articles of *subordination and dependence*, to oppose every attempt made in the court-leet by the apparent friends of the manor, to promote its separate interest; as, on the other hand, those friends eagerly catch at and insist on the opposite ones, of its being a *distinct manor, and having a right of making its own laws*, to embarrass the ordinary course of the government, and embroil the stewards with the people, by proposing laws in their consequences destructive of that dependence; 'till wearied out by finding that their labour is in vain, or (as is much oftener the case) obtaining some place or pension, the real objects which they had in view, they at length drop their opposition, just in the critical moment when it might have been expected to produce some important consequences.

"Thus all things remain in their former state of uncertainty and confusion; each party thinking they have done enough in baffling the attempts of the other, and not absolutely giving up the cause of contention, but leaving the field open for future disputants, to try their fortunes on a more favourable occasion."

“It must appear strange to you, that the steward should be ordered to obstruct the interest of a manor belonging to his lord. The whole system of human politicks is incomprehensible. The reason for this conduct is this: The situation of that manor is so convenient for commerce, and the other natural advantages of it so many, that they apprehend if it was not kept under by every discouragement and restriction possibly reconcilable with the faintest shadow of liberty, it would soon rival, if not run away with the trade of the principal manor, in which its wealth almost wholly consists; and consequently, as wealth is the foundation of power, in time arise above its subordination, and perhaps shake off its dependence.”

“One thing, by the way, I must observe to you, which makes this contest still more extraordinary; this is, that it subsists entirely between the manors themselves, the inhabitants being all connected by every tie of nature, those of this manor, or their ancestors, having all removed from the principal one thither.

“Such discouragements and restrictions are not submitted to without great reluctance by the inhabitants, who cannot see themselves cut off from making the proper advantages of the blessings of nature, and languishing in unnecessary poverty without repining, and indignation at a treatment which appears to them equally ingrateful and unjust; as they have always preserved their filial duty to their mother-country untainted, and on all occasions displayed the steadiest attachment to its general interest, and to the family of the present lord.”

“These

" These natural sentiments of the people are on every occasion inflamed to a degree of madness, by a set of men for that time called *patriots*, (I have told you the import of this word as it is used at present) who, by pathetick harangues on so favourite a subject and promises of redressing those grievances, gain their confidence so far as to be put at the head of a plausible opposition to the measures of the steward, which they persist in 'till their zeal is cured by a *proper* application, and they obtain the objects which they had all along in view.

" Thus, you see, the whole secret of these disputes consists in pelting each other with a set of words which have no determinate meaning, and are therefore used in different senses by the opposite parties, as occasion requires; and that the controversy may not be improper, be compared to a *game of draughts*, where a number of men are sacrificed to raise one to power; and when the game is ended all are promiscuously thrown by, and the antagonists part as good friends as ever.

" But there is nothing in these disputes more unaccountable to inexperienced reason, than the manner in which they are carried on. As the event of the game is always foreseen, it should be imagined that they might play their cards coolly, and without wrangling about tricks which can make no alteration in the success. But the contrary is always the case; and no sooner are they engaged, than, forgetting that they are only *playing booty* on both sides, they fall together by the ears with the most virulent animosity; and dropping the matter originally in dispute, break out into the

grossest outrages of personal reflection and abuse, as if the sole point to be gained was only who should make their antagonists appear in the blackest light.

“Horrid as this more than brutal ferocity appears, it arises from that source of all evils, interested design. The worthy *patriots* are sensible that every stroke they give the supposed oppressors, affords the malignant pleasure of revenge to those who think themselves oppressed; with whom it also confirms their interest, by lessening their fears of a reconciliation, which they know by sad experience is always made at their expence; as the opposite party retort the abuse thrown upon them with equal eagerness, to obviate the design of the others, and gratify a natural desire of revenge, and all without the least regard to truth or justice.

“Thus are the most sacred bands of society broken, to serve a detestable purpose; and wounds given often to the purest characters impossible ever to be healed.

“You now see what a desirable object this shadow of power is. Indeed the disagreeable circumstances which attend it are so many, and so soon dissipate the intoxication of vanity, that very few would groan under them for the appointed time, if their resolution was not supported by a prospect of gain, of which, though none ever stood in less need, not one ever was more greedy than this person before us, whose own private conduct has also aggravated all the unavoidable inconveniences of his situation, and made it many times more disagreeable than it need to be.

“ For as the nature of his office necessarily embroiled him with the greater part of the tenants, so the haughtiness of his behaviour has given such offence even to those whose interest it is to be upon good terms with him, that most of them have dropt all friendly intercourse. Nay, some have gone still farther, and, in the warmth of their resentment, threatened to call him to a severe account for some slights, they apprehend he has offered to their privileges, of the honour of which they are jealous to a degree of madness, as soon as he shall be divested of his assumed character, and descend into his own : a threat equally disagreeable to the delicacy of his honour and his constitution.”



C H A P. XXVI.

A good way to make up for a bad market. Mysteries of state-preferment. Servants must not advise their masters. The comfortable effects of modern honour. An heavy cloud gathering.

AS soon as my guide had concluded this account, I turned my eyes to the person who had given occasion to it. He was sitting in a sumptuous apartment, and by the anxiety in his looks seemed to be waiting for some body on business of importance.

I had not observed him long when the one he expected entered, and advancing to him with an air of familiarity, which seemed to agree

agree but badly with the difference in their appearances, "Well, sir, (said he) I have seen those people, but do not find that any of them care to deal with us, though I offered them lumping penny-worths; for I never liked to stand higgling for a trifle one way or the other."

"What can be the meaning of this? (answered the steward) I thought those things were always ready money; none of my predecessors ever missed selling them."

"Very true, sir; (replied the other) but they had better times; better times to make their markets in. At present every one is so taken up with the disputes in the court-leet, that they can mind nothing else. I wish all those *patriots*, and all the patriots that ever were, or ever will be, were at the devil. They do nothing but make disturbances wherever they are. The brokers, who used to find out customers for your predecessors, imagine that those fellows will carry every thing before them this time; and therefore do not care to meddle with the affair, for fear of being brought into a scrape with such a spiteful crew; and even the mob is so strongly seized with this same spirit of *patriotism*, that the very toll-gatherers have refused to buy a clerk-ship of the market; nor has one of the militia men bid a single penny for that vacant halbert; so that if it were not for what we got by the sale of those vicarages, we should have made a damned bad hand of it indeed."

"This is bad luck; (returned the steward, shrugging up his shoulders) damned bad luck; but we must try to bring it up some other way.

My

My wife was speaking to me this morning about a scheme she has got in her head, of inviting all her female acquaintances to make a party at *Leo* every Sunday evening, when she does not fear stripping them of every penny in their pockets, by her dexterity at packing the cards, and slipping *Pam*. Now, I think it would be no bad addition to her scheme for me to get the men together at the same time at dice, when your old trick of cogging might be of rare use; especially as I should be ready to witness for you upon all occasions, and even bear you through by my authority, should you be so unlucky as to be caught. Eh! what do you think of this?"

"Why, faith, (said the other) very well. It may do very well. As to my being caught, let me take care of that. I have not practised so long among the expertest hands in the county-town, to be caught now by a parcel of country-bumpkins. Or, even if any of them should suspect me, I know how to bring myself off. It is but pretending to be affronted, stripping directly, challenging him to fight, and before he can be on his guard, hitting him a plump in the bread-basket, that shall make him throw up his accounts; and I'll engage he will have but very little stomach to accuse me after. Many a scrape of the kind have I bukked through in this manner, where a saint-hearted fellow would have confessed the fact, and been dipped in an horse-pond. No! No! Let me deal with them. Nay, for that matter, you know I can bring others off too, besides myself. You would not have escaped with a little dry *drubbing* that day,

if I had not played a good stick in your defence. Never fear me; I can fight."

"Well, (interrupted the steward, who did not seem much pleased with the latter part of his speech) but must we let those fellows, those *patriots*, go on thus, without opposition? Is there nothing to be done to stop them?"

"Why, aye! (said the other) that is just what I was going to mention. I think the best way is for me to go down directly to the court-leet, which is now sitting, and try what a little bullying will do, since fair words have failed. I have known a kick and a cuff prevail more than an hundred fine speeches before now. If they should run restive, I am not afraid to take a bout with the best man among them. I have not forgot my old knack at a cross-buttock yet; that I have not.—But, that's right! What do you design to do about that place of keeper of the court-rolls? I have a thought just come into my head, that may perhaps be better than giving it to any of those fellows. What do you think of giving it to me, and I will return you half the profits; or, if I can sell it, half the purchase-money?"

"Give it to you! (answered the steward) How can that be? You are no lawyer; and you know that place has always been in the hands of one of that profession. The last was reckoned the ablest attorney in the whole country."

"If the last was an able attorney, (replied the other) his predecessor knew no more of the matter than myself; so that we can easily get over that objection."

"But

"But then, your offer is quite too low; (added the steward) half the profit, or half the purchase-money! No! no! That will never do. But if you have a mind to take it at one fourth of the profit, or purchase, you shall even have it; and you should consider that this is just so much for nothing; all clear gains."

"With all my heart, (said the other) be that as you please. I mentioned it solely for your advantage, as you are not likely to make any thing of it, as matters go. I had no view to myself at all in proposing it.—Well; now if you have nothing else to say to me, I will go and see what I can do at the court-leet."

"Nothing (answered the steward) but to wish you success: and, do you hear! let me see you as soon as you return. I shall be impatient to know what passes."

As soon as this necessary person was gone, the steward began to prepare for the reception of a visitor, who was to be treated with a little more ceremony.

This was one of the principal gentlemen in the manor, in whom age had cooled every passion but that of attachment to his interest, in which he was now so closely connected with the steward for the time, though he had long been one of their warmest opposers, that, without the least attention to their persons or private characters he assisted to carry on the business of his office with all his power.

The pains which the steward took upon this important occasion were sufficient to have made laughter burst his sides. He placed himself before a large glass, where he adjusted his dress, moulded his visage into due dignity, and practised

tified the nod of state with a proper mixture of condescension and pride.

Just as he had finished confining over his lesson, the gentleman entered, and paying his compliments to him in a polite and respectful manner, which the other returned with more than Spanish gravity and pride, "I am come, sir, (said he) to talk to you about those people who have given you so much trouble ever since you have been in your present office. I am afraid you have not taken the proper method of treating them. I am well acquainted with their tempers, and know what way they are to be managed. It is better to comply a little with a set of wrong-headed men, than be continually involved in broils, which at best can bring nothing but vexation."

"Comply with them, sir! (answered the steward, putting on an air of importance) No, sir; that I shall not. I know the dignity of my station, and shall never debase it by making compliances with a beggarly mob."

"Sir! sir! (replied the other) this way of speaking may do you much harm. In this same beggarly mob are many persons upon a level with any man in his private capacity, and who are so far from begging from others, that all they desire is to keep their own. I have seen too much of these disputes, and know by experience that nothing is to be done with these people but by fair means. You may buy, but can never bully them into any thing. In a word, sir, you are sent to do your lord's business; which you must be content to do in the best manner you can."

"I believe, sir (returned the steward, swelling his nose like an angry turkey-cock) you forget whom you speak to, or you would not presume to talk in such a manner. The business must be done by those who are hired to do it, who must work for their wages as they are ordered, whether they like it or not. Now, sir, as you are one of those, I tell you that I want your obedience and not your advice; and that if any thing miscarries, I shall impute the fault to you, and *strike you off the list*. I suppose you have a private understanding with those fellows, that makes you so sanguine in their behalf; but you must remember that you are not at the head of your mob now; and therefore must not think to parly with your masters, and make conditions as you did then. *The moment you capitulated you lost your consequence*; and now are no more than any common hireling."

It is impossible to describe the condition into which this speech threw the person to whom it was addressed. Conscious of the justice of what he said, the base and despicable state to which he was fallen struck him with the severest remorse and anguish of soul. He stood for some moments in a conflict of passions, which deprived him of the power of making an answer; till impatience at the imputation of guilt, however just, by the false pride of man, called *honour*, rising superior to all the rest, and taking possession of his whole soul, he resolved to do himself immediate *justice*, for so gross an affront.



C H A P. XXVII.

A strange apparition disperses the cloud. A new method of making a good steward. The perilous adventures of the knight of the halter, with other savoury matters.

JUST as he was going to execute this resolution, open flew the door, and in rushed a person with an halter about his neck, and every sign of the most violent fear in his whole appearance. His lengthened visage was as pale as death. His eyes rolled wildly round the room, and his knees knocked together, as he ran and threw himself at the steward's feet, unable to speak a word.

The steward, whose delicate nerves were instantly susceptible of the least affright, started back in horror from so terrible an object; and would certainly have fallen to the ground, had not the gentleman who was with him, forgetting his resentment, or thinking him beneath it, ran to his support; at whose repeated desire he ventured to lift up his eyes, when he made a shift to recognize his valiant friend, who had left him not long before to go and bully the court-leet.

While he was gazing in astonishment at so strange a sight, the terrified trembling wretch, though still under the illusion of his fears, recovered strength enough to cry out, "O save me! save me! They are coming! they are coming."

"Such

Such an exclamation awoke the steward from his stupefaction. He took the alarm, and throwing his haggard eyes around the room, returned at the same instant, in a feeble faltering voice, "Wh— wh— who are coming?"

There was something so extraordinary in this scene, that the other gentleman, who was ready to burst with laughter at the droll figure which the steward and his friend cut, staring and stammering at each other, could not tell what to make of it.

When he had enjoyed the sight for some time, he spoke to *the Knight of the Halber*, who was still upon his knees with his hands joined together, and lifted up in a suppliant posture, and telling him his danger was over, be it what it would, he stooped to take off that apparent cause of his fear.

But no sooner did he touch it, than the other, whose imagination was still full of the scene he had just gone through, mistaking him for one of his pursuers, fell at length upon the floor, for he was unable to rise, and roared out with all his might, "O spare me! murder! mercy! spare me! spare me! I never will attempt the like again! never say or do any thing offensive to the people, or prejudicial to the interest of this manor, while I live! O spare me! spare me!"—

This exclamation, while it seemed to direct the gentleman's conjectures to the cause of the wretch's fright, made him still more earnestly curious to learn the particulars of it. For this purpose he raised him from the ground, and by many soothing and encouraging expressions, at length restored him to his senses.

As

As soon as he had recovered himself so as to be able to speak, "O, sir, (said he to the steward, who had stood all this while staring at him without power to utter a word) what have I undergone since I saw you? never will I enter that court-leet again, while I live. I hope the doors of this house are shut, and that there is no danger of their pursuing me, even here."

"Who should pursue you, sir? (answered the gentleman, for the steward had not yet opened his mouth, and this speech was far from restoring his spirits) or what have you undergone to put you in such a fright? you see you are safe here: no one dares to enter this place in pursuit of you. Compose yourself then, dear sir, and tell us what has happened to you."

The knight of the halter at this went to the door, and clapping his ear to the key-hole, to listen whether there was any noise, bolted it fast, and then returned to the steward, who had by this time recovered himself so far, as to make a shift to repeat the desire of the other gentleman, that he should tell what had happened.

"As soon as I left you, sir (said he, throwing his eye every moment towards the door) I went directly to the court-leet, where I took the first opportunity to do as I had said; for one of the jury-men happening just then to drop some expressions of dislike at your manner of doing business, I took him up short; and said, that he deserved to be well drubbed for his insolence, in presuming to find fault with his master; and that if they did not do their duty they should be made to do it; or their courts should be taken away from them; and their
manor

manor governed by the laws of the principal manor, without all this fuss and trouble.

“ At these words the whole court took fire, every one calling out to me at the same instant for satisfaction. But I was prepared for this, and therefore, to go through with my scheme, I roared out as loud as they, that I was ready to fight the best man among them, in support of what I had said, and for a guinea by, if they pleased, and instantly began to strip.

“ But they soon let me know that this was not the way of fighting they chose; for, like a parcel of blood-thirsty villains, they instantly clapped their hands to their swords, saying, they scorned that vulgar manner, and expected the satisfaction due to a gentleman, which I might take my choice of sword or pistol, to give, as I liked.

“ But I begged their excuse there. I liked neither: for, though I could give and take as hard knocks as the best of them, I knew nothing of their damned swords and pistols; I had never been used to them; and did not chuse to run the hazard of losing my life to learn now. I therefore thought it best to try if I could not satisfy them some other way; and accordingly as soon as I could be heard, begged their pardon if I had said any thing to give them offence, and promised to take better care for the future.

“ The reason of this sudden change in my manner of speaking was too evident. They instantly turned from me with a contempt worse than any thing but their anger; and I began to hope that I should come off with a
 spit

spit in the face, or a kick on the breech at worst.

“ But unfortunately the affair had taken wind, and just as I was going to steal away, it broke the mob in the most violent fury ; and while some of them laid hold of me, the rest behaved in the most outrageous manner, railing at you and all your friends, and breaking open every room in the house in search of you.

“ As they were at this work, some of them happening to find your steward's gown and cap, one unlucky dog ran out, and in an instant returning with the great *wooden-man* that you have seen standing as a sign at the ale-house door in the next street, they directly clapped your gown and cap upon it, and placing it in your chair at the upper end of the hall, called it by your name and said, it was just as good a steward as your honour.

“ There was something so droll and ridiculous in the figure you cut (I mean the wooden-man in your gown and cap) that provoked and terrified as I was, I could scarce refrain from laughing along with the rest ; especially when one of them stooping behind the chair, made a speech for you, that seemed to come from the wooden-man, and took off your voice and manner to the life.

“ But this was all a joke to what followed. For no sooner were they tired with ridiculing and abusing you in this manner, than turning all their rage upon me, they threw that halter about my neck, and led me away to hang me on that great high sign-post before your door, where some of them had even the assurance to talk of hanging

hanging you also, if ever they should lay hands upon you."

"But, luckily, just as we came to the fatal post, one of the jurymen, more moderate than the rest, and a great favourite of the mob, happened to meet us, and, laying before them the consequence of such an action, by much ado procured me an opportunity to make my escape in hither; which I did in the manner you saw, without even stopping to take off the halter from about my neck, as I imagined they were all at my heels. And I heartily wish, that we were well out of this damn'd riotous place; for I am very much afraid that now the mob is risen, they will break into the house, and hang us all up."

It is impossible to describe the different expressions of fear which successively appeared in the steward's face, while the other was telling this story: just at the terrible conclusion of which, a cat happening to dart across the room after a mouse, his apprehensions immediately took the alarm, and imagining the mob was breaking in, he gave a loud shriek, and fell down in a swoon.

The gentleman instantly ran to his assistance; but the moment he stooped over him, he received such a favour from the effects of the poor man's fright, that he started back, and clapping his handkerchief to his nose, ran to the other side of the room.

The knight of the halter, who was now pretty well recovered, perceived what had happened, and calling the servants, gave their master into their care.



C H A P. XXVIII.

An appearance of danger the most convincing argument. A strange character of a strange sort of people. The best foundation for popularity. The mystery of patriotism, with some low prejudices of education.

THE first thing the steward did, as soon as he came a little to himself, and had got over some of the various effects of his fright, was, to send for the gentleman, and tell him, that his confidence in his friendship was so great, he was resolved to be guided entirely by his advice for the future; and accordingly he gave him power to make what terms he thought proper, with those whom he had held in such contempt but a few hours before.

The gentleman had now an opportunity of returning the haughtiness with which the steward had treated him in the morning; but thinking that such a manifold humiliation as he had undergone sunk him beneath his resentment, he scorned to take any farther advantage of it, than just to give him some advice, how to carry on the business of his office with less disgrace to himself, and less trouble to those concerned with him, than he had hitherto done.

Accordingly, "How, sir, (said he) can you condescend to take advice from me?—and make compliances with a beggarly mob?"

"Dear Sir, (interrupted the steward, alarmed at his mentioning things which tended only to make matters worse) do not think of any thing that is past! I am sorry, very sorry!—and beg your pardon most sincerely."

"You desire me, sir, (replied the gentleman, without deigning to take any notice of his apology) to bring about a reconciliation between you and those gentlemen, on whatever terms I think proper. Before any terms are offered, it will be necessary to alter some things at which they have taken just offence. Till this is done, it is in vain to attempt a reconciliation; or even should a kind of one be patched up for the present, it is impossible it should be sincere, or lasting; and then, the second disagreement will be worse than the first."

"Now, sir, if you are willing that I should point out these things with freedom and candour, and will promise to alter them, in case I shew just reason for it, I shall most readily undertake to restore harmony between you and them yet; and am not in any doubt, but I shall be able to accomplish it."

"My dear friend, (returned the steward, overjoyed at these words) I shall hear any thing you say with the greatest pleasure, and will punctually follow your advice in every particular."

"I must inform you then, sir, (said the gentleman) that you set out upon a wrong principle in your behaviour to the tenants of
H 2 this

this manor, on your first coming among them; and this laid the foundation of all the uneasinesses which have arisen between you since.

“The characteristics of these people are *pride, hospitality, and courage*; all which a natural impetuosity of temper makes them apt to carry into extremities.”

“As most of them are descended from, or allied to the best families in the whole country, and as they enjoy, in appearance at least, the same honours and privileges here as the tenants of the principal manor do, though they are sensible that they want the essential part of them, which is power, they look upon themselves as on a level with any of their lord’s tenants, and are ready to take fire at the least slight which they apprehend to be offered, either to themselves or their darling privileges.

“As to their hospitality, it is acknowledged in terms of the highest respect, by all who have ever happened to come among them; and though they have not equal fortunes with you of the principal manor, the cheapness of their country, or their wanting opportunity to gratify many of the most expensive artificial wants, which dissipate the wealth of the others, enables them to indulge the generosity of their tempers in a manner which very few other people have any notion of; and for their courage, it is too well known all over the country, to require any proof.

“Do not think, sir, that I am labouring an unmerited panegyrick on people, because we happen to be of the same country. I am above such a vain, weak prejudice, and speak my opinion

opinion as dispassionately as I should on any point of meer speculation.

“ Far from being inclined to flatter them, I am sensible that these qualities are too often carried, as I have said before, into an extremum, which makes them cease to be virtues. Their pride hurries them into violations of the most amiable of the social virtues ; their hospitality swells into profusion, and ends in intemperance ; and their courage, by being made subservient to mistaken notions of honour, on every trifling occasion degenerates into a savage fierceness that is a disgrace to humanity.

“ Now, sir, instead of paying attention to these foibles, (to call them no better) and attaching them to you by a proper address, as a moment's cool reflection would have suggested, by an unlucky mistake you either overlooked them quite, or thought them not worth shewing any regard.

“ Thus you treated themselves with haughtiness, and shewed an open contempt for their idolized privileges. You expressed a disapprobation of the hospitality with which they entertained you, and ran into the opposite extremum yourself to a shameful degree ; and you affected to inveigh against the vicious excess of courage, with an indiscriminate asperity that seemed to betray a general want of it.

“ Consider a moment, and you will confess that the consequences of this conduct could not avoid being disagreeable. They returned your haughtiness with hatred. Your avowed contempt of their privileges alarmed their apprehensions of an invasion of them, and poisoned the weapons they prepared for their de-

sence; and the least suspicion of want of spirit sinks a man into the lowest degree of contempt.

“ I am sensible, sir, that it must be very disagreeable to you, to hear these things. Be assured it is not less so to me to repeat them; but before a wound can be healed, it must be probed to the bottom. A false tenderness only prevents the cure.

“ What I would advise therefore is, that you should immediately treat the gentlemen of the manor with politeness and respect, and as your equals, except in the office which you have the honour to fill:—that you should partake of their hospitality with an appearance of satisfaction, and return it with grace and magnificence;—and that you should take all opportunities of rewarding true courage, to shew that your dislike is only to the vicious extream.

“ If you observe these few short hints, I will engage that you recover the respect of the tenants; and then every thing you desire follows. I speak from experience. I have known great things done, solely by this conduct. This was the secret that won one of your predecessors the hearts of the whole mob, and kept them so quiet all the time of the riots in the next manor, by which he gained such honour: and no one who has observed this rule has ever failed to do his business without trouble; as it obviates every attempt to make him personally disliked, the first step to embarrassing his measures.

“ Nor is there any difficulty to discourage the attempt. Affability amply rewards itself in the pleasures

pleasures of friendly intercourse, and a proper politeness is the most certain way of preserving respect.

“As for hospitality, it in some measure includes every social virtue, and yields such happiness in the exertion, as often over-balances prudence, and leads into profusion.

“It is inconceivable what extraordinary things have been and may be done, by this virtue only. It gains the most solid and extensive influence. No resolution is proof against the pleasures of a genial hour. Among these people in particular, the very excess of hospitality is of more weight than every other virtue, and even compensates for the want of all the rest. *Give them but drink enough, and do with them what you please.* They can see no fault in the man who makes them drunk; they will see no virtue in him who will not.

“It was this, and this only, that enabled me to maintain such an absolute power over them, as I did for many years. My house was always open, and my table flowed with wine; but, when I had any point to carry, I broke through all bounds. I pressed them to drink; I set them an example myself; and in the height of their spirits never was refused any thing I asked, however contrary to the dictates of reason, or interest.

“In these unguarded moments, the charms of hospitality are irresistible; nor will pride permit them to revoke in a cooler hour what they have then promised. The *harangues of orators*, the *promises of patriots*, make no impression, unless the head is warmed with wine, to receive them with proper force.

“As for those *patriots*, there is one unerring way of dealing with them. Treat them with complaisance, and an appearance of regard, and you take off half their consequence. The mob will immediately imagine, that there is a secret understanding between you and them, and desert them with indignation; by which they will be obliged to submit to your own terms, without even the trouble of a formal capitulation.

“For, to capitulate they always intend, be their professions never so sanguine and high, as soon as they have satisfied their passion for popularity, and their price is offered; being convinced that their opposition in reality signifies nothing when combated thus with address; and that their consequence consists merely in the want of judgment in their opponents, though they are permitted to play out their farce, to keep up an illusion so pleasing to the people, and save appearances.

“These are the principal things necessary, indeed indispensibly necessary, to carry you through your office with ease and reputation; though there are also some others which will be found very conducive to that desirable end, and which I shall therefore take the liberty just to touch upon slightly.

“This manor, though it has made large advances of late, is yet a century behind the principal one, in the refinements of luxury and liberties of pleasure. Many things therefore, which are constantly practised there, cannot be done among us, without hazard of giving offence to prejudiced weak minds.

“One

“ One instance will be sufficient to prove this, and serve for a rule to judge by in other cases.

“ The belief of a revealed religion is yet pretty general here, and the forms of it therefore necessary to be observed with an appearance of respect, as the vulgar and ignorant are apt to entertain a disadvantageous opinion of persons who slight them.

“ For this reason the polite custom of *playing at cards, on the days appointed for religious duties*, which prevails so universally among people of fashion with you, is looked upon here with a kind of horror, as a manifest violation of laws human and divine. I therefore think the public practice thereof improper, in your house especially, to which all are apt to raise their eyes for example; not that I am insensible of the convenience of such an agreeable way of passing a tedious evening, which superstition has devoted to idleness.

“ But, beside this reason, there is another also, which makes *gaming*, not only on these days, but at any time, highly improper in your family. It is a maxim with gamblers always to deny their winnings, always to magnify their loss. Now, when it is known that there is deep gaming carried on at your house, when all who go there are heard to complain of their losses, and none to own their gains, the conclusion formed by the generality of the world will be very unfavourable. They will imagine that you do not play fair; or, at least, that your expertness gives you an advantage, which it is ungenerous to take: and there is no character which these low-bred people hold in greater de-

testation than that of a *gambler*, or *cheat at play*, though in never so genteel life or high station; with which their prejudice is so strong, that they cannot associate any one virtue, or good quality.

“ I shall not trouble you with any farther particulars. I have now given you my advice, with freedom and sincerity; and, if you approve of it, shall be proud of assisting you to put it in practice.”

“ Sir, (answered the steward, who was now sufficiently humbled to hear any thing, and had stood all this time, like a school-boy that had been caught robbing an orchard, while his master reads him a lecture on the eighth commandment, without any other thought but getting out of his present scrape at any rate) I am much obliged to you for your friendship; and shall observe every thing that you have said with the greatest care. But, in the meantime, if you think it proper, I should be very glad that you would take some method of letting those people know my resolution, and settling matters with them upon some amicable footing; for I cannot bear to live any longer in this horrid way. As I said before, I submit the terms intirely to you, and shall confirm whatever you please to do.

“ Such an unlimited commission flattered the gentleman's vanity, as it proved his consequence with both sides. Accordingly he undertook it with pleasure, and acquitted himself with such address, that in a short time all parties appeared satisfied, and the steward had a prospect of a little peace to enjoy his grandeur, after so much trouble and affright.”



C H A P. XXIX.

A famous war-scene. The modern art of generalship. A new method of reformation, with the lamentable history of a penitential procession.

“ He that’s convinc’d against his will

“ Is of his own opinion still.”—

THOUGH the steward, to extricate himself from the difficulties in which he was entangled, had assented to every thing the gentleman proposed, there was something so contrary to his natural disposition in the scheme of life laid down for him, that he very soon grew weary of it, and performed his part with such a bad grace, as in a great measure destroyed the merit even of what he did.

While he was plodding on thus, through thick and thin, an affair happened that shewed his character in a new light.

A gang of cutlawed smugglers had landed in a remote part of the manor that lay upon the sea-side, to look for some provisions and other necessaries, of which they were in great want.

The inhabitants not caring to have any dealings with them, hunger forced them to pillage two or three cottages near the place of their poultry; and to send a threatening message to the next village, that if they were not immediately supplied with some bread and cheese and a barrel of beer, they would go and plunder that also.

Such a piece of insolence provoked the young fellows of the village so highly, that they brandished their cudgels, and were for marching off directly to attack them. But there happening to live two or three warm pedlars in the place, who did not chuse to run the hazard of having their packs rumaged by such customers, in case the young fellows should be over-matched, they prevailed upon the parish-officers to comply with the demand; and in the mean time sent an account of the affair to the steward, that he might take proper methods for driving those fellows away.

Bad news encreases faster in its progress than a snow-ball. The account, by the time it reached the steward, was exaggerated in the most formidable manner. The smugglers, who were only a few shabby half-starved wretches, were multiplied into an army, provided with every military appointment; and the courage and conduct of their captain raised to an equality with the greatest generals of the age.

Such a representation was far from being agreeable to the steward. He immediately summoned all the principal gentlemen of the manor, to consult what was proper to be done in such an emergency; and after hearing all their opinions; that the affair was of so little consequence, it would be sufficient to send the petty constable, with his attendants, he gallantly declared his resolution to raise the *Peſſe* of the manor; and march against them himself.

“Gentlemen (said he, setting the button of his hat before, and looking fiercely) I know more of this matter than you imagine, perhaps. I have been a serjeant of militia for some years,
and

and know how to give the word of command. *Present your firelock!—To the right about!—Shoulder your musket!—Fire!—Aye! aye! Let me alone, I know what to do, I will teach them what it is to have a soldier to deal with."*

Accordingly he gave orders to have the *Pesce* raised directly; and as he knew that fighting was only one part of the duty of a commander, he resolved to shew the extent of his abilities, by making proper preparations for his important expedition.

The bustle and hurry on such an occasion kept up his spirits for that day pretty well; but upon consulting his pillow, he found that of all the occupations of ambition, war was least agreeable to his constitution. He considered, that be the enemy never so few, a single shot would do his business; that his own pistol might burst, or his men fire awkwardly, or in short a thousand accidents happen which he had no desire to be in the way of.

Nor was his resolution raised any higher by the advices he received the next morning; and which were continually coming in one upon the heels of another, each still more terrible than the last.

In this distress he bethought himself, that as it was impossible for him to draw back now, without exposing himself to contempt for ever, his only resource was to waste time in making preparations, till the smugglers, either terrified at the report, or content with their booty, should think proper to go off.

Accordingly he set all hands to work to put the old guns, pistols, swords, and bayonets, that were stuck up as trophies in the manor-

hall, in order; and particularly to scour a *rusty suit of armour* that had hung there for ages, which he designed to wear himself, for fear of accidents, considering prudently that *the safety of an army often depends upon that of their leader.*

While all this was doing no body seemed so busy as he, running here and there, urging the workmen to make haste, and giving them new orders every moment, which countermanded the last.

But all these great preparations might have been spared; for the smugglers had been so roughly handled by some of the country-fellows, whom they had attempted to rob of their butter and eggs; and who, if they had any arms, would have let but few of them go home to tell the story, that seeing the rest of the neighbourhood preparing to attack them, they prudently took to their boat, and made off while they could.

For the people not having military skill enough to see the necessity for such great preparations, against a few poor despicable wretches, had resolved not to wait for the steward's arrival, but to drive them away themselves.

It is easy to conceive his joy at this account, the merit of which he modestly took intirely to himself, writing the lord of the manor word, that *frighted at the fame of his preparations, they had ran away, without daring to await his approach.*

The airs he gave himself on this occasion are impossible to be described with proper force. He borrowed a book of military discipline from an old soldier in the neighbourhood, and getting some of the terms by heart, talked of
noth-

nothing but *armies*, and *battles*, and *marches*, and *sieges*, shewing how he would have attacked them if they staid; how he would have cut off their retreat; besieged their entrenchments; in short, done every thing that ever had been done by the greatest general on the greatest occasion.

The very appearance of a military passion, though thus in burlesque, began to reconcile the mob to him; especially as they had not an opportunity of seeing into the ridicule of it. But an accident soon happened that effectually turned his heart against them for ever, and made him resolve to get from among such a turbulent crew, as soon as he could.

As he was busied one Sunday afternoon in his usual employment, of repeating his oft-repeated lesson in military matters, to some company who had dined with him, his wife enters in a violent hurry and disorder, with a piece of paper in her hand, and reaching it to him, "There (said she) read that, and see what we are to do! it is a fine thing truly, to live in a place where the mob is to direct their masters. For my part, let me but get safe home once more; and I will give them leave to treat me as they please, if ever they catch me here again."

The steward, on looking into the paper, found it to be a kind of a letter, directed to his wife, and signed *The Mob of the Manor*, to let her know that, "understanding she had made an appointment to *play at cards* that evening, at one of her neighbours, they took the liberty to inform her, they would do themselves the honour to be of her party."

The insolence of such a message surprized all present; especially the gentleman who had
made

made up matters between the mob and the steward before, and happened to be one of the company; "What can this mean, madam? (said he, thinking that his former mediation gave him a right to interfere) I hope there was no foundation for such a report."

"What report, sir? (answered she) I do not understand you"

"Why, madam, (replied he) the scandalous report of your designing to play at cards this evening."

"I do not know what you call a scandalous report (returned she, with a look of disdain) my neighbour, Mrs. *Tesipst*, came yesterday to tell me that she had got a keg of choice old rum, and as she knows I am very fond of a glass of good punch, invited my husband and me, to meet half a dozen other neighbours at her house to play a game at cards, and spend the evening. This is all I know of the matter."

"And really madam (said the gentleman) this is a great deal more than I am glad to hear; as I was in hopes I had convinced Mr. Steward of the impropriety of this before."

"Well, my dear (said she, turning to her husband, without deigning to make any reply to the gentleman) what do you design to do? it is almost time. Will you go?"

"Not-I indeed (answered he, shrugging up his shoulders) I have no desire to meet such company, I assure you."

"And so we shall miss our share of the punch (returned she, whispering him) this is hard! very hard! and after I have set my mind upon it so, too."

"I cannot help it (replied he) I will not run the hazard."

"Then get rid of these people as soon as you can (whispered she again, after a little pause) I have a thought in my head that will do as well as going." And then speaking aloud, "Well my dear, I submit to you; but as we do not go there, I think it would not be amiss if we went to church, the bell rings."

"And pray, madam (added the gentleman) give me leave to advise you not only to deny your having had any such appointment upon your hands, if the affair should take wind; but also never to attempt a thing of the kind again while you are here; for I can tell you, this new correspondent of your's, *the mob* of this manor, is particularly whimsical sometimes, and may unluckily do something that would make you cut a very ridiculous figure."

To this, the gentlewoman did not think it worth her while to make any answer, but turning up her nose with an air of contempt, went out of the room.

As soon as she was gone the gentleman began to read the steward a lecture on his breach of promise, to which I gave no more heed than himself, my attention being diverted to a more entertaining object.

"You heard the gentleman say (said my guide) that the mob of this manor is sometimes whimsical: look yonder, and you will see a proof of it.

On his saying this, I turned my eye to the next street, where I saw half a dozen shabby fellows following a gentlewoman's chair carelessly, and as if they were strolling without any parti-

Particular design, till it stopped at the door of an house which I found to be Mrs. *Tefspot's*, when in an instant two or three hundred of them rushed out of the bye lanes, and alleys, where they had been lurking for the purpose, and surrounding the chair just as the chairmen were going to carry it into the house, one of them stopped it, and lifting up the head, desired the gentlewoman very civilly to walk out.

“What is the matter? (said she, with an air of authority, as if she thought to intimidate them) what do the fellows mean?”

“Only to give you a little good advice, madam (answered he that spoke before.) And therefore I hope you will please to come out of your chair quietly, and not oblige us to be so rude as to pull you out! never fear, madam! we do not design to do you any hurt.”

As it might be dangerous to disobey so absolute an authority, the gentlewoman complied directly, amazed and terrified as she was; and standing in the midst of them, the same fellow who appeared to be the orator of the mob, proceeded: “We understand, madam (said he, making her a low bow, and holding his hat in his hand, which he had very politely pulled off, when he first spoke to her) that you are coming here *to spend the evening at cards*: now! as we know that to be a very profane, wicked, and pernicious custom, and what has brought many an one of our companions to the gallows, we think it our duty not only to prevent you this time; but also to take care that you shall never be guilty of the like again. We therefore humbly insist, that you give us your
oath

path here, in the sight of all these good people, that, from this blessed moment, you will never play at cards, dice, or any other game, on the *Sabbath-day*, while you live. Here is the book; observe, it is *the Bible*! You must swear without any equivocation, or mental reservation whatsoever. Come! it is for the good of your soul."

The gentlewoman was by this time so terrified, that she would have sworn to impossibilities, to get out of such hands. She therefore obeyed them without hesitation; upon which the whole mob gave three huzza's, that made the street ring; and then the orator, addressing himself to her again, "We are glad, madam, (said he) that you complied so readily with our request, as we should have been very sorry to use any violence; and we hope your example will be followed by the rest of your party, for we design to make a general reformation; but, first, we will do ourselves the honour to see you safe home, as you can have no business in that house now."

With these words, the whole mob began to move; and the gentlewoman judging rightly, that it would be in vain to make any words with them, was obliged to turn about, walk home with them, and listen with an appearance of attention to the pious exhortations of the orator, who walked close by her side all the way, with his hat under his arm, and handed her every now and then over the kennel, with as many fantastic airs as a first-rate fop.

It is impossible to conceive a droller figure than she made on this occasion, walking so far through the dirty streets, (for they took care to lead

lead her the longest way about) in the midst of such a shabby crew, in all the frippery fullness of dress, powdered, frizzed, and furbelowed to the very tip of the mode; and consequently without any thing on her head to hide her shame, and save her from the rain, which fell plentifully all the time.

As soon as the procession arrived at her door, the orator made her another speech; and then the mob, giving her three cheers more, left her to her meditations, and retired to finish their pious work.

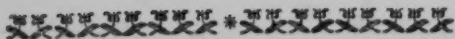
But they were too late now; the birds were flown. For, as the *swearing* part of the scene had passed under Mrs. *Tosspot*'s window, she, and such of her company as were come, had a full view of it, and none of them being piously enough inclined to perform such a penitential ceremony, as soon as ever the mob moved off with the gentlewoman, they all slipped out at the back-door, and made the best of their way home; and Mrs. *Tosspot* herself, just then receiving a card from the steward's wife, to let her know, "that she had been taken so very ill of the *cholick*, that she could not possibly wait upon her that evening, but should be glad of a glass of her rum, as she imagined it might do her good," took a couple of bottles in her lap, and hurried away to her, to tell her the news, and congratulate her on having escaped such a ridiculous disgrace as had befallen their friend, at the circumstances of which they had many an hearty laugh over their punch.

"You see, (resumed my guide) *the vulgar sometimes sees right*, though their method of proceeding is rather irregular. But this example,
no-

notorious and striking as it is, will have no effect. The practice against which it was levelled is become a fashion, and, like every other fashion, must have its run, 'till something else, perhaps equally improper, supersedes it."

From that day the steward never enjoyed a moment's happiness, being continually apprehensive of some such insult from the mob, as he could not resolve to desist from the practices which gave them offence; accordingly, when the time of his departure arrived soon after, he hugged himself on his escape, and laid down his grandeur with ten times greater pleasure than he had felt on taking possession of it; and in return for the uneasiness he had drawn upon himself, carried away an heart invenomed with the most rancorous hatred against the whole manor, the effects of which he resolved never to miss any opportunity of making them feel.

The END of the FIRST BOOK.



B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

The happiness of having more money than a man knows what to do with. The extensive knowledge of the lovers of VIRTU, accounted for. Poets not judges of painting.

BEFORE I had time to make any reflections on the ridiculous inconsistency in the conduct and characters of all the actors in this last scene, a person caught my eye, who seemed to promise more pleasing entertainment than I had hitherto met with. He was just entering into the prime of life, and appeared to be in possession of every advantage that could enhance the enjoyment of that season of delight.

So bright a prospect filled my heart with joy. "At length, O gracious spirit! (exclaimed I in an extasy) at length I have found a man whose life affords another view beside wretchedness and folly, and reconciles me to humanity. Let us observe him for a moment, and share in a bliss that seems to be so pure."

"The joy you express (answered my guide) is the genuine emanation of exalted virtue, which, rising above the malignity of envy, finds its own happiness in that of others. I shall there-

therefore comply with your request with pleasure, and leave you to form your own judgment on so interesting a subject."

Proud of this permission, I directly fixed my attention on the object of it.

Though the day appeared to be far advanced, he was just out of bed, and sitting at breakfast, in all the luxury and state of royalty. When he had swallowed a dish or two of tea, with evident disfrelish, "What shall I do with myself to-day? (said he to himself, rubbing his head, and stretching in listless lassitude) I am quite sick of this insipid kind of life, still plodding, plodding on, in the same dull, tasteless round, without any variety, any thing to expect, or even wish for. It is not to be borne."——

Then musing for some moments, "What must they do whose stunted fortunes deny them the gratification even of the few desires they have, when the highest affluence cannot procure me any satisfaction?—and yet, they evidently enjoy an happiness which I am a stranger to. There is something in this, more than I can comprehend. I will think of it some other time."

Turning then to his man, "What day of the week is this, Thomas?"

"Sunday, my lord."

"Sunday! Order the horses. I will take a ride this fine morning.—And what shall I do with myself the rest of the day?—Let me consider! Did not I promise to dine with her Grace, and go with her to Mrs. Squeakum's concert, and afterwards to lady Modish's rout, and then return and spend the evening with the Duke!—

Duke!——Psha, I am surfeited with musick; the very thought of it makes my head ache.—And for routs, they are still worse. To be squeezed and crouded among a parcel of people of all sorts and conditions, who come together meetly to make malicious remarks, and pick each other's pockets! It is intolerable.—I am tired, quite tired of them all; of myself, and every thing in the world.—That is right. Now I think of picking pockets, let me see how I came off last night, at the club!"

Then pulling a card out of his pocket, "Aye! here it is. What a black list! *Lord Palmwell* 1000—*his Grace* 500—*Sir John* 200—*Mr. Shuffler* 1500—*Capt. Gamble* 2000—beside all the money I had about me. Death! This is too much. There must be some management in it, that I should always lose! I positively will not go among them any more."

He was interrupted in these agreeable meditations by the entrance of a servant. "My lord, (said he) the groom has sent an express, to know if your lordship has made any bets on your new horse, and what particular directions you please to give about his running to-morrow, if your lordship does not design to see him start yourself; and to let your lordship know, that the mare, which he told your lordship he was under some apprehensions of, is to be sold; so that if your lordship pleases to buy her, you may be sure of the horse's winning."

"To-morrow! Aye. Send him word, that I will be there. And, do you hear! order the post-coach, and send to *Mr. Shuffler*, *Capt. Gamble*, and *Sir John*, and let them know I go directly,

rectly, and shall be glad of their company. And tell *Rackum* I want him.——I have never seen that horse run yet, though he cost me so high a price: and this is the last king's plate of this year. I must not miss seeing him now, by any means."

"My lord, (continued the servant) here is a messenger from his Grace's gentleman of the horse, to acquaint your lordship that the sale of the stud is fixed for to-morrow, and cannot be put off as was intended. He says, they are all to go without reserve."

"All, does he say? then I must be there. There are several *tip top* things among them, which I would not miss of on any account. You need not order the coach; and send the groom word, that he may do as he sees proper about the mare. I can't be there myself."

"My lord, (said another servant, who entered just then) Mr. *Connoisseur* is below; he says, your lordship ordered him to send up his name. And Mr. *Stanza*——I would have denied him, but he says he has business of importance."

"Aye! of importance to him, I doubt not.——Let them come up. As I have nothing else to do, their nonsense may divert me."——Then stretching again, and giving a long yawn, he arose from the table, which was directly removed, and walked a turn or two about the room.

As soon as the gentlemen entered, "Your servant, Mr. *Connoisseur*! (said his lordship) Mr. *Stanza*, what news from *Parnassus*? With what new inspiration have the Muses indulged their votary?"

"My lord, (returned the former, with a mysterious air, before the poet had time to scan his syllables for a reply) when you can spare me a moment's private audience, I have something to communicate to your lordship, that you will find worthy of your attention."

"Mr. *Stanza*, (said his lordship) if you'll take that new play that lies in the window, and look it over in the next room, I shall be glad to hear your opinion of it."

The poet made a bow of assent; and taking up the book with a contemptuous smile, retired, not a little offended at his being obliged to give place to a mechanic.

"Well, Mr. *Connoisseur*! and what is this important secret?"

"My lord, it is an important secret, I assure you. Your lordship may remember I have told you that a gentleman of judgment, who had spent several years in visiting the cabinets of the curious in every part of *Europe*, out of which he had found means, at a very great expence, to procure many of the most admired pieces, was daily expected home with his valuable collection. Now, my lord, this gentleman is just arrived; and as I have had a constant correspondence with him all the time he has been abroad, for it was chiefly by me he was directed in the choice of what he bought—
"How! were you abroad too along with him?
I did not know that."——

"No, no, my lord! I was not with him; but that did not prevent my being able to direct him. For your lordship must know, that there is a regular correspondence established between all the lovers of *virtu* in Europe, by which means we are as in-

intimately acquainted with every thing in each other's country as in our own; so that I could give him my opinion what was proper for him to purchase in every place where he went, as well as if I was upon the spot with him.—

As I was saying, This gentleman no sooner landed, than he sent me immediate notice, upon which I went directly to him; and as I am well acquainted with your lordship's fine taste, I have by much entreaty prevailed upon him to let you have several of the most capital pieces in his collection, before he exhibits them to the public for sale; for which purpose your lordship may have a sight of them privately to-morrow, if you please, when I will wait upon you, to point out the proper ones to complete your noble collection, and prevent your being imposed upon in the price; not that any price can in reality be too high for such master-pieces of art."

"To-morrow, do you say? Can it not be put off for a day or two? I am engaged to-morrow."

"My lord, that is impossible. All the *Virtuosi* in England will know of his arrival in twenty-four hours, and then it will be out of his power to oblige your lordship; and you will lose an opportunity never to be retrieved."

"Well then, I think I will go. Here, *Thomas*, bid *William* go to his Grace's to-morrow, and buy whatever he likes; I cannot go myself."

"I hope your lordship approved of the bargains I made for you at the last sale; (continued *Connoisseur*) some of the landscapes came high; but they are very fine, very fine indeed,

and will make a noble appearance in your lordship's gallery. Are they put up yet, my lord?"

"Eh! Egad, I never once thought of them. Do you know any thing of those pictures, *Thomas*?"

"My Lord, the upholsterer nailed them up on the garret-stair-case; he said, they were not fit for the gallery by any means."

"He is an ignorant puppy, and deserves to be turned off for presuming to disobey my directions. How should he know any thing of paintings! — My lord, — your lordship may depend on my judgment. They are capital pieces. The garret-stair-case! ignorant, impudent blockhead!"

"Hah! hah! hah! This is exalting into degradation, I think. But I will look at them myself when I am at leisure, and see that justice is done them."

"At what hour shall I call upon your lordship in the morning?"

"About twelve. Suppose we take *Stanza* with us. A poet should be a judge of painting. Call him in."

"A judge of painting! hah! hah! hah! a most excellent one, truly! How should such low-lived creatures have judgment in things they have not even an opportunity of seeing. They never travel to improve their taste, and enrich their minds by studying the excellencies of the foreign schools. They have no notion of any thing beyond an English daub. I must beg your lordship not to take notice of this affair to any one, as it would entirely ruin the sale of the whole collection; and especially to such a fellow

my interest with his Grace, which I took care to place to the account of my regard for him; so that I think he cannot refuse me any thing I ask of him; and this very morning the bridegroom has been with me, to let me know he has taken possession of his place."

It is impossible to describe the situation of *Chamælion* during the latter part of this story. Resentment, shame, and rage swelled in his heart, and tortured every feature of his face. Suppressing them, however, as well as he could, "What place, my lord, (said he) has the happy man got?"

"Why! that there place which I have so often heard you say you should like. Egad! I think I should have articed for a share. The rascal could never have raised his expectations quarter so high otherwise. At least I shall claim a right to renew my acquaintance with his lady, if ever I should have a mind. Hah! hah! hah!"

"And pray, my lord, (continued *Chamælion*) When did his Grace confer this obligation on your lordship?"

"One day last week,—while you were in the country. But do not you think, *Frank*, that I have well got over this affair?"

"I could have told you something, my lord, (said the other, with a spiteful sneer which all his art was not sufficient to suppress) that would have lessened your anxiety about that fair lady."

"Aye! What was that? What do you know of her?"

"Only, my lord, that her love must certainly have been very violent for your lordship, when

when your servant could so readily prevail upon her to marry him. Hah! hah! hah!"

"Why? Aye! that is very true.—But—but—but consider——consider——What else could she do?"

"And your lordship may add, that monsieur *Frippeau* is a man of parts, and master of prevailing arguments. I see he has conducted his scheme cleverly."

"Eh! I do not understand you. His scheme! No. It was my proposal, not his."

"Yes, my lord, I perceive the proposal was your's; but the plan I have good reason to think was his."

"His! No, no; not at all. It was his Grace's. *Frippeau* knew nothing of the matter, till I informed him of it."

"Not directly of this I grant you, my lord; but that he had formed some plan of the kind I am very clear?"

"How could that be? What should make you think so?"

"Because, my lord, he and this lady, to my certain knowledge, had a very good understanding long before the time you say you first made your addresses to her."

"A good understanding! What do you mean? Prithee speak plainer."

"I mean, my lord, that monsieur and madam had had an amour; and that, instead of his marrying your lordship's whore, and fathering your bastard, by a prudent participation of what he could well spare he has had the address to take in your lordship to provide for him and his hopeful family. That is all I mean, my lord."

"An amour with her! Impossible! I am sure it could be no such thing. What can have put this nonsense into your head!"

"My lord, it was put into my head by my happening to catch the fond pair clasped in the folds of love one evening, in the arbour at the bottom of the garden."

"Sdeath! when was this?" —

"The very evening after we went into the country. It would have done you good to see how lovingly the turtles billed. The joy they expressed at meeting shewed that they had been well acquainted before."

"Damn their joy! But how the devil came you not to tell me of this?"

"Because, my lord, she bribed me to secrecy by the same favour. Besides, I could never suspect that your lordship would have been made such a dupe of by a country-girl."

"Infamous bitch! And to pretend so much love for me all the while! But I will be revenged. I will have the scoundrel turned out directly, and let the whore's father know of all her tricks."

"And he will give you all the vexation he can in your affairs, in return for the share you have had in them. Nor is it in your power to turn out *Frippon* now. He has a patent for his place, and defies you."

"Confusion! What must I do?"

"Why, my lord, you must even go and return your thanks to his Grace for his great favour so worthily bestowed, and submit patiently to the abuse you have received, because it is not in your power to redress it."

Saying

Saying this he took his leave, somewhat consoled for the ill treatment he had met with from his Grace, by thinking that his lordship, who thought he had received the benefit of it, was still more abused than he.



C H A P. V.

Misfortunes multiply. A new method of engaging the assistance of the great. Common occurrences. CHAMÆLION breaks with his great friends rather unpolitely. His history concluded with some odd reflections.

SEVERELY as he felt this stroke, it was but a trifle to the misfortunes which began now to pour in upon him. From his lordship's he went on his usual errand, to the person who had hitherto supplied him with money on a mortgage of his estate; but, to his unspeakable surprize, instead of complying with his demand, the scrivener told him very gravely, that he could not advance any more upon that security; and desired he would take measures for paying him off without delay, or he must foreclose the mortgage.

It is impossible to express the astonishment into which this speech threw him. As soon as he recovered himself a little, "Surely, sir, (said he) that estate must be worth considerably more than my debt to you. The clear rent is eight hundred pounds a year; and the last time we settled I owed you but fourteen thousand pounds,

pounds, interest and principle, since which I have not had any more from you; so that you must certainly be mistaken. The estate is worth several thousands more."

"Look you, sir, (answered the scrivener) as you have always dealt with me like a gentleman, I will strain a point so far as to give one thousand pounds more; but that is on condition, that you execute a sale of that estate to me directly; and that is by five hundred more than I would give any other man I deal with."

"I am much obliged to you for your friendship, sir; but think that fifteen thousand pounds is rather too little for eight hundred a year."

"Why, there it is now. You gentlemen who have estates in land think there is nothing like them; but we know the contrary. Money, money, sir, is the thing. Sir, I can honestly make ten percent, or perhaps more, of my money, every day I live now; and this without being plagued with tenants breaking, and repairs, and taxes, and I do not know how many vexations which attend landed estates. No! No! Money, Money is the thing."

"Ten per cent! Aye, that you can, and more to my certain knowledge, or my debt could never have amounted so high by some thousands. But this kind of talking signifies nothing. Tell me directly, what is the most that you will give me?"

"Sir, I cannot give any more than I have said; and out of that you must pay all the costs of making the conveyance too."

"Then, sir, you never shall have my estate, you may be assured. I am not reduced to submit to such iniquitous extortions yet."

which words he turned about and left the room, sensible that it was to no purpose to attempt using any arguments with one of his profession.

He was well enough acquainted with the world, to know that the scrivener would never have made such a declaration till he had every thing prepared to put it in execution, and consequently that his own situation admitted not of a moment's delay.

Accordingly he went directly to a gentleman who had often hinted a desire to purchase his estate, if ever it should be to be sold, as he plainly foresaw it must in the end; with whom, in the present agitation of his spirits, he concluded a bargain in a very few words, that left him without a foot of property upon earth.

The forming a resolution, be it what it will, is real relief to a mind in distress, by taking off the attention from that distress, and fixing it on the means of executing the resolution.

From the moment he determined to sell his estate he enjoyed a tranquility which amid all his pleasures he had long been a stranger to; and though he was sensible that he should have but a very poor pittance remaining to found his future hopes upon, when all his debts were paid, the thought of disappointing the scrivener's base design gave him such pleasure that he scarce attended to his own ruin; or, if he had any sense of it, the illusion that had drawn it upon him, and under which he still continued, took off half its horrors.

“When my friends see (said he) that I stand in need of their assistance, they will give it without even putting me to the pain of making application.”

plication: and I have money enough due to me among them, to support me as usual, till some such opportunity offers: all cannot be so basely insincere as his grace."

Supported by this hope, he went to spend the next evening among them with his wonted spirits: but a consciousness of his desperate circumstances made his apprehensions so delicate, that he construed the common pleasantries of his companions into personal insults, and left them abruptly, as much surprised at his behaviour as he was offended at theirs.

But they were not long at a loss to account for it. One of the club, who had been on the same errand himself that day with the lawyer who drew the conveyances of the other's estate, and learned the affair from him, coming in just after he had gone away in that odd manner, directly told them the whole affair, heightened with the additional embellishments of his own good-nature, such as the purchase of his estates not having paid half his debts, and his being reduced now to a condition worse than beggary.

This opened a field for curious speculations. Instead of regretting a ruin, which they had themselves been the occasion of, they all ran out into the grossest ridicule, and severest invectives, against his foolish vanity, for pretending to live upon an equality with persons of superior rank and fortune; the most extravagant of the whole set, and those especially whose circumstances were reduced nearest to a level with his, declaiming loudest in the praise of prudence and economy, and railing most against him for the opposite vices.

The conclusion of all was, that it would no
K 2 longer

longer be proper for them to admit him into their company: but, as forbidding him directly might too probably be attended with consequences they did not chuse, they unanimously resolved to take the safer method of treating him with a coldness, that to one of his delicacy could not fail to answer the same end, without exposing them to such danger.

As for him, the manner in which he passed the remaining part of the night is too horrid for description. After cursing his own folly and their baseness, till his spirits were quite exhausted, he at length bethought himself, that the particular expressions which had given him such pain were in the common stile of their conversation, and in all probability without any personal application to him, as it was scarce possible, that they could have received any account of so recent a transaction.

The consolation which this thought gave him, enabled him to take some rest: so that when he awoke, he repaired to the usual place, in pretty good spirits: but this was only like a gleam of sun-shine between two storms; the behaviour of his companions, in consequence of the generous resolution of the night before, soon removing every doubt of their meaning and design.

Stung to the soul at this, he started up, and looking at them with the fierceness of desperation; "I plainly see, said he, in an haughty tone, that my ruin is no secret; nor am I at a loss to account for the prudential motives of this behaviour: but you are mistaken, my worthy friends, if judging of me by yourselves, you think I am mean enough to solicit, or receive

ceive any favour from you. Most of this company are in my debt, both for money won and lent. The payment of that is all I require, and what I will insist on. If I owe any of you any thing, let it be demanded now, as this is the last time I shall ever come among you."

The first word he spoke carried an universal silence, nor were any of them very ready to break it when he had ended, but sat looking at each other as at a loss what to say, and expecting who should speak first.

His behaviour almost distressed I his race, and turned it into contempt: casting his eye therefore round him with insoluble disdain, "I give you time, said he, to consider of my demand till to-morrow, when, if I have not a satisfactory answer, I shall apply personally to each in another manner" — Saying which, he flung out of the room.

The threat implied in these last words influenced some of them whose debts were but small to pay him: but the greater part, sheltering themselves in the privileges of their rank, gallantly thought proper to take no notice of his demand.

But this was not their best protection: provoked as he was at the baseness of their behaviour, his pride would not permit him to repeat a demand, which, from his present circumstances might be imputed to necessity. Accordingly, tired of a place where every object he saw upbraided him with his folly, he purchased a commission in the army with the poor remains of his fortune, and sought to silence the reproaches of his own mind, by the tumults and horrors of war.

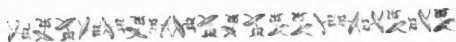
Of all the instances of human folly which I had yet seen, this affected me most. "O gracious spirit! (said I with an heavy sigh) how wretched is the state of man, that the finest endowments of mind are not sufficient to secure him from falling into this inexplicable labyrinth! Is there no land-mark to warn him from the danger? No clue to guide his steps in safety through the giddy maze?"

"The brightest endowments (answered he) serve only to make folly more conspicuous, and aggravate the pain of ruin by reproach, except they will submit to the direction of prudence.

"But the contrary is too often the case. The vivacity which results from great parts is above stooping to any restraint, especially from a virtue that appears to be merely negative.

"Hence it is that you see the greatest follies are generally committed by men of the greatest genius; as, on the other hand, the most solid advantages are obtained by moderate abilities, when directed by that unerring guide. Of the former you have seen a striking instance in this person, and every view of life makes it unnecessary to give any of the latter.

"As to him, there is no species of folly more extensively fatal than that which proved his ruin. Everyone, who, listening to the allurements of idleness, neglects to improve the present moment, and depends on chance to bring on another day that which application might procure him now, is guilty of it. All have the means of rational success within their power when they first set out in life, and the many who miscarry owe their misfortune mostly to the want of applying those means properly.



CHAP. VI.

A rare character. Description of a lady's dress, passing in London; with a few of a remarkable conversation. The story of Cecilia and Stephen. A good tale is told, and ends in love as well as war.

WHILE the spirit was making these reflections, I happened to cast my eye upon a female whose appearance fastened my curiosity to take more particular notice of her.

Though she was ascending fast into the vale of years, and time's inexorable hand had robbed her charms of all their bloom, there was a sweetness and sensibility in her looks, an elegance and grace in her whole form, which made the very ruins of beauty look lovely, and were impossible to be beheld without the tenderest emotions.

She was sitting in a favourite closet, the first view of which suggested an idea of the owner's character. It looked into a spacious garden that hung over the banks of a silver stream. At the lower end a variety of evergreens and flowering shrubs formed a number of little arbours, and spread a fragrance through the air, that disposed the heart to softness, and filled it with delight. Beyond them a row of venerable oaks bounded the view, among which the stream, stealing insensibly from the sight, made the whole prospect most romantick and grand. The windows were set out with flower-pots of the finest china. On

the ceiling was painted the story of *Apelle* and *Daphne*, by a master-hand. A large book-case, carved in the *Chippendale* taste, and highly gilt, covered each end of the closet, and displayed a complete collection of all the plays, poems, and romances in the modern language, which treat of love as a science, and strengthen its pleasures by the powers of imagination. A shelf that reached from the floor to the top of the closet, against the part between the windows, was filled with one or two volumes of each author, placed on one side of the closet, served to form the well seen at one view: and a variety of portraits of heroes and queens, with all their didactic maxims, hung up in regular order on each side of the door, and made the whole of a piece.

She sat at a table placed before one of the windows, with a huge folio open before her, on which she leaned her elbow: she reclined on what she had been reading, with her head reclined upon her hand, and her eyes fixed upon the ceiling; her spectacles lay upon the book, to mark the place where she had stopped, and her snuff-box and handkerchief beside it.

After she had been musing thus for some minutes, "Happy days (said she, with a sigh) when love and honour governed the world! when ceremony gave place to sincerity, and inclination went hand in hand with virtue! Why did I not live then? Why was my lot reserved for these dull iron times? I might have been a gentle shepherdess, and spent my blissful life with some selected faithful swain in sweet *Arcadian* vales, awaking with our tuneful pipes the slow-paced morn, when we arose to tend our
fleecey

slcecy care; and, slumbering away the sultry noon, clasped in each other's arms, in cool sequestered fragrant bowers, beside some purling stream, whose murmurs lulled each wearied sense to rest."

Then, taking a pinch of snuff, and rising from her chair, "Or else I might have been some beauteous princess (continued she, as she walked with a majestick air across the floor) whose fame had filled the world, and brought adoring princes to my feet."——

She was interrupted in these pleasing meditations by the entrance of a servant with a letter. Dismissing him with a nod, the moment she saw the well-known hand, and then kissing the direction, she opened the letter, and read it over in a perfect rapture.

"O *Strophon*! (said she, as soon she had ended) who can resist thy sweet persuasive tongue? Such eloquence ~~never~~ *never* sued in vain! Yes, I will meet you. *Calia* will meet her *Strophon* with all the ardour of unsated love."

When she had thus given vent to her transport, she sat down again very composedly to her beloved study; at which she continued till summoned unwillingly to dinner.

A lover's repasts, are never long. As soon as she had made an hasty meal, she set out with all the eagerness of expectation for the shady walk at the bottom of the garden. The throbbing of her heart, as she approached this scene most opportune for love, made me imagine she was waited for by some favourite swain, whom she expected to see clasp her immediately in his arms.

But, though no such lover appeared, she seemed neither disappointed nor displeased. The moment she entered the walk, "I come, my dearest Stephen! (said she, spreading her arms to embrace the empty air, and talking as if to some one present) your *Cælia*, punctual to your appointment, comes to spend a rapturous hour in conversation with her soul's beloved. Here will I lean upon your arm, and hearken to the music of your voice, as we walk along the flowery margin of this limpid stream. These conscious shades, the nymphs, and naiads of the stream and grove, shall witness for the purity of our passion".

And then again, as if replying to something he had said, "I own the force of what you urge. Persuasion hangs upon your tongue; and yielding nature pleads so strongly in your behalf, that virtue hardly can resist: but spare the panting suppliant, nor seek to triumph farther over a prostrate foe."——

—"How can you wrong me so? Fantastick honour! No! I despise the thought. Leave me the sacred substance, virtue, and I will cheerfully give up the fading shadow, though censure pour forth all her invenomed rage against me."——

—"Exalted generosity! Then I am safe. Had you pressed farther I had been undone. My rebel heart was ready to revolt."——

In this rapturous flighty strain, she continued her imaginary conversation for just an hour, pausing at every period, as if for a reply, using all the gestures, and shewing the attention of one engaged in deep discourse: then taking leave, with the most passionate expressions of regard, she returned to her company, with whom she spent the rest of the evening in the highest spirits;

rits; and that she might preserve the loved idea full upon her mind, as soon as her maid left the room, sat up in her bed in all the flannels of the night, and putting on her spectacles once more read over his dear letter before she could think of going to rest, and then put it carefully under her pillow to tempt delightful dreams.

There was something so unaccountable in the conduct of this lady, that, strongly as curiosity attached my attention to such an extraordinary scene, I could scarce contain myself to the conclusion of it; but was several times going to ask my guide what it could possibly mean.

He read my astonishment in my looks; and as soon as the drawing of her curtain closed the farce, "I see, said he, that you are at a loss what to make of this woman's fantastick behaviour. It is a species of folly so little known in common life, that it has not yet been distinguished by any particular title; and will, therefore, be best understood by a short account of her life.

"She was born, as you see, with every advantage of beauty, rank, and fortune, which all received a higher lustre still from the uncommon endowments of her mind. So fair a morn prefigured a cloudless day; and hope looked forward with assurance for a life of happiness and honour. But she soon fell from this envied height; and her misfortune was wrought by such unlikely means, that it seemed to have been designed on purpose as a punishment and check on human confidence and vanity."

"A gentleman, of whom it was hard to say, whether nature was more liberal to his mind, or cruel to his person, unfortunately

K 6

hap-

happened to fix his eyes upon her; and either from inclination, or to shew the power of his wit, by inspiring her with love, in despite of his deformity, directly marked her out for his addresses.

“ Flattery is the incense always offered to female beauty, and love the only language which it hears : but neither did he think the proper weapons for beginning his attack. He was sensible that the former would only reflect reproach on his own unpleasing appearance, and obviate the success of the latter, if offered before art had palliated the defects of nature.

“ He resolved therefore to proceed upon another plan; and accordingly, wherever he met her, instead of entertaining her with hackneyed, fulsome compliments, and unmeaning addresses, he affected to discover new beauties in her mind, which raised his attention above every thing else; and displayed the charms of his own understanding so delicately in the praise of hers, that she insensibly became enamoured of his conversation, to such a degree as to be indifferent to all other.

“ One favourable circumstance is often sufficient to remove the most disadvantageous opinion. The disgust which his deformity raised soon subsided, and her attention was so fixed upon the perfections of his mind, that she quite overlooked the defects of his form: this was a great advance; but difficulties still as great remained, and which required the most consummate art to conquer. Virtue was the rule by which she guided all her steps, and Fame the darling passion of her soul.

“ But

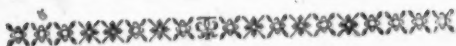
“ But he was not at a loss how to proceed. As he had before avoided flattering her beauty, for fear of drawing contempt upon himself, so he now refrained from mentioning the very name of love, lest her virtue should take the alarm, and defeat his design. His conversation was entirely sentimental: and he never even glanced at sensual pleasure, but to shew his disapprobation of it.

“ Such a conduct soon won the confidence of her unexperienced, unsuspecting heart; and there was something so flattering in the thought of being the selected friend of such a person, that she could not resist it, but gladly met his advances half way, and returned his professions with the most solid and boundless esteem.

“ The transition from friendship to love is imperceptible, and seldom fails between the different sexes: but here the very means which had procured the former at the same time seemed to preclude all hopes of the latter for ever.

“ But if this disappointed his desires, it facilitated the gratification of his vanity; to which his heart was no less a slave. Secure in the purity of her own heart, she was easily led into breaches of those unessential forms which custom has arbitrarily established as the inseparable shadows of virtue, and too many substitute in the place of the substance.

“ Envy instantly sounded the alarm, blazoning the imaginary fall in the blackest colours, before the innocent victim of her rage was sensible that she made the least slip.”



CHAP. VII.

The history of CÆLIA and STREPHON, continued.—An extraordinary method of holding conversation at a distance. People often pay for peeping. Love is a riddle.

“THE effects of innocence and guilt often bear so near a resemblance as to be mistaken for each other. Provoked at such injustice, she thought it beneath her to pay any farther regard to the caprices of public opinion; and, conscious of her own innocence, piqued herself on persisting in what had been so basely misrepresented: but this imprudent pride was imputed to another cause; and she was said to be hardened by guilt into a defiance of shame.

“Her friend, who had designedly led her by the hand into this labyrinth, thought he now had a proper opportunity to unmask his whole design. Accordingly he began to change the tenour of his discourse, and try to pervert her principles, or tempt her passions to rebel against them. He drew pleasure in the most alluring colours, and softened the horrors of vice by every specious artifice: arguing against the excellence of virtue from the general opposition of nature to its dictates; and, by a daring perversion of divine truth, attempting to prove the very necessities of guilt as the proper means to merit the rewards of Innocence.” But

“Though his tongue

“Drop’d manna, and could make the worse appear

“The better reason, for his thoughts were low.”

She

She saw that "*all was false and hollow*," and refuting his arguments with an indignant asperity, convinced him that all attempts of the kind must ever prove in vain: nor was this disappointment so severe as may be imagined. Vanity had at least an equal share with desire in his original design against her; and age and infirmities had now so far cooled the latter, that he was easily contented with the gratification of the former.

"For this reason he readily agreed to a proposal of hers to hold an intercourse of soul, into which sense should never be admitted; and as it might not be in their power to meet so often as they must desire each other's conversation, they settled rules for a correspondence by letter, which nothing should ever interrupt.

"From this time, to enable her to support the heavy weight of public censure and neglect, of which she now began to be sensible, she was obliged to have recourse to books; and the turn of her thoughts naturally suggested the choice you saw.

"Nothing is more dangerous than flying for relief from any distress to folly. The natural propensity of the mind to it is so strong, that the faintest shadow of encouragement from reason links them inseparably for ever. The pleasure she took in these books grew upon her insensibly, till she lost all taste for every other enjoyment; and the study of them wrought such a change in her mind, that she soon relaxed the rules of her correspondence, and descended to write like other mortals.

"How

“ How far this humour might have been improved, it is not fair to conjecture: perhaps, what was her friend’s consolation before was her protection now. However, he keeps up his correspondence with all the ardour of desire; but as this change in the stile might seem to lead to a more material one in their conduct, should they meet frequently as before, he luckily thought of the fantastick expedient which you saw her put in practice of retiring each of them alone at an appointed time, to converse in the power of imagination as if together; and to give a consistency to their thoughts, the same letter which makes the assignation appoints the scene of it and the subject of the conversation.

“ There is nothing so extravagant or absurd but habit will reconcile; especially when it flatters any favourite passion. Ridiculous as this thought of holding an imaginary conversation must appear, she was so pleased with it, that it soon became her greatest entertainment; nor to this day will she suffer the most serious concerns of life to interfere with the enjoyment of it.

“ Of this she has given instances, which have been attended with circumstances of so severe ridicule as must have cured any mind of such a folly, that was not under an absolute insatiation. I will relate one for the whimsical singularity of it.

“ Soon after this method of conversing was settled between her and her friend, while her charms were still in all their glory, a nobleman of the first rank was so smitten with them, that he resolved to propose an union with her for life, concluding that the censures which had been
levelled

levelled against her, and were now almost forgot, something more recent having given the tongue of scandal other employment, were only the effect of envy at her superior excellence.

“ The first hint of his design was received with pleasure by all her friends; and he was even beginning to make some advances in her esteem, when an unlucky accident at once overcast so fair a prospect.

“ As he was walking alone with her one morning in the garden, and striving to give his conversation such a turn as should introduce a declaration of his passion, as if by accident and without the painful formality of a direct address, a servant delivered her a letter, which in the absence of impatience, she instantly opened, without ever reflecting who was present.

“ The pleasure she discovered in her looks while she was reading it raised his curiosity to know who her happy correspondent could be, for he saw the direction was in a man’s hand; and an accident soon presented him an opportunity of gratifying it: for she had scarce ran the letter over, when recollecting the impropriety of what she had done, she hastily attempted to put it up, and making him an apology, for such a breach of ceremony, resumed her former conversation; but with such an inconsistency and absence of mind as evidently shewed she was thinking of something else.

“ But, instead of putting the letter in her pocket, she had in her confusion dropped it on the ground, which he directly perceived, and the nature of his intentions making him think he had a right to take every method of gaining information in any thing that might affect his
hap-

happinefs in fo delicate a point, he refolved it poffible to avail himfelf of the accident, and get a fight of it. Accordingly he led her away to fome company who were in another part of the garden; and as foon as he faw her engaged in converfation, feigning an excufe of having dropped his handkerchief, went back in fearch of the letter, which he readily found; and opening it without hesitation, faw to his utter aftonifhment and confufion, that it contained the moft rapturous exultations of fuccefsful love; for the further gratification of which, it appointed a meeting in the fhady walk at the bottom of the garden that very evening.

It is eafy to conceive his fituation at this difcovery. The firft impulfе of his rage was to find out the bold invader of his happinefs, and facrifice him to his juft refentment, as he concluded, that he could not be ignorant of his intended alliance with that deceitful wanton: but the difficulty was to difcover who he was, for the letter was figned only with the fictitious name of *Strepfon*; and he could not expect that ſhe would inform him, ſhould he charge her with her baſeneſs, and demand his name.

“ But he was not long at a loſs. He readily judged that ſhe would be punctual to an affignation, which evidently gave her ſuch pleaſure. He therefore refolved to take no notice of what he had diſcovered; but to try if he could not by ſome means or other gain admittance into the garden, and conceal himſelf near the ſcene of appointment, ſo as to be able to detect them in ſuch a manner as ſhould deprive them of every colour of defence or extenuation, and juſtify the ſeverity of his meditated revenge: and for
fear

fear the loss of the letter should soon find, he hid it exactly in the place he intended, and turning short into another walk, had gone many steps, when he saw her running with the utmost anxiety in her looks in quest of it, as he also perceived by the joy that sparkled in her eyes when she returned to the company, that she had found it.

“ The next part of his plot succeeded without difficulty: he readily got admittance in disguise at the back-door of the garden, as if to gratify common curiosity; and had not been many minutes in his concealment; when he saw her hasten to the place of assignation with all the eagerness and impatience of love.

“ His disappointment then was the same as yours. He heard her hold her imaginary conversation in the same manner; and as it was impossible for him to comprehend what it meant, that very circumstance only doubled his anxiety to develope such a dark and unaccountable scene.

“ But though he had not detected her in the flagrant manner he designed, his scheme was not entirely disappointed, as she had made the discovery he wanted, by her frequent repetition of her lover’s name in the course of her conversation. As soon therefore as she retired, he resolved to go directly to him, and require an explanation of the whole affair: but what was his surprise to find that he had been confined to his room for many months by the gout, nor had a prospect of quitting it soon! He therefore thought that he should only make himself ridiculous by mentioning the motive of his visit, and so passed it off under the appearance of common ceremony.



C H A P. VIII.

Continued.—Perplexity worse perplexed. A slight prejudice of education opens a new scene of confusion. A curious account of a JUGGLER. He foils the Devil at his own weapons; but is surprised himself in the midst of his triumph.

“THIS naturally increased his perplexity. He now considered the affair as a master-piece of intrigue; the mystery of which he was determined, if possible to discover. With this design he directly dispatched a trusty servant to try if he could find out among the servants of the other, whether there was any intercourse between them and that lady; who immediately returned with an account, that scarce a day passed in which they sent not letters to each other in the most publick manner; and particularly, which was the principal point of his enquiry, that her footman had received one for her that very morning.

“The astonishment into which this account threw him may be easily conceived. The avowed libertinism of this gentleman’s character gave him too just reason to form the worst opinion of any intercourse with him; at the same time that the manner in which it was carried on seemed to contradict its being of an improper nature: but, as this might also be only a finesse, he resolved to try if he could not make use of it to confirm that very suspicion which it was devised to elude.

“Accordingly

“Accordingly he employed the same servant to corrupt the gentleman’s porter, by a considerable bribe, to let him have a sight of the next letter he received to send to her, which he solemnly promised to return so soon, that it should not be missed.

“The porter had had too much connection with the great to be proof to such a temptation. He gave the letter, and the nobleman had the farther astonishment to find, that it contained not only another assignation, but even spoke in raptures of the pleasures of the last.

“This involved him in tenfold darkness. He scarce knew how to believe his senses; and began to consider whether the whole might not possibly be a dream. As soon as he recovered a little from his astonishment, he returned the letter; and prepared in the same manner as before to be a witness of this most surprising scene, when upon seeing her former incomprehensible extravagancies, he directly concluded she was under the delusion of some fascination, and that the gentleman used more than natural means to bring her into this state, to serve some base purposes of his own.

“Full of this notion, which an unhappy prejudice of education, his imagination having been filled in his infancy with such terrors of withcraft and incantation, as it was impossible for reason ever absolutely to get the better of, made him more readily give into, he slipped away unperceived by her, and running to the house, alarmed the whole family with a dreadful account of her being, at that very instant, under the dominion of an evil spirit.

“It

“ It is impossible to describe the consternation into which this story threw them all; especially the lady’s mother, who, in the weakness of extreme age, had resigned herself to the illusions of a set of pretended reformers, whose *method* was to fill the minds of their infatuated followers with imaginary terrors, that they might the more easily mould them to their own iniquitous purposes. They stared at each other for some time, in all the ghastliness of affright, unable to speak a word: but he knowing that the time of her *possession* would soon be at an end, and having observed before that no traces of it remained after the expiration of the appointed hour, desired that they would come out with him directly, and be witnesses of the truth of what he told them.

“ On this, some of the boldest ventured with him, while the rest went piously to prayers, and coming upon her unperceived, over-heard her in high discourse, which they readily believed his lordship’s opinion to be with an evil spirit, whose voice even some of them confidently asserted they heard talking to her, though he did not appear to their sight.

“ As soon, therefore, as her taking leave of her imaginary companion made them think the spirit was withdrawn, and that they might approach her without danger, they all rushed upon her, and holding her fast, while her surprise deprived her of power to ask the reason of such treatment, hurried her directly into the house.

“ It had happened, that while they were out upon this important expedition, her mother’s ghostly guide had called in as usual, to enquire into the
state

state of her conscience, and to exchange spiritual for bodily comforts. The sight of him filled them all with joy. "O Doctor, said the good old lady, you are come in a lucky moment."—And then wringing her hands, "my poor unhappy daughter! O doctor, the enemy has surprised her; the foul fiend has taken possession of her body! O my daughter, my daughter!"—

"As it was impossible to conceive what she meant, the doctor turned to another of the company, whose grief and affright had not so far overpowered her reason; who in a few words informed him of the whole affair. Though upon all occasions, he assumed an appearance of the highest resolution which his pretended sanctity of life could inspire, his soul was secretly a slave to every terror which conscious guilt could raise to startle the most bigotted superstition. Such a story, therefore, was far from being agreeable to him: however, as it bore not the least appearance of probability, and especially as it was impossible for him to retreat now, without forfeiting his credit for ever, he resolved to hide his fears, and act his part in defiance to his conscience, as he had often done in other cases, be the consequence what it would.

"While he was forming this resolution, he stood with his hands and half-closed eyes raised to heaven, as if wrapt in mental adoration and prayer, to invoke the divine assistance: an attitude which he had practised so often, whenever he wanted time to consider how he should extricate himself out of any difficulty, or carry on any glaring imposition, that he now fell
into

into it mechanically. Then turning to the trembling matron, "Fear not madam," said he, in a slow solemn voice, and with an air of importance, "the prayers of the faithful are able to prevail over all the powers of Satan. Thy daughter shall be restored: my spirit hath received assurance, and longs to undertake the contest. Now shall thou behold the prince of darkness put to flight, and all his strength defeated by the word of feeble man: but faith does all."——"Just as he said this, he heard them forcing the supposed demoniack into the room, and summoning up all his courage and effrontery, prepared to exorcise her according to a ritual of his own invention: the terror, that in spite of all his efforts to conceal it glared in his eyes assisting his imposition, and passing upon all present for the emanation of enthusiastick rapture.

"All description falls short of such a scene. The astonished patient was obliged to undergo the whole ceremony, without being permitted to ask the meaning of it, every time she attempted to speak her voice being drowned by a general exclamation of affright and solemn adjuration to silence, which her amazement made her the more easily comply with.

"As she sat therefore in silent wonder, without any appearance of distraction, during the last act of the farce, the * Juggler, as soon as it was finished, addressing himself to her mother, "I told you madam (said he with an air of

* See PIERCE's ceremonies and religious customs. Vol. III.

triumph), that my *method* was infallible: it was partly invented by that sage and pious prince James I. to whom the policy of Satan's kingdom was as well known as that of his own; the rest is an addition of mine, in which the success testifies that my spirit was not denied divine assistance: scepticks and infidels may scoff and doubt; but to pious faith is given demonstration."——

Then turning to his patient, "And you, my daughter, should repent of all your evil ways, and turn your heart to righteousness, lest the evil one should not only come again and take possession of his former habitation, but also bring others more wicked than himself with him; so that your last estate would be worse than the first. Open your heart therefore to the entrance of faith, and obey the *call* of grace."

This edifying address had an effect very contrary to what was intended. The authoritative air with which he delivered it, and the insinuations of some secret guilt in his exhortation to repentance, provoked her spirit, naturally high, to such a degree, that her anger getting the better of her astonishment, "I desire to know, sir, (said she, with a look of indignation and contempt) by what right you presume to speak to me in this insolent manner? Overpowered by violence, and out of respect to a person whom I am sorry to see join in such an unnatural combination, I have submitted to listen to the incomprehensible nonsense, by which the sacred name of the Deity has been profaned in the ridiculous farce, which you have just been acting: but I am not under the same obligation to bear with you."

“The resentment that flashed from her eyes, when she began to speak, had raised the apprehensions of the company, that she had not been sufficiently exorcised, which were too strongly confirmed by what she said: respect, however, if not perhaps fear, prevented their interrupting her, till a tame jack-daw that had got up to the top of the house happening to chatter as he fell down the chimney, just as she said these last words, they all thought the Juggler’s prophetick fears fulfilled; and that a legion of devils was coming to take possession of her, and falling upon their knees at the same instant, the Juggler began to run his lore over again in the most violent agitation; his superstitious imagination taking the general alarm, while the rest hung down their heads, nor dared to raise their eyes for fear of seeing some horrible sight.



C H A P. IX.

*The History of CÆLIA and STREPHON concluded.
The JUGGLER juggled; and the mystery cleared
up at last. Habit too powerful for conviction.
The advantage of making the first story good.*

“THIS doubled her distress, and almost communicated the infection to her. The terror glaring in all their ghastly looks, convinced her that there was something in their conduct more than she could comprehend, and that they did not act thus merely to insult and ridicule her as she had imagined. Unable there-fore

fore to resist her impatience to be informed in the meaning of it, she stepped up to her noble lover, for no one dared to hold her any longer, and addressing him with an earnestness that shewed the anxiety and astonishment of her soul, and added not a little to the affright of his, "To you, my lord, (said she) I apply for relief from an amazement and perplexity which torture me almost to madness. What means the violence which has been offered to me? What means this incomprehensible behaviour of all present? You have given me reason to imagine I held some place in your esteem; by that I adjure you not to let me burst in ignorance."

"Though his lordship's fright was little inferior to that of the oldest woman present, and scarce left him power to comply with her request, there was something so affecting in this application, that he could not resist it. "Madam (said he, looking earnestly at her as he arose from his knees) I hardly know how to obey your commands, for fear of giving you offence."

"Fear not, my lord, (answered she, impatiently) I ask for information, and desire to be told the truth."

"Then, madam, I am sorry to tell you that you were seized in the garden on an opinion of your being at that instant under the power of witchcraft, if not actually possessed by some evil spirit; and to deliver you from so dreadful a situation was and is the motive of that behaviour at which you seem to be so much surprised."

“ Bewitched! Possessed! Patience. Kind heaven, grant me patience! What can have given occasion to an opinion so basely infamous and absurd?”

“ Before he had time to reply, the unlucky jackdaw hopped from the chimney, and, without giving him any warning, perched upon the *Juggler’s* head, who happened to kneel very near with his back toward it, and at the same instant repeating the tremendous chatter, caught him by the nose, which was thrown up in his usual attitude, as he muttered over his incoherent ejaculations.

“ Such an attack was too dreadful to be borne. The affrighted wretch threw himself forward on the ground, and in the guilty terrors of his imagination, thinking all the devils of hell had laid hold on him to revenge the insolence of his pretending to an authority over them, roared out with all his might, “O spare me! Spare your poor servant, and I will never give you the least disturbance more! Never presume to offend you by mimicking a power which I too well know I am not possessed of! Do what you please with all the world beside, but spare your faithful indefatigable slave! Spare me at least for this time, and take me wholly when I die.”

“ His lordship, who by his having risen to answer the adjuration of his mistress, had an opportunity of seeing the cause of the poor *Juggler’s* fright, the ridiculousness of which opened his eyes to the absurdity of the whole scene, burst out into an immoderate fit of laughter, in which she joined him with all her power.

As soon as he was able to speak, “Never fear, doctor, (said he) I’ll insure you, for this time;

time; your master has given you the reprieve you desire, and left this honest jack-daw to witness the bargain."

"It is impossible to express the effect which this speech had upon all present. They instantly raised their heads, and turning their eyes to the prostrate *Juggler*, saw the jack-daw busied in tearing his wig, which had unluckily tangled about his claws.

"This sight instantly put an end to all their fears: they raised a peal of laughter that shook the room, which sufficiently informed the unfortunate juggler of his disgrace, who, rising from the ground in the utmost confusion, slunk away without daring to shew his face, especially as he had made such a fatal discovery of his ignorance and impostures, as it was impossible for his most inventive assurance and hypocrisy to extenuate.

"But the company was too intent upon other matters to take any farther notice of him. As soon as the tumult of their mirth, in which all strove to hide the remembrance of their past folly by their present loudness, had subsided, they made all possible apologies to the lady for their behaviour, and expressed the highest astonishment at their own weakness, in giving credit to such a ridiculous story, at the same time fixing their eyes upon his lordship as the author of it.

"This threw him into a very disagreeable situation. He saw that it was necessary for him to exculpate himself; but how to begin, or in what manner to do it, he was utterly at a loss.

The lady and he stood looking at each other thus, for some time, till at length her impatience made her break silence. "I hope, my lord, (said she) that you are satisfied with the success of your exorcism; and now that I am restored to myself, should be glad to know your lordship's reason for entertaining an opinion not only so injurious to me, but also so ridiculous in itself."

"Madam, (answered he, in the highest confusion) I see the absurdity of the scene in the strongest light; and should be sincerely glad that the removal of one difficulty convinced me, that the opinion which gave rise to it was as ill-grounded as I am sensible the consequences of that opinion have been ridiculous."

"For heaven's sake, what can that difficulty be, my lord? Speak! Speak without reserve! That delicacy which at other times is necessary, is improper in such cases as this, and must give place to plainness and sincerity."

"I mean, madam, those mysterious conversations which you hold in the shady walk, *you best know by what means*, with an absent person."

"*Means*, my lord!—*By what means!*—I don't understand you."

"Such conversations, madam, can be held only by the assistance of evil spirits, or under the illusion of fascination: this is what I mean, madam! And I wish I was not obliged to add, that your manner of acting, at the same time, was so extravagant, that nothing but being under some such unhappy influence can account for it."

It is not easy to conceive the confusion with which these words struck her. In the
faintness

flightiness of a warm imagination, she had considered this method of holding an ideal conversation, not only as innocent and safe from reprehension, but also as something of a refined and elevated nature, never suspecting its being subject to so ridiculous a construction, nor indeed giving herself time to reflect, that she must certainly be taken notice of one time or other; and some such wrong construction put upon it, as it was impossible that reason ever could suggest the most distant conjecture of the right.

“But her eyes were now opened, and she saw her folly in its most mortifying consequences. At first she was undetermined how to act, whether to attempt passing it off as no more than a milder whim of her own, without any meaning or design, or candidly to confess the whole; for she saw the indispensable necessity she was under to give some account or other of it.

“The difficulty was distressing; the latter must betray a mystery, which, as too sublime for common minds to comprehend, would only expose her to farther ridicule; and the former she thought would shew a levity and childishness which must bring her understanding in question.

“This reflection determined her. When once a woman entertains an opinion of her own understanding, there is nothing which she will not sacrifice to preserve it. “I find myself reduced, my lord, (said she, after some pause) to the disagreeable necessity of disclosing what I will own I had rather conceal. The conversations which have given occasion to all this folly

and disturbance, are so much out of the common way, that, to set them in a proper light, it will be necessary to trace them to their original."

"She then, in a few words, ingenuously told the whole, in the manner I have related; and, to confirm the truth of her account, produced several of her *friend's* letters, making appointments for, and fixing the subjects of their imaginary conversations.

"His lordship, who, from the circumstances he knew, though for obvious reasons he had thought proper to conceal his knowledge of them, was convinced that she had told the truth, asked her pardon in the politest manner for the part he had unwittingly acted in the affair, and was so charmed with her ingenuity, and the delicacy and sublimity of her sentiments, that he left her, ten times more in love than ever."

"But when he came in a cooler moment to reflect on the character of her *friend*, and the unhappy consequences of utter loss of reason, which such a flightiness of imagination might too probably end in, even though his other apprehensions could be removed, prudence prevailed upon him, to put a violence upon his inclinations, and break off, while it was yet in his power, so dangerous a connection.

"As to the lady, her mind was so much taken up with her darling folly, that instead of being cured of it by all this vexation and disgrace, she immediately gave her *friend* an account of the whole, and appointed a *meeting* that very evening in her closet, to enjoy a laugh together at so whimsical an affair.

"From

"From that time she has dreamed away her life in the manner you saw, an absolute blank in the creation, useless to herself and all the world; so unaccountable a story raising such a prejudice against her, that no one ever sought an alliance with her after.

"Nor were the consequences of it much less disagreeable to her *friend*. The *Juggler*, who was sensible that he had totally forfeited his influence in that family by the unfortunate adventure of the jack-daw, was resolved to obviate the effect of their telling the story, and be revenged for the mirth they had indulged at his expence, by making such a representation of the whole as should throw the burden entirely upon them.

"Accordingly, the very next morning, he entertained his flock with a most melan holy tale of a lady of distinction's being bewitched by a certain gentleman, and holding frequent conversations with him, in his absence, by the assistance of an evil spirit, under whose dominion he had put her; and how he himself had offered to deliver her by the power of his prayers; but that her friends, out of a perverse pride, had refused his assistance, and affected to make a jest of the affair; and then, with the highest appearance of piety and compassion for so deplorable a case, offered up a long and fervent prayer for her deliverance.

"This representation he knew would prepossess his followers in his favour, and prevent their giving credit to any thing that might be said to his disadvantage, however notorious and true: and though he did not directly tell the persons names, he, as if without design, gave

such a description of them, that no one could be at loss to know whom he meant.

“ This story, as he intended, was industriously propagated, with the advantage of such circumstances as every relater thought proper to add; in consequence of which not only the lady was ashamed to shew her face, but there was also such a prejudice raised against her *friend*, that for a long time he was insulted and reviled by the mob in the most opprobrious manner whenever he stirred out, and more than once was in danger of having his innocence put to the test of a *dipping*; the deformity of his person unhappily agreeing with the idea which the vulgar entertained of witches, and confirming their prejudice against him; while by this address of making good the first story, the secret by which he had so long supported himself against the force of numberless detections of the blackest nature, the *fugger* had the satisfaction to see his enemies overwhelmed with a stroke which he had so dexterously shifted from his own head.”



CHAP. X.

Different appearances of the same object seen in different lights. A whimsical representation of the last efforts of gallantry, with other no less curious matters.

“YOU may perhaps have a curiosity (continued the spirit) to see one who has acted a part in every respect so extraordinary as this gentleman. Behold him yonder; and acknowledge the power of a wit able to conquer the antipathies of nature, and make such a person the object of a tender passion.”

“The astonishment with which the sight of him struck me is not to be conceived. Though I was prepared to expect an appearance remarkably disagreeable, my imagination had never framed an idea of such absolute deformity as now met my eyes. The description would be too disgusting.” Turning from him hastily, “Is it possible, O my guide, (said I) that this can have been the object for whom that beautiful creature sacrificed her happiness? I have seen too many instances of the frailty and capriciousness of the female heart; but never did I think they could rise so high as this before.”

“View him again, (said he, touching my eyes with his wand) and then let me hear your sentiments.”

“O gracious spirit! (exclaimed I, in a transport) what lovely creature can this be? Such beauty never did my eyes behold before this moment. What grace! what elegance!—And then the unbounded generous benevolence!—That spirited sensibility and fire!—Sure he must be the master-piece of nature! Some favourite work of heaven, to shew mankind an instance of perfection.”

“Such is the light! (answered he with a smile, as he touched my eyes again with the wand, and restored the gentleman to his former appearance) such is the light in which his writings represent him; and so does the brilliancy of his wit dazzle the delighted imagination, and make his very defects appear perfections. I have given you this view of him, to convince you of the error of judging too hastily from the first appearance. Not that you are to give too implicit credit to this either. To form a proper judgment of a man, his actions must be considered; and though the motive may in reality often alter the intrinsic merit even of these, the error will be pardonable. Observe his present employment, and it will give you a just idea of his character. Such parts of his past life as may illustrate this, and afford instructive entertainment, I will afterwards draw a short sketch of.”

On turning my eyes then to the gentleman, I saw him in the most whimsical situation possible to be conceived. He was sitting up in his bed, wrapped in fannels, and supported by bolsters, with a writing-table before him, fixed upon a frame that stood across the bed, to prevent its bearing on his feeble knees.

On

On this lay an heap of love-letters, odes, and sonnets, the subjects of which were so ill suited to his condition, that they almost seemed to be a satire on it, at the same time that he perused them with an appearance of pleasure, which made his very infirmities ridiculous, every attempt at laughter being echoed by a groan, every feeble smile followed by a frown of agony.

As soon as he had read them through with attention, he reclined his head upon his shoulder, and, shutting his eyes, fell into a meditation on the manner in which he should answer them.

When he had mused for some moments in this posture, "*Sylvia!*—— (said he, thinking aloud) *Sylvia!*—Aye, she begins.—Raptures and fire for her!—*Damon* must press her home. Youth and luxuriant health require a bold address. The thought will warm me, elevate my fancy!—O my shoulder!—My back too!" Then calling to a servant, "Fetch me another blanket. The cold shoots through me. There! That will do!—So much for *Sylvia!* (continuing his former soliloquy) Who comes next?—*Corinna*.—Wanton baggage!—*Amoret* must woo in double entendre! Lewdness scarce wrapt in gauze must be his cue.—This cholic—Oh!—Some cordial! Fill the glass. O my bowels!—So. Now I'm better.—Then for *Pamela*. I'm tired of *Misfidrus*. I must drop her. That unimpassioned sentimental strain gives me the hip. I'd sooner write a sermon.—*Chloe!*—*Lucinda!*—*Phyllis!*—Aye. They'll come of course! I need not study much for them."

Having

Having ran over the list of his correspondents in this manner, he directly began to answer them, as fast as the frequent interruptions of his various pains and aches would permit.

It is inconceivable with what address and spirit he assumed all these different characters, in spite of the repugnancy of nature, in his enfeebled tortured state to every sensation of pleasure. Gay, grave, or loosely light, cold, amorous, pious, or profane, he was every thing to every one, according to the part he undertook.

The fatigue of such a task was too great. As soon as it was finished, his spirits failed him, and he sunk back upon the bed, where he lay in more than infant imbecility, while his servant removed the writing-table, and locked up his works.

“What think you now (said my guide) of the volubility of human genius?—Of the power of imagination to create its own happiness?”

“It is impossible (answered I) not to admire such abilities, though the use they are put to almost takes off their merit: for, what can be conceived more ridiculous and disgusting than to see old age mimicking the levities of youth, and pretending passions which it can no longer feel; passions too powerful of themselves without such irritation, and to which nature that makes their impulse irresistible prescribes mysterious privacy and restraint.”

“Yet such (replied the spirit) has been the constant business of his life, and to this foolish vicious vanity have abilities been prostituted, which proper application would have made an honour to himself, and an advantage to his

country.

country. Sometimes, it is true, he has broke the chains of this insatuation, and given instances of the most exalted powers and virtues of the human mind; but the force of habit soon sunk him down again to his former folly, and the glory of these short emersions, like lightening flashing through the darkness of the night, seemed only to shew his indolence in a more striking light.

“ You have seen the number of sonnets and epistles he has now wrote in varied characters, and to various persons, and justly reprehended the folly of an amusement so inconsistent with his present state, so much beneath his better reason.

“ But how much higher still will your indignation rise when you know, that of all those in writing to whom he thus consumes the few remaining moments of his life, two only have any existence out of his own imagination, *Calia* whom you have just now seen, and one more, whose vices have been a disgrace to her sex; though, to indulge his absurd vanity, he shews these labours of his folly as the genuine produce of a real correspondence.

“ The history of the former you already know; that of the other, though not so much out of common life, is filled with incidents which would afford abundant matter of entertainment, were they not foreign to our present purpose. One only in which this gentleman was concerned I will relate, as it illustrates his character in the strongest light.”



C H A P. XI.

Anecdotes of a celebrated female. A sencer foiled at his own weapons. Secret of a correspondence not so uncommon as unaccountable; with a striking instance of vicious vanity. A new scene.

“**T**HIS celebrated female was one whom her vices of every kind had reduced to the necessity of striving to subsist by stratagem, when debauchery had anticipated old age, and worn off the bloom of those beauties which had been the first cause of her fall, and the price of whose prostitution had since afforded her a wretched support.

“In the promiscuous acquaintance of such a life, she happened to fall into the company of this gentleman, and, readily forming an idea of his character, judged that he was a proper subject for her to try her talents on.

“Accordingly she wrote him a letter, professing a passion, the extraordinariness of which for such an object she palliated by praising the charms of his mind, and turning the imaginary advantages of external beauty into the most delicate and poignant ridicule; and proposing a correspondence, on condition of his giving her an inviolable assurance, that he never would take any methods to find her out, as it was absolutely impossible for them to have any personal intercourse whatsoever, gave him an address, by which she took care it should not be in his power to trace her.

“This

" This was attacking him at his own weapons. The vivacity and wit displayed in her letter, for nature had been as liberal to her in the endowments of mind as in the beauties of form, and her way of life, which had worn out the latter, served only to polish and give a keenness to the former, surprised and charmed him beyond expression. Beside, mystery doubles the pleasure of intrigue, by giving scope to the imagination incessantly to frame new schemes of delight, and keeping the attention always fixed. He therefore readily accepted her offer, and began a correspondence, in the course of which he raised his desires so high, for he was not then quite sunk into his present state of decrepitude, and played with them so artfully, sometimes seeming to discover an inclination, and then starting difficulties as from virtue, and giving equivocal hints of dependence in her circumstances, that she led him insensibly to make her most liberal offers, if she would only indulge him with an interview on terms of the strictest honour; and, to remove every doubt of the sincerity of his intentions, signed his proposal regularly with his own name, the correspondence between them having been till then carried on under the fictitious ones of *Corydon* and *Phyllis*.

" Though this was directly what she aimed at, she still affected difficulties, and expressed doubts to preserve appearances, and draw him to explain and confirm his proposals beyond a possibility of retraction or evasion; and then at length complied with his desire of an interview, with all the diffidence of virgin modesty, the

coy, reluctant, amorous delay of unexperienced young desire.

“ Raised to the highest pinnacle of expectation by this management, his astonishment may be easily conceived, when he met an old acquaintance at the place of assignation. His disappointment was so great, that he stared at her for some moments before he could believe his senses.

“ But she soon convinced him that he was no longer under a mistake. Throwing herself at his feet, she conjured him to pardon a deception which necessity and hopeless love equally suggested; and, wretched as he must know her circumstances to be, offered to return him all his letters, and depend entirely on his generosity, if he would only allow her to enjoy personally that place in his esteem which he had honoured her correspondence with; and appealed to all her letters, if she had been guilty of any other deceit than that tacite one of not revealing herself directly; or had given him just reason to form any particular expectation from this meeting, in which he could say he was disappointed.

“ She was sufficiently acquainted with him to be convinced of her safety, in making this offer. His ample fortune raised him above regard to money; and no human heart ever glowed with a more benevolent readiness to dispense it to the relief of the distressed. Beside, should he shew any design to take an ungenerous advantage of this confidence, there was a material difference between actually giving up his letters, and making such an offer, which she could easily retract.

“It was some time before he recovered himself sufficiently to give her an answer. At length, having weighed every circumstance dispassionately, he raised her from the ground, and smiling, with a beneficence that dissipated all her doubts, “Make no apology, madam, (said he) for a device that has afforded me the highest pleasure I have ever enjoyed. All mankind wears a mask; and happy are they to whom the pulling it off proves no greater disadvantage. If I have shewn any surprize at seeing you, it was only at my own inattention, that had not before discovered the beauties of your mind in so much conversation as we have had together.”

“He then assured her of his friendship, and in return for the generous offer she had made him of restoring his letters, gave her a considerable sum of money, to settle her affairs; which she preferred to an annuity, that might prove precarious.”

“Since that time she has been, though privately, his principal correspondent in different characters, which she assumes with as much ease as himself, to give variety and afford matter for agreeable surprize, the pleasure of which he never fails to reward liberally on the discovery: thus she is the *Cynthia*, *Chloe*, *Constantia*, *Phryne*, *Phyllis*, &c. of his muse; and indeed sends him all the letters he shews with such ostentation as from different persons, except those he often does himself the honour of writing to himself, *Cælia*’s being in general too particular for publick inspection.

“In one instance only has their correspondence been made public, which was by her addressing

dressling to him a specious apology for the particular vice of her profession, in which she lessens the merit, if not denies the necessity, of the opposite virtue that has ever been esteemed the indispensable test of female honour. His accepting such an address at a time of life when the subject of it was meer matter of speculation to him, is a strong though not uncommon instance of the force of vicious habit, which can thus influence old age to a ridiculous vanity of insinuating a taste for the most reprehensible pleasures of youth, by countenancing them in theory, after the practice is become impossible.

“ But the greatest danger of this infatuation is, when it fixes upon a particular object. Its force, which before was weakened by dispersion, is then collected into one point, and the extravagance of its effects encreases in proportion as the abilities for its gratification fail.”

“ Observe that person walking in deep meditation, by the side of yonder stream. The situation he is in at this very moment is one of the most striking instances nature has ever shewn of the difficulty of shaking off the ascendancy which loose, lascivious blandishments and female artifice will insensibly gain over the heart, in spite of the strongest admonitions of reason and virtue.

“ While he is forming a resolution, on his steadiness, in which depends the crisis of his fate, I'll give you a few general sketches of his past life, as far as is necessary to explain his present perplexity.”



C H A P. XII.

Account of a remarkable person. Common consequences of a common connection. The scene changed. A good partner often helps out a bad game.

“HIS youth opened with every prospect of happiness and glory, which an exalted rank and the most promising abilities of mind could present; nor did his rising years disappoint the most sanguine hopes formed of him, till an unlawful passion, after his shadow had begun to lengthen in the vale of life, poisoned his domestic peace, and gave his mind a looser turn.

“Happening to go to one of the scenes of public entertainment with which this place abounds, he was struck with something in the appearance of one of the female performers. Curiosity to know whether her conversation was equally agreeable with her looks prompted him to intimate a desire of sitting half an hour in her company, after her performance was ended. His rank raised him above refusal; she received his invitation as an honour, and exerted her powers of pleasing to such advantage, that, though he had not the least intention of entering into any particular connection with her when he desired this interview, before they parted he proposed to her to quit her present precarious occupation, and live with him.

The

“The beauties of such persons, as well as their talents, are too often venal. She complied with joy; and fashion, if not absolutely justifying such indulgencies, at least making them pass uncensured, he not only received her publickly in the character of his mistress, but also, to remove every obstacle to his pleasure, procured her profligate husband an employment in one of the distant colonies; who readily made the infamous though advantageous exchange of an abandoned wife, for an independent subsistence.

“When a woman of this cast once gets admission into a man’s heart, she leaves no artifice untried to gain the absolute dominion of it. Hers were too successful. By her insinuating address she soon improved the influence of her charms to such a degree, as to be an over-match for reason in all his resolves, and in some measure to become the sovereign arbitress of his fate.

“Virtue makes many struggles before it will entirely give up an heart of which it once has had possession; of this the perplexity in which you behold him at present is a signal proof. Surfeited with the tumultuous gratification of loose desire he languishes for the pure tranquil happiness of connubial love. On this important occasion prudence and inclination have gone hand in hand in directing his choice, of the success of which reason sees no room to doubt. The only difficulty is, to break the chains of his present unhappy connection, as the generous delicacy of his heart will not permit him to put on an appearance of dislike, or exert an authority over one absolutely in his power, and who has alw.

is

is too firmly attached to her own interest to understand the milder hints of rejection which he has of late given her. The throws of such an heart in this trying conflict may be worthy of attention."

Just as the spirit said this, the person of whom he spoke stopped short, and knitting his brow, as if in the act of forming some important resolution, "It shall be so! (said he, with vehemence, and slapping his right hand upon his heart) It shall be so; I'll shake off this disgraceful infatuation, and return once more to the deserted paths of virtue and of glory."—At these words a blush of conscious indignation overspread his face; and his eyes sparkled with the ardour of a resolution which instantly enlivened all his frame.

He was prevented from pursuing his meditations any farther by the approach of a person, the sight of whom seemed to double his emotion. This was he to whom the education of his youth had been most worthily entrusted, and who had for some time felt the most poignant grief, at seeing the fruits of all his anxious care blasted by the baleful influence of this passion, though respect for his superior station had hitherto kept him silent on so delicate a subject.

But he was no longer able to contain himself. A sense of duty over-balanced all regard to forms, and he resolved to acquit himself of the sacred office of a friend, by shewing so destructive an error in its proper light, be the consequence never so disagreeable to him. With this resolution he had followed him hither, when the gentleman advancing to meet him, anticipated the painful attempt. "My friend (said

(said he, embracing him with ardour,) my friend is come in an happy moment to confirm the resolution of my soul: I see at length the fatal error into which I have unwarily fallen, and am determined to avoid its snares for the future. That wretched woman shall no longer lead my heart astray."—

"Hear, gracious heaven! (said the good old man, dropping upon his knees and raising his hands and eyes in extasy), and ratify that resolution."—Then catching his hand, and pressing it eagerly to his lips, "O my friend!—my son!"—sobbed he, while the big tears rolled down his reverend cheeks, and choaked his utterance.

Such eloquence was not to be resisted. "My friend!—my father!" answered the gentleman, falling insensibly on the good man's neck, and mingling tears of piety and joy in the honest over-flowing of his heart.

After some moments spent in this silent rapture, "Infatuated wretch that I was (said the gentleman, raising the other tenderly in his arms) to slight the friendly admonitions which my conscious soul read in thy troubled looks: how could I give that worthy heart such pain!"

"Name it not, my son (answered he, in a voice of extasy) think not of any thing that I have suffered. This blessed account of thy return to virtue has amply overpaid it all. May heaven enable you to keep this sacred resolution so worthy of your truly-noble heart; and I have nothing more to wish for in this life."

"Fear not! (replied the gentleman) your friend shall never act unworthy of himself again! shall never more disgrace your virtuous care.
This

This is not a sudden gust of passion. Reason and virtue, which have inspired the thought, will bear me through the execution. Never will I enter yonder monument of my folly, (pointing to a sumptuous house which he had built for his mistress) till the forcerefs is removed. The enchantment under which she held me is at last dissolved, and I am my own master again: nor is this all; I will go this minute, and offer my heart and hand to one who will do honour to my choice: you shall accompany me, plead for your friend, and be surety for the immoveable firmness of my resolution, my truth, and honour. A servant can deliver a mandate of my dismissal to that unhappy creature."

"Saying this, he stepped into his chariot, which he had ordered to attend him there; and taking the venerable old man with him, drove to the lady's house, on whom he had in secret fixed to be the partner of his life, where he urged his suit so powerfully, and was so well assisted by his advocate, that as reason could suggest no objection to the fair one, and her heart really felt none from inclination; she shewed her assent to his proposal as far as was consistent with the forms observed on such delicate occasions.

"Flushed with this success, as soon as ever he went to his own house, he sent a peremptory message to his mistress, to quit her present habitation directly, and retire to some other better suited to her condition, promising to make such a provision for her future support as should place her above the temptations of necessity; in which he found her, if her ready obedience to this order,

THE REVERIE.

and regular conduct for the remainder of her life should merit such a favour. In a cooler moment, he would have found it difficult to send so harsh a message; but his spirits were now up, and he could think of nothing but the happiness he had in view in his intended marriage.

“ This was a stroke for which his mistress was quite unprepared. Her astonishment therefore at receiving such an order may be easily conceived. At first she doubted the authenticity of it, and threatened the servant with his master's severest wrath for such an insolent abuse of his name: but when his persisting in it convinced her of the fallacy of such an hope, she resolved to try all possible means to avert the misfortune; and as she was free from every attachment of personal regard that might have made grief disturb her mind, her ready genius soon suggested the most effectual one to her.

“ Accordingly, the first thing she did was to gain the servant to her interest by a considerable bribe, and promises of farther favour, when this storm should blow over; the sudden, and groundless violence of which, shewed, she said, that it could not last; and then giving him instructions what to say to his master, prepared to act her own part in this important scene, according to the success he met with.

“ The gentleman, as soon as the servant returned, naturally enquired how she had received his message: “ Sir, (said the fellow, who had put on a melancholy look, and now sighed as from the bottom of his heart) she at first could scarce believe what I said; but when I had removed

THE REVERIE. 243

moved her doubt, she lifted up her eyes for some moments without speaking a word, and then fell into a fit, from which I thought she never would recover: however, she came to herself at last; and when a shower of tears had given her heart some ease, and she was able to speak, "Tell your master, said the dear lady, as she sat upon the floor, that it is my duty to obey his orders, be they what they will; though I little thought ever to have received such as these, and in so scornful and cruel a manner. Sure he might have spoke to me himself, without exposing me to servants! But I have no right to complain: God bless him and prosper him in all his ways;"—and then she wept again, and wrung her hands in such a agony it would have melted an heart of stone.—Saying this, the fellow wiped his eyes which had been well onioned for the purpose, and hung down his head, as if he was overcome with grief.

"It is impossible to describe the gentleman's situation when he received this account. He was affected by her distress in the severest manner. The generous humanity of his heart would have shared in the sufferings of his greatest enemy, what then must he have felt at those of one whom he had so lately been accustomed to think of with the tenderest regard! His delicacy also was hurt at having sent such a message in such a manner, and he disdained the thought of exerting authority with rigour, where resistance was impossible. In a word, though his resolution was not absolutely overturned, he secretly began to wish, that he had not been so precipitate in putting it in execution.

“The servant saw the conflict in his heart; and, faithful to the trust he had basely undertaken, as soon as he was dismissed from his presence, flew to acquaint her with it.



CH A P. XIII.

Looking back often dangerous. Female artifice triumphant over reason and virtue. The natural consequences of this. A remarkable instance of the effect of complying with the fashion.

“THIS account confirmed her wavering hopes; she resolved not to lose a moment, but strive to improve the impression which her associate had thus fortunately made in her favour, before the unknown motive of her disgrace should have time to counteract it. Accordingly she went directly to his house, and as he had not taken the precaution to forbid her admission, rushed into the room where he was, in a well-imitated phrenzy, threw herself at his feet, and embraced his knees, in all the apparent agony of heart which the fondest despair could dictate, before he could possibly prevent her.

“There is nothing more dangerous than looking back to former scenes of pleasure; it softens the mind, and makes it long for a repetition of them. The account of her distress had awakened his compassion, and he was undesignedly running over all the engaging qualities and soft endearments which had given him
such

such delight the very moment she entered the room.

If the description could affect him so strongly, what then must he not feel from the sight? He was not proof to such an attack. All his resolution vanished in an instant; he raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, restored her to the empire of his heart with tenfold the authority she had possessed before.

"The only difficulty that remained was how to break off his engagements with the lady, whom he had just paid his addresses to in so serious and public a manner: as for his friend, he concluded rightly, that after this relapse he should never see him more.

"He was not long at a loss. Even in so delicately distressing an affair as this, his soul detested dissingenuity, and he resolved to make her admire his candour at least, though she might blame his fickleness. Accordingly he wrote her a letter next morning, to tell her, that upon examining his heart more nearly, he found another had taken such strong possession of it, that it was not in his power to give it with his hand; wherefore he thought the latter alone unworthy of her acceptance, nor should presume to press the offer of it any farther.

"The lady's indignation was equal to her surprize, at so despicable an instance of levity: she thought it beneath her to return an answer to such a letter, or take any notice of the writer; to shew her perfect indifference and contempt for whom she soon after listened to the addresses of another.

"As for him, his condition became worse than ever. According to the common though mis-

taken notion of over-bearing contempt, he gloried in his disgraceful folly, which he carried to ten times more extravagant excesses than before; while she, convinced that he had now fastened his chains too strongly ever to be shaken off, returned his fondness with indifference, and at the very time that she was making him the dupe of her mercenary designs, took every occasion of treating him with insolence and tyranny.

"The consequence of this was natural. Destitute of domestic peace, robbed of the approbation of his own mind, and conscious of the contempt of every man of sense and virtue, he grew careless of himself, his affairs ran to confusion and ruin, and his name became a by-word among all his acquaintances."——

"O my guide, (said I, shocked at so deplorable a fall) how powerful are the wiles of woman! How dangerous is it for a man to let her get an ascendancy over him? If once he resigns the reins which nature wisely put into his hands, I see that it is impossible for him ever to resume them again, and assert the just prerogatives of his superior station!"

"It may perhaps be too much to say that it is absolutely impossible; (answered he) though many circumstances concur to make the attempt most difficult. Presuming on his greater strength, man thinks it beneath him to be upon his guard against her, till she has taken such firm possession of her authority, that it appears less painful to suffer, than struggle to shake off a tyranny whose chains are riveted so fast. Or, should he venture on the attempt, she makes her very weakness a defence, and expects

pects to be let conquer, because she is unable to resist, throwing herself upon a generosity to which her own heart is a stranger. The event is generally more favourable than she deserves; and a false tenderness permits her to retain a power which false security first gave her an opportunity to usurp.

“ But the severest case is to be governed by a woman who is herself a slave to any particular vice, or folly. To break the double chain is a difficulty few have resolution to attempt; and fewer have attempted with success.

“ Of this you may behold a striking instance in yonder house, which presents you with a scene of such confusion. That gentleman whom you see in all the apparent agitation of the most determined wrath, gave his heart and hand together to the lovely woman who sits beside him melted into tears. The advantage of the match, according to the mercenary maxim which prevails at present, was on her side; but love overlooked such mean considerations, and he thought his elevated rank received honour from her participation.

“ Her heart felt all the ardour of so generous a passion; she devoted herself entirely to his happiness, and, by her obsequious attention to every motion of his will, gained such an influence over him, that he soon forgot he had any will of his own, and resigned himself absolutely and solely to her direction, pleased with a yoke which fondness would not let him feel the weight of.

“ From the first dawn of reason in her mind, she had ever expressed the strongest dislike to the idle drudgery of play; but now the tyrant-

ny of fashion obliged her to give into a practice which was become the cement of society, the general business of genteel life. Example can soften prejudice, and habit even reconcile antipathies. The reluctance with which she complied with this custom soon wore off, and she entered into the very spirit of gaming with an avidity that exceeded her former aversion.

“ Her husband, whose heart happily was untainted with this fatal vice, was alarmed at a madness which he saw in all its dreadful consequences. He knew the rich must always lose; the numbers who are destitute of any other means of subsistence, beside their expertness in the mysteries of play, making a property of their folly; and experience had shewn him to what black expedients women will have recourse to repair their losses, how debts of honour are too often paid with honour itself. He resolved therefore to take the first opportunity to warn her against indulging a passion, the apprehension of whose consequences gave him so much pain; judging that his advice would have more weight when it should seem to arise from some immediate cause, than if obtruded abruptly, or offered only in cool speculation.

“ Nor did he long wait for the occasion he desired. Observing an uncommon uneasiness in his wife's looks one morning as they sat alone at breakfast, he enquired what was the cause of it, with all the tender anxiety of love. A guilty blush overspread her face; she hung down her head in the utmost confusion, and could scarce find spirit to say, on the most earnest entreaty, that she had lost a sum of money at play the night before, which she could not pay with-

without his assistance, her private stipend, ample as his love had made it, having all sunk in the same gulph before.

“ The pain she evidently felt at making this discovery, flattered him with an hope that she would for ever after avoid the occasion of it. He therefore would not aggravate her concern by saying any thing just then ; but giving her the money she had lost, and an additional supply for her own necessary occasions, told her, with a look of inexpressible tenderness, that she should never feel any uneasiness in his power to remove.

“ However, not entirely to miss so favourable an opportunity, he took occasion next morning, from some late occurrences of a similar kind among his own acquaintances, to express his disapprobation of that pernicious practice in the strongest terms, and drew the consequences of it in so black a light, that, unable to bear the reproaches of her own conscience, she burst into tears, and, falling on her knees, implored his pardon in the most affecting manner.

“ Rejoiced at this behaviour, which he thought a proof of her concern for what she had informed him of the day before, and an happy assurance of her never falling into the same error any more, he raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, told her he had not spoken in allusion to any thing past, which he had thought no more of since, and hoped that no future instance of the kind should ever recal it to his remembrance.

“ This was more than she was able to bear. She sunk down upon her knees again, and, as soon as a flood of tears had given her utterance,

owned in terms of the warmest contrition, that, tempted by an hope of recovering her former loss, she had ventured to play again the night before, but with the same success, having not only lost all the money he had given her, but added considerably to her debt also.



CHAP. XIV.

Worse luck, and more of it. A new method for breaking a bad habit. Travellers often return without their errand.

“THE husband’s astonishment and distress at this unexpected news may be easily conceived. He stood some moments before he had power to speak. At length, raising her from the ground, though not with the same emotions as before, “I had flattered myself, my dear, (said he with a serious look, and accent of reproof) that the concern you shewed yesterday secured me from any more follies of this kind; but I see I was mistaken. However, I will pay your debts once more; but remember, I tell you, this is the last time I shall do so. My fortune, though sufficient with prudence and œconomy to support the dignity of my rank, is not equal to such boundless dissipation, by which I may be ruined before I am aware. Nor is this all; other consequences too often follow this passion, the remotest apprehensions of which I cannot bear.

“*Distang*

“ Distant as this insinuation was, it struck her to the soul. Though she was confident of her own virtue, too many melancholy instances shewed that in the general it was not unjustly founded. She begged that he would have a more favourable opinion of her, implored again his pardon for what was past, and promised in the strongest terms never to give him the same cause of displeasure more. This was all he desired; he directly gave her the money; and, throwing his arms around her neck, sealed her forgiveness with a kiss of rapture.

“ It is a just observation, that vices take the deepest root in weakest minds. This accounts for the common remark that woman, when once she goes astray, is more profligate and harder to be reclaimed than man. Of all the passions which mark the character of the present age, that which runs into the most extravagant and incorrigible excess, even in the ablest minds, is this of gaming; what havock then must such a tyrant make where it scarce meets any opposition from reason? How difficult must it be to break its chains?

“ She had promised more than she was able to perform. The love of play had taken too fast hold of her heart ever to be entirely expelled, and in a very little time drew her into the same distress again, with this additional aggravation, that she knew not how to apply to her husband for relief, as she had formerly done. But such an affair could not long remain concealed from his knowledge. Her creditor, on two or three breaches of promise, applied to him directly for it by letter. What he felt on receiving such a demand is not to be described. He answered

M 6

coldly,

coldly, that he would enquire into the affair, and then went to his wife's father to ask his advice, how he should wean her from so dangerous an habit, telling him the preceding circumstances without exaggeration or excuse.

“ The father's wrath arose almost to madness at such an account. He proposed methods which were not only improper, but even impossible to be pursued; and treated her husband's proposal of removing her from the temptation, as there was no probability of reclaiming her otherwise from the folly, as an instance of unmanly weakness rather than the effect of prudent moderation and tender affection: however, as his passion cooled, he was obliged to yield to the justice of his arguments; and he undertook to enforce her obedience by his authority, should she attempt to oppose her husband, whose love made him dissident of his own resolution in so delicate a struggle.

“ To avoid a contest that must be equally disagreeable to them all, they judged it would be the best way to give her the first intimation of the design, in such a manner as should convince her that it must be in vain for her to oppose it. Accordingly, as her husband and she were sitting at breakfast next morning, when the news-paper was brought in as usual, the first glance she cast on it presented her with an advertisement, (placed in the most conspicuous part of it for that purpose) giving notice of a speedy sale of all her husband's coaches, horses, furniture, &c. who intended to go and reside abroad with his whole family for some years.”

“ Starting

"Starting in astonishment, " Good God, my dear, (said she) look here! what can this mean?—

"To pay this demand," (said he sternly, pulling her creditor's letter out of his pocket, and reaching it to her.)

"It is impossible to describe her situation at this sight. Conscious guilt deprived her of power to speak or move. She stood petrified with shame and horror."

"I am sorry, madam, (continued he) that you have driven me to this extremity; but I will not sacrifice my fortune, if not perhaps worse, by staying any longer in this place."

"O, forgive me!—Try me!—Try me but once more!—I promise"—She was unable to say any more, a gush of tears choked her utterance; which he waited for her to give full vent to before he would pursue his purpose any farther. In this critical situation you behold them at present, your own observation of their conduct in which will be more satisfactory than any description. Take notice only, that his wrath is worked up to this height by art, and that his resolution is scarcely proof to the sight of her distress; while, on the other hand, vexation glissens through her tears, and shews that she is less grieved for the cause than alarmed for the consequence of his displeasure, which she is this very moment casting about how to evade."

When my guide had concluded this account, I fixed my attention on the scene which had given occasion to it. The first violence of the lady's grief had begun by this time to subside, which her husband thinking the proper moment

to make an impression on her: "Madam, (said he, replying to her last words) my resolution is unalterably fixed; you know what faith I ought to place in promises."

The reproach implied in these words stung her pride. She had been too long accustomed to receive implicit obedience to every thing she said, to bear such an affrontive insinuation passively, and resolved to shew that she would not give up her authority so easily. Rising therefore in an instant above her suppliant mood, "I know too, sir, (said she, with an indignant air) that I am not your slave, nor to be forced to any thing against my will. You may keep your resolution, and go if you please, mine is to stay; nor shall you find it less unalterable than your own."

"Madam! madam! this false spirit ill becomes you; nor think it will avail. Your tears were far more powerful; but all are now in vain; and I will be obeyed." With these words he left the room, proud of having supported his resolution so manfully, and went to give orders for the immediate execution of his design.

But she was far from thinking of obedience yet. Her heart was so wedded to the pleasures of her present way of life, that she looked on leaving it as the severest punishment. Beside, her pride was piqued by the authority with which he spoke; and she resolved to suffer the worst effects of his anger rather than to submit to a yoke which she thought she had so effectually shaken off.

When

When she had formed this resolution, the next difficulty was how to execute it. The first thought that occurred to her was, to throw herself upon the fondness of her father, whose indulgence she had ever experienced in the most unlimited degree, and did not doubt but she should find equally on the present occasion. She accordingly flew to him directly, and, pouring out the anguish of her heart before him, implored his protection against her husband's lawless tyranny.

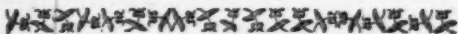
Not to appear prejudiced by any former misrepresentation, he heard her story with the greatest attention; and then, condemning her from her own mouth, flew into a rage a thousand fold severer even than her husband's, upbraiding her with ingratitude to his love, and disobedience to his just authority; and drawing her crime, and the too probable consequences of it in such dreadful lights, that, terrified at the horrid representation, she gave up all farther thoughts of opposition, and only besought her father to mediate a peace, on condition of her absolute obedience in every action of her future life.

Such a reconciliation was easily effected; he desired no more, but paid her debt directly: and all things being prepared for their departure as soon as possible, he set out on his intended exile, taking his whole family with him, in hope that a passion which had given him so much uneasiness would wear off, when the opportunity for gratifying it should be restored.

But, like the wounded hart, the more the deadly arrow is healed, and, though she complied, being not help it, the re-formation

256 THE REVERIE:

formation intended by this harsh expedient was far from being probable. The poison had taken too fast hold to be cured by any change of climate, and she languished to return to her own country, only that she might return to her beloved pleasure; while her husband thus sacrificed to a vain hope the flower of a life which his exalted rank and abilities might have made an honour to himself, and an advantage to his country.



C H A P. XV.

Anecdotes of a professed wit. A lucky hit made the most of. Too much of one thing won't do. A rough retort of a coarse jest; with other curious matters of the same kind.

“YOU see (said my guide) the consequence of indulging a passion, till the gratification of it becomes an habit; though there may be but few actually so fatal as this of gaming, the excess of any other will be attended by effects far from desirable, and end in ridicule at least, if not in ruin.

“Observe that man who stands in yonder coffee-house, pumping his brain for pleasantry, and labouring for wit to entertain the sneering croud around him; whose fulsome compliments and ironical applause pass upon his vanity for a tribute justly due to his merit. He is one of your professed wits, whose good opinion of them-

themselves makes them think every one obliged to admire what they say.

“ He was raised to this eminent station by the success of a ballad he wrote some time ago, of which it may be difficult to determine whether its merit lay in its oddity, its obscenity, or its profaneness. However, the thing took with the public taste in so extraordinary a manner, that the happy author not only got the price of a new coat by the sale of it, but was also admitted to the tables of all those who liked such buffoonery, to entertain them, and their company; where, having an eye to business, he always took the opportunity when they were in high spirits and could refuse nothing, to solicit subscriptions for a collection of *old saws* which he had picked up and tagged some how together, by which artifice he contrived to make a good penny of them also.

“ Elevated with this success, he thought he had nothing more to do but publish a *second part of the same tune*, to make his fortune at once; but, to his great mortification, he found himself mistaken; for, the novelty that recommended the former being now worn off, there was little or no notice taken of it: beside, he had exhausted the spirit of obscenity and profaneness so thoroughly in the first part, that there remained nothing for him now but dregs, too coarse for the grossest taste, though he strove to make up for the quality by the quantity, of which he gave most plentiful measure.

“ Severe as this disappointment was to him in every respect, he affected not to feel it; but, modestly imputing it to the badness of the public taste, takes the liberty, by way of reprisal, to turn

turn every thing that it approves into ridicule, with a petulance little short of scurrility; and, to support the character of a privileged wit, never misses an opportunity of being impertinent to every person he converses with.

“Such a conduct cannot always escape reproof; some, and those severe strokes of it, he frequently meets from those who have not a taste for his jokes, or do not think that a pretence to wit gives a privilege for ill manners. An instance or two may not be unentertaining, and may also give you a notion of the dangers which attend such a practice.

“Talking away the other evening at his usual rate, in a mixed company, one of his random-shots happened to hit the profession of a gentleman present. As there was nothing in what he said more than common cant, the other, who was a man of years and character, would not have thought it worthy of his notice, had not our hero at the same instant looked him full in the face, and burst out into a loud laugh.

“As this was fixing the stroke rather too close to be overlooked, the gentleman gravely asked him what he laughed at, as he really could not see the wit of what he said. “Not see it, sir, (said the other, starting from his seat and going up close to him) then, sir, you may smell it, if your nose is not as dull as your apprehension;” and letting a great f——t, raised a louder laugh than before.

“This was an insult too grossly personal to be borne. The gentleman rose up, and, without saying a word, gave him a kick on the offending part, that drove him to the other side of the room.

room, and then, ringing the bell, coolly ordered the waiter to turn that stinking cur down stairs. This naturally turned the laugh to the other side. The unfortunate wit had occasion, for all his assurance, to stand it; and the poor efforts he made to turn it off with a joke only shewed his impotent vexation, and made him appear, if possible, still more ridiculous.

“The proper province of wit is, to discover and point out a relation and resemblance in some particular circumstances, between ideas obviously inconnected and unlike; and by that means shew them in a light the novelty and oddity of which may give a pleasing surprize. To do this, the mind must be endowed with a power of viewing a variety of things in all their shapes and situations at the same instant, and a readiness at catching those fugitive resemblances, and shewing them in obvious and striking colours.

“Thus far reason can trace the origin and effects of a faculty, equally misunderstood and misapplied; or, I might rather say, indeed, whose name is usurped by another of the most contrary nature: for instead of this speculative manner of exertion, and the inoffensive and delicate entertainment arising from it, the employment of what is at present called wit, is to discover and invent personal misfortunes and defects, and display them in the grossest lights of ridicule and insult, as the pleasure which it gives arises from the basest and most malignant motive, that of a man’s feeling a secret satisfaction on seeing that others are as bad as himself, or perhaps suffer a disgrace which he escapes.

“But

“ But generally as this pleasure is enjoyed, the authors of it always meet a just return of aversion and contempt for that prostitution of their abilities, by which they afford it. This is not so strange or ingrateful as it may appear. As those who can have a taste for such entertainment are conscious that they themselves are liable to be made the subjects of it to others, they naturally fear and hate the persons who may possibly bring them into so disagreeable a situation.

“ Thus the moment a man professes himself a *wit*, he, as it were, declares war with all the rest of the world ; as in return every one lies on the watch to pull down and punish so invidious a presumption. Of this he continually meets the most mortifying instances, to which the means he is obliged to make use of to support such a character, lay him constantly and defencelessly open.

“ Beside this kind of wit, which preys upon particulars, there is another more malignant in its effects, because more extensive ; though motives of the same ungenerous nature with those which recommend the other, make it pass almost uncensured even by the injured objects of it, who are afraid to complain for fear their seeming to feel its force should be taken for an acknowledgment of its justice, and so make the injury irremediable. This is turning *professions* into ridicule ; by which means individuals are precluded from the fruits of their honest industry, and the community robbed of their contribution towards the general stock : for, however absurd a prejudice raised in that manner may appear to reason, experience shews

too

too many unhappy instances of its influence to admit its being doubted.

“ But though the sufferers do not think proper to complain, they never miss an opportunity of returning an attack they so severely feel; and many a *wit* has paid dearly for his pleasantry, when he has happened to come into the power of those whom he has so irreconcilably offended. Of this the person before us lately experienced an instance, disagreeable enough to surfeit him of this his very favourite practice as long as he lives.

“ Of the many professions which he has wantonly fallen upon, the medical art has felt the severest sallies of his uncommon turn for ridicule. As he was riding one day to pay a visit to a nobleman, who had desired him to come in that manner, that he might take a view of the extensive and grand improvements about his seat, the heat of the day, and his being unused to that method of travelling, exposed him to some injuries which made his sitting on a saddle very painful to him.

“ While he was in this distress, he happened to go by the house of an apothecary on whom he had exerted his unlucky talents with the most injurious success, having fixed his general ridicule of the profession upon him, by a particular description of his person irresistibly ridiculous. Without thinking of this, or dreading any retaliation from a resentment so justly provoked, he called upon him, and, making known his complaint, desired his assistance.

“ The apothecary, whose disposition was equally spiteful and droll, resolved not to miss such an opportunity of taking a signal revenge
for

for all the mortifications which the other had brought upon him: Accordingly he desired him to alight for a moment, with all the placid politeness of his profession, and made him up two plaisters, one of which he himself most officiously applied to the part affected, directing him to put on the other when that should come off; and, refusing to take any return for a piece of service which he assured him the pleasure of conferring amply overpaid, wished him an agreeable ride.

“The plaister had the desired effect, and he felt no farther pain during the rest of his journey; at the end of which, finding that the motion of the horse had rubbed it off, he took an opportunity to step aside, just before he went to dinner, and put on the other, as he had been directed. The first application of this was attended with sensations far from pleasing; however, he thought that must proceed from his being more chafed than before, and concluding that they would soon go off, went directly in to dinner, where, as if fortune combined with his foe, he was placed between two young ladies, equally sprightly and arch.

“He had not been seated long before the plaister began to operate, in a manner that made him sincerely sick of his honourable situation. He was in torture impossible to be supported; and what added to his distress, he knew not how to get away to remove the cause of it, conscious that the discovery of a trick he was now sufficiently sensible had been played him, would fix a ridicule upon him, which he should never be able to shake off, as he had had too many proofs of the pleasure
sure

sure every body took in every thing that gave him the least vexation or disgrace. This made him resolve to sit it out, intolerable as the pain he suffered was.

“ But he had more plagues to encounter than his utmost forecast could provide against. The ladies between whom he sat soon saw that he was in some uneasiness, and resolved, with the usual good-nature of the sex, to aggravate it, for their own entertainment, by every teasing trick they could devise. Accordingly, winking to each other to act in concert, they drew their chairs closer to him, so as to make it impossible for him to stir, which necessity was now beginning to make him think of, in spite of all his resolutions, and made the most malicious conjectures at his want of his usual mirth and spirit; to awake which they pushed him from side to side with their elbows, though every time he moved upon his chair pierced him to the soul.

“ The effects of the plaister were by this time become so violent, that nature was no longer able to support them. He fainted away in the midst of the company, and was removed to another room, to undergo a scene of raillery and ridicule, if possible more severe than his pain.



C H A P. XVI.

Instances of the compassion common on such occasions. The practical joker enjoys a double triumph over the wit. Other worse consequences of the prostitution of genius.

“THE first thing that struck him when he came to himself was the ridiculousness of his situation. He was laid on his face, across a bed, in the midst of a number of servants, who, in undressing him, had discovered his ailment, some of the consequences of which they were busied in removing with wet cloths, in the same manner as a nurse cleanses an infant. It was some minutes after he recovered his senses before he was able to speak, during which time he had the mortification to hear the unfeeling wretches round him cracking their coarse jests at his misfortune. At length too rough an application to the part affected extorted an involuntary roar, which shewing them that he was come to his senses, they instantly changed their scoffs for a curiosity equally disagreeable, all opening upon him at once to enquire what had thrown him into that condition.

“It may be thought he had no great inclination to answer their questions. He thanked them for their care, and, desiring they would let the chaplain know he wanted to speak to him as soon as he had done dinner, begged to be left alone.

“His

“His meditations in such a situation could not be very pleasing. He was not at a loss to discover the cause of what had happened; and cursing his own foolish confidence for putting himself any way in the power of one whom he might naturally suppose to be his enemy, resolved to take the severest revenge which the law could procure him, for so painful an injury, without making any allowance for the provocation that had prompted it. He comforted himself with these thoughts as well as he could, till the arrival of the chaplain, whose resentment for some lashes of wit made him in no haste to come, had not the curiosity of the rest of the company, which was raised by the representation of the servants, accelerated his motion.

“As soon as he entered the chamber, the poor sufferer, whose pain was far from being entirely removed, exclaimed in the anguish of his heart, “O my friend, I have sent for you to implore your assistance to inflict a proper punishment upon the villain who has brought me to this disgrace and torture.”—He then recounted the affair of the plaister, as I have related it to you, and concluded with conjuring the chaplain to use his influence with his lordship, to do him justice for an outrage which, according to the laws of hospitality, affected himself, as it was offered to his guest.

“His reverence sat picking his teeth in the greatest composure while he was telling his tale, at the end of which, “Pray sir, (said he, with an air of the most insulting indifference) what would you have me do?”—“Do sir, (answered the wit, provoked beyond his patience

at the other's behaviour) chew the cud of your last meal till you are so happy as to get another, that you may not lose a moment's enjoyment of that pleasure which seems to be the sole end of your existence."—

"Stung by the severity of this reproach, the chaplain directly left him without making any reply, and returning to the company told them, that the violence of the pain had disordered the poor man's head, and made him stark mad. Such a representation afforded matter for many curious remarks, in which the affinity between wit and madness was most learnedly discussed, while they were finishing their wine, without ever thinking of procuring the subject of their speculation any relief.

"At length curiosity prompted his lordship to see so strange a sight, in hopes of confirming by his behaviour some nice observations he had been making on the nature of madness, evident symptoms of which he declared he had perceived the moment he saw him that morning; but he was disagreeably disappointed to find the chaplain's account without foundation, and the man in his senses, so that he was deprived of the merit of his judicious discovery, on which he had plumed himself not a little, and his theory was left unsupported by the proof he had appealed to. However, he concealed his chagrin, and, enquiring into the particulars of so extraordinary an affair, for the chaplain's account was far from being satisfactory, revenged himself for his disappointment by laughing in the most mortifying manner at every ridiculous circumstance; a behaviour that aggravated the other's distress, as he was restrained, by respect, from making any reply.

"When

“When they had sufficiently enjoyed the scene, one of the company, more compassionate than the rest, bethought himself that it might not be improper to do something for the relief of the poor sufferer, whose appearance shewed that his pain was not much abated. Accordingly, upon consultation, it was agreed to be the best way to send for the apothecary who had made up the plaister, as he must necessarily know what was proper to remove its effects, better than any one else. The distressed patient would gladly have avoided such an interview, if only to disappoint his enemy of the pleasure of triumphing in the success of his trick : but perhaps for that very reason his lordship insisted on it, and he was sent for directly.

“This exceeded the apothecary’s hopes. He obeyed the summons with the greatest pleasure; and on his arrival, having first prudently expressed his surprize, and asserted his innocence of any evil intention in what he had done, was shewn up to his patient, who no sooner fixed his eyes upon him, than bursting into the most violent rage, “Villain! (said he) what base trick is this you have played me? But be assured that I will have the most exemplary satisfaction! I’ll make you know”—

“Sir, (answered the apothecary, with a sly grin) have a little patience, and all will soon be well. I am sorry that an innocent joke should give you such offence.”—

“A joke, wretch! Do you call putting me to such torture and disgrace a joke?”—

“Nothing more, I assure you, sir; and if you will give me leave to apply this liniment to the place where your complaint is, I’ll en-

page to remove it in a few minutes; and as for the disgrace, there is nothing in it; it is only matter for a few days laughter, and it will then be no more thought of.”—

“No more thought of! Yes, it will be always thought of; and I shall never be able to shew my face again after the ridiculous figure I have made by your cursed means; but if I forgive you, may I be the laughing-stock of every fool I meet.”—

“Surely, sir, a man of your reason and benevolence cannot harbour such an implacable resentment! What would you do if you were in my case? Unprovoked by the least offence, you wantonly fell on my uncouth figure, on the profession by which I earn bread for myself and my family, till you have made both so ridiculous, that children hoot at me as I go along the streets, and their equally wise parents slight my skill, and pass by my shop with contempt. The blister on your posteriors will soon be healed; nor can the disgrace you seem to take so heavily to heart, be attended with any consequences worse than a laugh, which you are well able to shift from yourself to some body else; but with me the case is quite different; my very subsistence is attacked, and the happiness of my family sacrificed, merely for a mischievous jest, and to shew your powers of ridicule.”—

“Struck with the justice of this reproof, the Wit had not power to make any reply, but submitted in silence to receive the other’s assistance, who, satisfied with this double triumph, soon put an end to his pain by a proper application. When this relief had restored him a
little

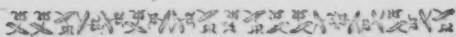
little to his spirits, he took the apothecary by the hand, squeezing it eagerly, "Dear doctor, (said he) I acknowledge that I have been to blame, much to blame; but I never considered this matter in a proper light before. All that I can do now, is to make you any reparation in my power, and to promise that I will never be guilty of the like indiscretion again. Never will I indulge wit any more at the expence of giving pain to an honest heart."—

"This resolution lasted while he was under the apothecary's hands; but no sooner was he recovered than he relapsed into his old humour, which he even indulged with greater latitude and virulence than ever, that he should not appear to have been dispirited by what he had suffered. As to the other, his trick was attended with success beyond his most sanguine hopes. Beside the present pleasure of revenge, the moment this story took wind, the ridicule which had been so prejudicial to him, recoiled with tenfold force upon his adversary, and he recovered his former credit and respect.

"But this personal licentiousness, though perhaps the most immediately painful to particulars, is not the worst instance in which this person abuses the talents nature has bestowed upon him with more than common liberality. You see the levity of his looks and behaviour; the same folly infects his writings to the most extravagant excess. In these he is dissipation itself. Starting from one subject to another, he jumbles all together the lightest and most serious, so as to make them appear equally ridiculous, sacrificing every thing to raise a laugh,

as if that were the sole end of genius, the sole object of erudition.

“Nor is this all; there are some things over which nature herself commands to throw a veil. To lift this up therefore, and make them the subject of wit and pleasantry, even in the almost boundless liberty of discourse, is a great offence; but in writing it is absolutely unpardonable, as that perpetuates the evil, and lays the foundation for debauching generations yet unborn. This is the grossest prostitution of powers given for a better purpose, and is always brought to a severe account.”



CHAP. XXII.

An old observation confirmed by a new character. A remarkable instance of the inconsistency of the human heart. A curious love-scene proves that the pleasure of variety is sometimes attended with danger and inconvenience.

“**B**UT, as I have remarked on other occasions, it is the proper application that effectuates the blessing. Without this the best gifts of heaven become a curse, and only aggravate the evils they were bestowed to prevent.

“Observe that person who struts about yonder in a military habit, pleased with the ensigns of his profession, as a child with a new bawble. Every favour, by which fortune could seem to secure human happiness, had she heaped upon his

his head in the most unbounded manner ; but this very profusion produced the contrary effect : and miserable in imagination for want of something to wish for, he has renounced such an insipid plenty, and plunged himself, for variety, into the real miseries of a way of life, which is permitted only as a punishment on the follies and vices of mankind.

“ It has been observed, that from a close attention to the first essays of the opening mind, a presage may be formed of the future life. The distinguishing characters of his youth were a fated indifference to every thing in his possession ; an inconstancy even more than childish in all his pursuits, he seldom persisting in any to the attainment of its object. As the affluence of his fortune made any particular application not absolutely necessary to him, this fluctuating imbecillity of disposition passed unnoticed, and his inattention to every prudential regard in all his actions, was extolled as generosity and magnificence of spirit. But the event has proved the error of this judgment, the same weakness having ruled the conduct of his riper years, and made him an easy prey to every idle passion of his own, to every mean design of his more indigent companions. To recapitulate every instance of this would be to make an history of his whole life. It will be sufficient just to touch upon one or two, to support the character I have here drawn, and as they so strongly illustrate the inconsistency of the human heart.

“ On his arriving at that period of life, when men are concluded to be capable of conducting themselves, the first thing which the care of his

friends suggested to secure his happiness, for their eyes at length began to be opened to the dangers attending such a disposition, was to find out a female, whose prudence might be a shield to his levity, and prevent its worst effects; and whom reason and inclination should go hand in hand, in recommending to his choice as a partner for his life. In this delicate and important search they were not long undetermined. They fixed upon one to whom envy herself could make no possible objection. Born in an exalted rank, and rich in every favourite gift of heaven, she seemed designed to crown the blessings of an happy life. The moment she was mentioned to him he received the hint with rapture. In the intercourse of a general acquaintance his heart had not been insensible of her charms, and on the nearer attention of such a design, he soon perceived the more valuable beauties of her mind. By the assistance of his friends, he preserved his resolution so long as to make his addresses acceptable, and received, in her hand, a seal of the most perfect felicity which this life is capable of enjoying.

“But scarce was he in possession of this just object of every rational desire, when the natural inconstancy of his temper prevailed, and he slighted an happiness for which all others sighed, only because it was in his possession. Accordingly he soon relapsed into all the licentiousness of his former life, and vainly sought in loose variety for that pleasure, which his perverse insensibility prevented his enjoying at home.

“Such pleasure is always purchased with vexation and pain. As he was prowling about
one

one evening for his usual game in the galleries of the theatre, he happened to see a female whose appearance had something in it more than commonly pleasing to him. He immediately addressed her in the familiarity of such places, and was not less struck with the sprightliness of her conversation than he had been before with her beauty. Encouraged by her freedom, and confiding in the superiority of his rank, at the end of the play he hesitated not to propose retiring to one of the neighbouring taverns, to improve so agreeable an acquaintance. This she positively refused, though in terms which implied not any resentment at the proposal, nor prevented his pressing her at least to give him another meeting at the play-house, which she at length consented to do.

“ In two or three interviews of this kind, which she let herself be persuaded to indulge him with, she played her part with such address, that she gained an absolute conquest over him, removing by her well-acted modesty every suspicion of her real character. At length, when he had brought her blushing to confess a return of his passion, and silenced every other scruple, she started the last difficulty, of the danger of being detected by her husband, as she unhappily was a married woman. This discovery was far from being agreeable to him. He loved his pleasures; but he was far from desiring to have them enhanced by any appearance of danger. However, he had gone too far to retreat now; and therefore, putting the best face upon the affair, he prevailed upon her to run the hazard of this discovery, by promising to protect her against her husband's resentment,

ment, should any such thing happen, and to make a provision for her that should save her from any disagreeable consequences of it.

"His ability to perform such a promise, which she was no stranger to, and the persuasive argument of several very valuable presents, in the end prevailed upon her. Accordingly one evening, when her husband was *engaged abroad*, she let him in at the back-door of her house, with the greatest appearance of privacy and fear, and conducted him softly up to her own chamber. He had not been many minutes in possession of his desires, when all on a sudden the door was burst in, and a drawn sword was held to his breast, by a man who appeared to be in the most violent agitation of frantic rage.

"Villain! adulterers! (exclaimed he, foaming at the mouth, and rolling his eyes wildly around) have I then caught you at last?—This instant shall your adulterous blood pay the price of my dishonour!—this instant will I"—

"O mercy! mercy! (cried the trembling female, holding up her hands, and tuning her voice in the most plaintive tone) Spare us!—spare us but a moment!—Murder not our wretched souls as well as our bodies."—

"The husband started at these words, and seemed lost in thought, while his lifted arm hung over them in the air. She saw the critical moment, and jogging her lover, who lay petrified with fear, "Speak to him, (said she) perhaps your words may have effect! his heart was ever tender and humane."—

"Roused by this address, the poor self-convicted culprit attempted to assuage him with the best argu-

arguments his fear could suggest. "Think not of a revenge (said he) which must prove as fatal to yourself as to us; but name any reparation you please to require, and it shall be instantly made. My fortune is sufficient"—

"Reparation?—No.—Nothing but blood can make me reparation, (answered the husband, rising to tenfold rage after the pause) my honour, my love for that ungrateful woman will hear of no other reparation.—As to myself; my life I value not at a pin's fee; all that is dear to me is now lost."—Then sinking, as it were, into softness, "And can I wound that breast fairer than monumental alabaster? O woman! woman!"—

"At these words he held his hand to his eyes, to hide his tears, and sobbed aloud as in the anguish of his soul. The lovers thought this fit of softness favourable to their fears, and, slipping out of bed, naked as they were, threw themselves at his feet, and besought his mercy in the most moving terms. After suffering a conflict of some moments, he sunk backwards into a chair, and, bidding them put on their cloaths, sat as deliberating how to act in such a distressing situation.

"In the mean time the lover, who thought that his life depended on the result of this deliberation, renewed his offers of reparation with the greatest earnestness, while his partner in guilt applied for mercy, with every argument that could move compassion. His *tender* heart was not proof to such a double attack. After pausing for some little time, "And what reparation can you make (said he) for robbing me of the love of a woman, to obtain whom I have
facti-

sacrificed my whole fortune, and plunged myself into debts, which have driven me to the brink of despair? but I thought nothing too much to suffer for her, base and ungrateful as she is."——

"I will not only instantly enable you to discharge those debts (answered the lover eagerly, catching a glimpse of hope from that capitulating question) but I will also settle such an annuity on you for life, as shall raise you above the necessity of ever contracting any more."——

"What shall I do? (exclaimed the husband, as in an agony) shall I compound my dishonour for a price? shall I perish in want and despair?—What shall I, can I do?"

"The irresolution implied in these words, gave the terrified lovers new hope. They assailed him again with every argument they could devise, which they pursued with such success, that at length he submitted to receive a reparation for an injury not to be recalled. When this first point was gained, the terms were soon settled, the eagerness of the lover preventing the other's making any demand, by the largeness of his offers. A lawyer, who was a friend of the husband, and luckily happened to be in a neighbouring coffee-house, was directly called in, and soon confirmed the compact beyond a possibility of revocation; one article of which was, that the lover should make a separate provision for his mistress, the husband's delicate sense of honour not permitting him to have any farther intercourse with her.

CHAP. XXIII.

A new motive for turning soldier; with a short view of the military profession. The scene is changed, and a more extensive prospect opened.

“**E**VERY circumstance of this transaction bore such glaring marks of imposition, that any other person would have seen through, and avoided the deceit; or at least, when that was too late, have shewn a proper resentment of it, by dropping all farther commerce with the base woman who drew him into such a snare, and was evidently an accomplice in the whole. But, blind to all conviction, he grew sonder of her than before, and, seeming to have changed his very nature, proved constant to her longer than he had ever been to any other object; tho’ far from striving to retain him by any appearance of regard, any obsequiousness in her behaviour, now that her independence, the first object of her designs, was established, she affected on all occasions to treat him with the most insolent contempt, and openly bestowed upon others those favours which had cost him so dear.

“While he indulged every vicious passion in this profligate manner, the condition of his deserted wife deserved the highest compassion. Sensible of the danger of expostulating on so delicate a subject, she seemed not to see the slights which he hourly shewed her, but, drying up her tears whenever he approached her, always met him with a smile of tenderness and respect. Smothered grief preys with double violence upon the heart. Though she did not complain, she could not avoid feeling the pain of such treatment under

der which she pined insensibly away, like a flower cankered at the root.

“ But that which reason could not do, was effected by the natural inconstancy of his temper, and a new whim supplanted his profligate mistress in his thoughts. His country happened to be engaged in war; the noise of drums and trumpets turned his head, and he must needs be a soldier, for want of something else to give him employment. As soon as this caprice took possession of him, he bought a commission in the army directly, and set about learning the military trade with as much eagerness as if he was obliged to follow it for bread; and, to shew his proficiency in tactics, even went so far as to write an elaborate *treatise* on the mighty advantages of a soldier’s *turning out his toes* in his marching.

“ When he had with infinite pains got his company trimmed and disciplined to his mind, contrary to the expectation of all who knew him, he pursued the humour so far as to go with them into the field, where they soon had an opportunity of signalizing their valour, at the expence of near half their lives. But an unlucky visit of compliment to the colonel deprived him of the glory of sharing in the danger of that day, though the gallant behaviour of his men reflected sufficient honour on him, for having trained to such excellent discipline, and inspired them with so noble a contempt of death. Encouraged by that success, he persists in his pursuit of fame, the vicissitudes of the military life keeping his mind continually employed, and saving him from the fatigue of a moment’s reflection; an evil to avoid which he has ever had recourse to some new scheme of active idleness.” “ I

"I thought it impossible, (said I) O my guide, that the heart of man could be so absurdly perverse! The general motives for embracing the military life are necessity, an enthusiastic passion for fame, and perhaps, in a very few instances, a disinterested spirit of patriotism. But here none of these can be alledged; for the last his temper is too indifferent; too little and unsteady for the pursuit of fame; and his affluence raises him above necessity, which is the most universal of all: so that he literally sacrifices the most solid advantages of life for nothing, and runs into danger and distress, because he is incapable of enjoying the opposite blessings."

"To the motives which you have assigned (returned the spirit) you might have added avarice and ambition, from both of which he is also constitutionally exempt. As to the dangers and distresses in which you imagine he must have involved himself, though sufficient to deter any man of reason from plunging wantonly into them; in such cases as his, they are far short of what inexperienced apprehension may represent. The private centinel who hourly exposes his life for a morsel of bread to support it, and the subaltern officer who leads that soldier to fight, struggle with difficulties, and encounter dangers, which nature shudders at the thought of; but ascend to the higher ranks, and a great part of those terrors vanish. Their carriages save them from fatigue, their tables are heaped with delicacies, and luxury reigns in their tents. The day of battle, in which alone they are exposed to danger, is in some measure a day of rest to the others; the motions and manœuvres, in which the modern art of war mostly consists,

harrassing the unhappy soldier with greater hardships, and exposing him to more dangers than any general engagement. But of this you will be a better judge when you have taken a view of yonder scene of war. We have dwelt too long upon the minute concerns of private life, of individuals, however strongly marked out for observation, by titles, wealth, or folly. We will now enlarge our view, and see whether the conduct of nations is more rational; whether the clouds of folly and vice which overcast the cottage, and produce domestic unhappiness in lower life, may not, when raised into the higher regions, burst into storms and thunder, and make an universal wreck of all the works of nature.

The END of the FIRST VOLUME.

STOPIE

THE
R E V E R I E:
O R,
A F L I G H T
T O T H E
P A R A D I S E o f F O O L S.

*—All things vain, and all who in vain things
Build their fond hopes of glory, or lasting fame,
Or happiness, in this, or th' other life—*

MILTON.

Published by the EDITOR of
The ADVENTURES of a GUINEA:

V O L. II.

L O N D O N,

Printed for T. BECKET, and P. A. DA HONDT;
in the Strand. MDCCLXIII.



UTOPIA

PBR

566R

V. 2

THE
CONTENTS
OF THE
SECOND VOLUME.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

The scheme changes with the scene. A remarkable instance of military equity. The soldier's view in war. Every man for himself, the rule in war as well as peace, 1

CHAP. II.

A gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The best cure for a matrimonial surfeit; with a new motive for entering into the military life, 7

CHAP. III.

A toilet set out in a new taste. The advantage of knowing how to play one inconvenience against another; with an interesting instance of love and honour in the modern style, 15

A

CHAP.

19711

CONTENTS.

CHAP. IV.

War! Horrid war! They'll never want employment who think themselves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moon-shine. The great channel of secret intelligence,

23

CHAP. V.

The longest way about is often the nearest way home. The pleasure of comparing notes creates friendship in affliction. A new species of knight-errantry.

28

CHAP. VI.

History of a remarkable lady. The great benefit of polite education, with the force of good example. Common occurrences of various kinds, and their natural consequences,

33

CHAP. VII.

Continued. An unusual effect of absence. The loss of reputation sometimes inconvenient. Reflections on a qualification which all pretend to, and few possess; with a curious account of a man of consequence,

40

CHAP. VIII.

Continued. A short way of making love. Bargo's best made in few words; with an odd instance of old-fashioned folly,

CHAP. IX.

Continued. Many buyers raise the market. On ballancing avarice and vanity, the former kicks the beam,

51

CHAP

CONTENTS.

CHAP. X.

Continued. Listeners seldom like what they hear. The danger of speaking high blood; with the great merit of peace-making in the modern way,

58

CHAP. XI.

Concluded. A relapse is often worse than the first disorder. By the help of good friends, the grey mare proves the better horse. The whole concluded with some interesting reflections, which prove that people should look before they leap,

64

CHAP. XII.

One story generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dress. Common consequences of fashionable intimacy, and female friendship, with the secret of making a right use of a shoeing-horn,

70

CHAP. XIII.

More military matters. Politics on one side of the question,

76

CHAP. XIV.

A new scheme of carrying on a war. An ill-timed doubt often disconcerts a good story. Anecdotes of a loyal family. The history of Sir Archibald, and Zelide princess of Armenia,

83

CHAP. XV.

The History of Sir Archibald, and Zelide princess of Armenia, continued,

96

CHAP. XVI.

Continuation of the history of Sir Archibald and Zelide, princess of Armenia,

104

A 2

CHAP.

19711

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVII.

The history of Sir Archibald, and Zilide princess of Armenia, concluded, 110

CHAP. XVIII.

Anecdotes of a loyal family concluded. Several instances of uncommon loyalty revealed in the common manner, with some reflections interesting to those whom they may concern, 119

CHAP. XIX.

The difference between fighting battles in the field and in the cabinet. The happiness of having good friends, with further instances of military equity, 123

CHAP. XX.

War! War in procinct! The comforts of Greatness. A night-scene, with a continuation of it, neither of the most agreeable nature, 128

CHAP. XXI.

An approved medicine for a sick mind. A curious conversation between two great persons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame, 135

CHAP. XXII.

A remarkable instance of poetic gratitude and justice, with some anecdotes of a celebrated genius, 143

BOOK

B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

A council scene. The villainy of female government; with a remarkable instance of the happy effect of reproof upon great minds, 148

C H A P. II.

A ready salve for a sore conscience. A proper reward for piety. An unexpected disengagement shews greatness of soul in a striking light. A day concluded consistently, 154

C H A P. III.

More happy effects of greatness; with a new way of punishing disobedience, and making the most of power, 161

C H A P. IV.

Account of an uncommon kind of council; with its natural conclusion, 166

C H A P. V.

Mystery of favouritism. A remarkable instance of the art of making the most of a misfortune, 172

C H A P. VI.

Continued. A mirror for the female mind. Fear and resentment triumphant over love and virtue, 177

C H A P.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VII.

Mystery of favouritism explained. The effects of ridicule. Multitudinal use of money; with the sacred consequence of its confidence,

CHAP. VIII.

The same subject of national character, viewed from another point of view. Curious account of the war with an explanation of political tactics.

CHAP. IX.

Wheels within wheels. Certain grand truths deduced from military dangers, and the advantage of having the strings to a bow.

CHAP. X.

More great matters. Home truths. A character cut of nature; with a new definition of the law of war; and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience,

199

CHAP. XI.

A peep behind the curtain. Royal arrangements; heroic principles and valour; with an approved shield against certain terrible dangers,

200

CHAP. XII.

Scene changed. Pleasant instance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secrets of favouritism,

211

CHAP. XIII.

Make hay while the sun shines. All go to the market, where they can have most for their money.

CONTENTS.

conclusion. A conversation concluded in character, 221

CHAP. XIV.

A swine, though not an uncommon picture. Play a trout properly, and you'll catch it. The justification of oaf, 225

CHAP. XV.

The stone Langel. A pleasing prospect suddenly converted. An easy way to get rid of a wrangler, with a comfortable plaiser for a broken hand. He that throws dirt always soils his fingers, 231

CHAP. XVI.

A receipt for popularity. Turn a cast horse to graze on a common. The old steward acts the second part to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye, 238

CHAP. XVII.

An holiday, and a jolly day. A sumptuous feast, and a raree-show, 244

CHAP. XVIII.

*"Impresses quaint caparisons, and steeds;
"Bases, and tinsel trappings; gorgeous knights,
"Then marshall'd feast
"Serv'd up in hall, with sewers and seneschals."* 251

CHAP. XIX.

In what the greatest are easiest to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if less ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances, 261

CHAR.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XX.

He that plays at BOWLS must meet RUES. The liter DRUB'D. An old fox caught napping. A penny saved is a penny got. Splendid acrony; with the unfortunate candle-adventure. A mortifying instance of the force of vanity,

205

CHAP. XXI.

Interesting hints, which set some matters much considered in a new light,

214

CHAP. XXII.

Disputes will arise, where every man is for himself. A sure method of recovering time, and reconciling opposite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMPOUNDER &c. &c. The conclusion,

270



THE
R E V E R I E;

OR, A

Flight to the Paradise of Fools.

CHAP. I.

The scene I agree with the scene. A remarkable instance of military equity. The soldier's views in war. Every man for himself, the rule in war as well as peace.

THE feats of heroism, and the glory, which according to the general prejudices of mankind, I had been accustomed to associate with the idea of war, made me promise myself much pleasure from this change. The spirit read my sentiments in my looks, and smiling expressively, "You are now going to take a view of scenes, (said he) the nature of which will make your utmost care requisite, to escape the illusions

VOL. II.

B

"which

" which surround them on every side, and are
 " so strong as to deceive the very actors of them.
 " The limitation of the human faculties makes
 " it necessary, that objects should be presented
 " to you in a regular succession; as that gene-
 " ral view which conveys knowledge intuitively
 " to superior beings, would only dazzle your
 " mind, and involve it in perplexity and con-
 " fusion. But this the more important duties
 " of my office will not permit my attending to,
 " at present. I have already devoted as much
 " time to your gratification as I can spare. You
 " must therefore proceed alone, and make your
 " own observations. For this reason it will be
 " proper to place you immediately in the scene
 " of action. Your attention will there be freed
 " from the distraction of a more distant and
 " complicated view; and you shall have other
 " assistances, to remedy the inconvenience of
 " my absence."—Saying this, he took my
 hand, and transported me, instantaneously, in
 the same manner as before, into the country
 which was the seat of the war.

High as my expectations had been, this nearer
 view of the paths of human glory chilled my
 soul. I turned my eyes away in horror; and,
 in the instinctive impulse of affright, moved
 close to my guide for protection. " I have
 " often cautioned you (resumed he, in an ac-
 " cent of reproof) against forming your judge-
 " ment of any thing too precipitately. But
 " now you were delighted at the thought of
 " this prospect. In a moment, you sickened at
 " the sight. Is this consistent with the charac-
 " ter of a rational being? Your present fears
 " of danger to yourself are as idly groundless,

THE REVERIE, 3

" as your hopes of receiving pleasure, from be-
 " holding the miseries of others, were then un-
 " justifiable. I have told you, that your form
 " is imperceptible to human sense. It is also
 " impassive to the injuries which affect morta-
 " lity, under all the weakness and imperfections
 " of which you see the beings before you la-
 " bour, as strongly as when in your world.
 " You may therefore mix with the multitude
 " without apprehension, and make your re-
 " marks on every thing that occurs, with deli-
 " beration and ease; to enable you to do which,
 " I have freed your mind from the prejudices
 " that have hitherto obstructed your reason, so
 " that you will now behold all things in their
 " genuine colour; and as some knowledge of
 " the past lives of the persons concerned in the
 " scenes you are going to enter into, may oc-
 " casionally be necessary to explain their present
 " actions, your faculties are enlarged with a
 " power of looking back, and reviewing the
 " whole series, as readily and distinctly as you
 " do the objects recorded in your memory.
 " Your motions also, as you are unincumbered
 " with matter, depend absolutely on your will,
 " by a single act of which you may transport
 " yourself whither-soever you please, in an in-
 " stant; and so trace the most complicated
 " transactions through all their intricate extent,
 " from their obscure causes, to their as unex-
 " pected conclusions, with precision and per-
 " spicuity. A right use of these advantages will
 " give your curiosity the most rational satisfac-
 " tion. Nor are you confined to any particu-
 " lar scene. When your soul is surfeited with
 " war, and sickens at the thought of military
 " glory,

“glory, you are at liberty to seek new subjects
 “of remark, through all the wide extent of
 “human life, which is expanded to your view.
 “One thing, though, I must caution you
 “against. Forget not that you are a meer un-
 “concerned spectator of all the events you be-
 “hold; nor presume on any account to inter-
 “pose, be they ever so interesting to you. The
 “least attempt of this kind will instantaneously
 “deprive you for ever of the indulgence you
 “now enjoy. I am summoned hence. When
 “it is proper to reconduct you to the world of
 “man, I will attend. Till then, observe the cau-
 “tion I have given you, and proceed without
 “farther limitation or restraint.”—With these
 words he vanished from my sight.

The first emotions of my surprize at being
 left in such a condition may be easily conceived.
 But they lasted not long. I soon felt the ad-
 vantages of the favours bestowed so liberally up-
 on me; in the consciousness of which I lost all
 fear, and directly prepared to avail myself of
 them, in the most extensive manner. The
 more than martial animosity with which this
 war appeared, by the desolation of the country,
 and the miseries of the inhabitants, to be car-
 ried on, made me conclude that it must have
 arisen from some most important cause. To
 learn this I directly entered into the army that
 lay nearest to me, where I imagined I should
 readily receive the information I wanted; judg-
 ing that every individual must be acquainted
 with the motives for a war in which he haz-
 ard'd his life, and of course they must be the
 subject of the general conversation.

The army was composed of mercenaries of different nations hired by a foreign power, whose own subjects made a considerable part of it, tho' under the supreme command of one of the former; and was led hither, into the country of an ally and friend, according to the rules of military equity, to defend the sovereign's own dominions from the invasion of an enemy, who with equal justice marched his forces to the indiscriminate oppression of friends and foes, through whose territories they passed, to wreak his vengeance on this part of his adversary's subjects, for injuries he imagined he had received from another, who were superior to his power, and with whom these had no connection in nature or interest, other than (in this case) the misfortune of being under the government of the same sovereign.

This general account I soon learned, and saw abundantly confirmed, both by the appearance of the army, and the manner of its proceeding; but of the real origin of the war, or the end proposed by it, except *plunder* and *pay*, the soldiers appeared utterly ignorant, and indeed unconcerned about them, plodding mechanically to the field to fight, with as much indifference as oxen do to plough.

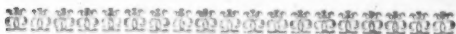
Shocked at an insensibility so disgraceful to beings who boast of the blessing of reason, I advanced to the commander, from whom I hoped to learn something satisfactory, in matters so immediately conducted by himself. He was sitting in his tent, at a table covered with dispatches he had just received from the court by which he was employed. When he had looked them over, with evident phlegm, and

6 THE REVERIE.

disregard. "These people (said he) must think
 "me as great a fool as themselves, to send
 "me such orders; orders which common
 "sense might inform them I will not obey.
 "The people are out of humour, forsooth, at
 "the length and expence of the war; and so
 "their wise masters want me to push it with
 "more vigour, to bring it to a conclusion. But
 "they will find themselves mistaken, I promise
 "them. No! No! I will have no general
 "actions; nothing that can possibly be decisive
 "either way." That is not my business. The
 "profits of my command are too considerable
 "to be thrown away in that manner. If I
 "should be beaten, they will instantly chuse
 "another general, without ever considering
 "that I only obeyed their own orders. And if
 "I obtain a compleat victory, the war is at
 "an end; and of course my profit also. No!
 "No! I will have no decisive actions. While
 "they are masters of a ducat to pay me, I will
 "protract the war. When their money is all
 "spent, they may go to battle as soon as they
 "will; and whether they win or lose, is a mat-
 "ter of indifference to me. In the mean time,
 "they shall have marching, and skirmishing
 "enough, to satisfy their passion for fighting,
 "and prevent their complaining of idleness. I
 "am commander in chief; and while I am, I
 "will do just what I please, which is to promote
 "my own interest as much as I possibly can.
 "If I can manage matters so, as to hold my
 "post for two or three campaigns more, I shall
 "get money enough to support the dignity of
 "my illustrious house with proper splendour.
 "Nor is it possible for them to detect my de-
 sign.

THE REVERIE. 7

“ sign. The disproportion in numbers between
 “ my army, and that of the enemy, is such as
 “ sufficiently justifies my cautious conduct ; at
 “ the same time, that the difference in the ap-
 “ pointments and goodness of the men secures
 “ me from danger of disgrace, and makes the
 “ glory I acquire in this defensive war cheaply
 “ earned. Indeed the greatest difficulty often
 “ is to divide their force, and direct their ar-
 “ dour in such a manner, as to prevent their
 “ defeating their enemies totally, against all
 “ disadvantages, and contrary to my inten-
 “ tions.”



C H A P. II.

*A gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The best cure for
 a matrimonial surfeit ; with a new motive for
 entering into the military life.*

HAVING finished his meditations, he went
 out to a number of his officers, who at-
 tended at the entrance of his tent. His beha-
 viour on this occasion shewed the masterly ad-
 dress with which he pursued his private scheme.
 To his own countrymen he spoke with the ut-
 most indifference ; and giving them some gene-
 ral orders about the duties of the camp, dismissed
 them slightly, and with an appearance of dis-
 esteem. But to the foreigners by whose sovereign
 he was employed, he carried himself in quite a
 different manner. His eye wore a smile of fa-
 miliarity and complaisance, whenever it met
 the meanest subaltern of the corps ; and he scrupled

8 THE REVERIE.

pled, not to compliment them, at the expence of the rest of the army, by proposing their example to general imitation.

So flattering a preference had the designed effect; the fatigues and dangers by which they acquired it were immediately forgot; and they even appeared eager to undertake more, to support so distinguished an honour.

The general saw with secret pleasure the ardour with which he had inflamed them; and resolved he would not let it cool, for want of employment. Advancing to their particular commander, who just then joined him, "My dear friend, (said he, with an air of the most cordial esteem) I have this moment received some intelligence, that enables me to give your brave countrymen an opportunity of signalizing that valour which has established them in the exalted reputation of being the best soldiers in the universe. You will select five thousand whom you think most proper, and let them be ready to march an hour before night. When you return from doing that, we will concert our measures, and fix on a person to carry them into execution. It is a master-stroke, and will do honour to any officer; for I cannot doubt of the success of an enterprize undertaken by your gallant countrymen."

The officer, who free from deceit himself, suspected none in any body else, heard him with the highest joy, and glowing with a passion for glory, which the general thus artfully fann'd, resolved, without even waiting to know the nature of the attempt, to take the command himself, and so reap all the honour. "Your High-
ness

“ness (answered he, with evident emotion)
 “does them honour by all your commands. I
 “shall not have any occasion for selecting,
 “where all are equally good, and equally am-
 “bitious of meriting your approbation. As
 “for an officer for the command, I believe I
 “can find one to whom, I hope, your High-
 “ness will have no objection.”

Saying this, he proceeded directly to get every thing ready, while the rest of the army, instead of being offended at having the post of honour thus partially given from them, hugged themselves in the ease and safety they enjoyed by the disgrace.

There was something so striking in the readiness with which the officer caught at the bait that was laid for him, that I became somehow anxious for the event, and resolved to observe him particularly through the affair; and therefore followed him, when he went to give the necessary orders to his men.

If I had been surprised at the ardour he shewed, I was infinitely more so, to find that the same spirit ran through all his countrymen; the very private soldiers, whose station might have been supposed to exempt them from the enthusiastic notions of honour which idleness and affluence inspire in the more exalted ranks, to such a degree as to make men break through the first law of nature, to run into danger with delight, *turning out* to a man, at the first mention of the matter; and vying with each other who should be of the party; though the appearance of many of them shewed that they were already exhausted by fatigue, and wanted rest and refreshment, to re-

store their strength to any degree of equality with their spirit.

Among men actuated by such an emulation, the least preference must have bred envy, and been attended with disagreeable consequences. Sensible of this, the officer thanked them all, in the most engaging manner for their readiness; but said, that, according to the indispensable rule of military discipline, he must necessarily take those whose duty came in turn, consoling the rest with the thought that they could not long want an opportunity equally glorious of proving their spirit in an army, where they were honoured by the general, with so peculiar a preheminance.

This delicate affair being adjusted, the heroes whose happy fortune it was to go prepared themselves with the highest emulation, while the others drew off in evident dejection at their disappointment.

As their leader rode along the lines, to take a particular view of them, I observed that he addressed one of his subalterns, and was answered by him in a strain of familiarity, that seemed inconsistent with the distance between their stations. "Well *Tom*, (said the former, with a smile) this is a sudden call. How will *Venus* bear to have her *Mars* torn from her arms so soon? She ought to have a little longer time to reconcile her to the military life, before she is left by herself in a camp."

—"In a camp! No! no! I shall hardly leave her in a camp."

—"No! What then do you design to do with her?"

—"Why? send her to indulge her meditations"

THE REVERIE. 11

“ tations with her old friend, *Will Buck's*
 “ Lady. It will be good entertainment for
 “ them to compare notes.”

—— “ But if you did not mean to keep her
 “ here, why were you at the trouble of bring-
 “ ing her? I imagined it was because you did
 “ not know how to part with her.”

—— “ How to part with her! I thought you
 “ knew me better than to think so. Why,
 “ man! the very contrary was the reason. If
 “ I did not desire to part with her, what should
 “ make me bring her here? No! No! It is
 “ not come to that with me yet. I turned sol-
 “ dier, at first, merely to get rid of my wife;
 “ and I hope I may be allowed to take the same
 “ method to get rid of my mistress too, when
 “ I am equally tired of her. Beside, I have a
 “ better plea now than I had before. My ho-
 “ nour, man! My honour is engaged. I must
 “ not quit my colours upon any account, at
 “ such a time as this. If the fond charmer
 “ should take pet, and go home to her friends,
 “ with her finger in her eye, to be revenged on
 “ her swain for his indifference, she has my sin-
 “ cere consent; nor shall my best assistance be
 “ wanting to make an honest woman of her, by
 “ getting her a good husband. She has examples
 “ enough to keep her in countenance. But if
 “ the constant dove will not desert her roving
 “ mate, why, faith, I do not well know how
 “ to send her back against her will; and must
 “ in compassion pay her a visit now and then;
 “ though, by the by, it shall be as seldom as
 “ possible, to give her company something like
 “ novelty; which, in my opinion, is the only
 “ thing.”

12 THE REVERIE.

“thing that can make the company of any woman tolerable.”

——“But, won’t this be breaking faith with her? I presume you must have made her many fine promises of love and constancy, before you could bring her to take such a step?”

——“Promises! Aye, promises enough for the matter of that; but she was a fool if she believed them, when she had a proof that I should not keep them, before her eyes. She could not be so blindly vain, as not to know that novelty was the only advantage she had over my wife, whom I may probably return to by and by, for the same reason. when a campaign or two shall have sharpened my appetite. A campaign is the best remedy in nature for a matrimonial surfeit. It cures a man’s qualms, and sends him home as keen as a country-bridegroom.”

——“But, are you sure that she will leave you so readily? The same spirit that enabled her to come to such a place as this, may dispute your authority to send her back. She has paid a dear price for your company, and may not chuse to give it up. Women when once they love have much more constancy in their temper than men.”

——“Constancy! Say rather, obstinacy. But I have taken care of that matter. I have wrote a letter to my wife, in which I made professions of the highest esteem, and desired the favour of her company, to compleat my happiness; promising, that *Chloe* and I would study her satisfaction and pleasure in every instance.”

——“Good

——“ Good Heavens! What could you propose by that? You could never think she would be mean, or mad enough, to accept of such an invitation; an invitation, that only added insult to the ill-treatment you had given her before.”

“ Accept of it! No, I neither expected nor desired that. I had schemes of a very different kind in view. I know you have never suspected me, for forming any deep designs; but this will convince you of the contrary. This Letter, little as you think of it, will serve two very important purposes. It will prevent my wife from obtaining a separate maintenance out of my estate; for, as it is her duty to follow me wherever I please, she cannot now pretend that I have abandoned her: and, on the other hand, it gives me an opportunity, at this and any other time, to get rid of my mistress’s company, by telling her, that my invitation is accepted; for she would fly to the extremity of the globe rather than meet her. He! What think you now? Am not I a good politician? Egad, I always mistook my talents; if I had applied myself in time, I might have been prime minister before now. Ha! ha! ha!”—

——“ If you were conscious of this inconsistency in your temper, how came you to marry? That should have been the last thing I would have done.”

——“ That is very true. But Sir John Brute’s reason was mine. I wanted to go to bed to her, and she would not consent on any other terms: the consequence of which was, that when my end was obtained, I grew
“ tired

"tired of my bargain, and so turned soldier to get quit of it."

—"I am surpris'd to hear you say this. I always understood that you had other motives for your military turn; an ambition of command, and thirst for glory."

—"Very true. Glory and command are pretty things, to be sure; but they are not equally the passion of all people. Your good luck in losing your wife, made me hope that my turtle would have broken her heart, in the same manner; but she was not so obliging; and therefore I have tried this method of preferring another publickly to her. I know the force of female vanity; and if this scheme should luckily succeed, I'll give up my hopes of a truncheon, and retire as *Scipio* and other great men have done. If I once get my neck out of the yoke, I'll take care how I thrust it in again, or even enter into any connection that I cannot break when I please, without being obliged to have recourse to this expedient. No! No! I am not quite so fond of glory as you are. I can be content at home; that is, when I am master of my own house."

"Is it possible that you can be serious? This is so contrary to the opinion of all your friends, that I must believe you only jest. Your birth and fortune give you a title to the highest employments in the state, in whatever capacity you chose to apply yourself; and we all thought, that preferring the military, as the most honourable, you had come hither to qualify yourself for them."

—"Aye!

THE REVERIE. 15

—“Aye! as you have done! And pray,
 “what are you the better? In reward of all
 “your fatigues and dangers, you have the ho-
 “nour to be put under the command of a fo-
 “reigner, who would not presume to put him-
 “self upon a level with you in any other light;
 “and laughs at you in his sleeve, for your con-
 “descension. Very fine encouragement, true-
 “ly! No! No! Let the poor fight for pay, you
 “and I want it not; and all the real advantages
 “of honour our ancestors, blessings on their
 “memory for their pains, have transmitted to us.
 “Let us then enjoy the happiness that is in our
 “possession, and not lose the substance thus,
 “to grasp at the shadow.”

The other, who had listened to him before
 with contempt, was so struck with the latter
 part of his discourse, that he rode away abrupt-
 ly to avoid hearing any more of it.



C H A P. III.

*A toilet set out in a new taste. The advantage of
 knowing how to play the inconvenience against
 another; with an interesting instance of love and
 honour in the modern style.*

THIS extraordinary conversation raising my
 curiosity to see the fair female who had
 originally been the subject of it, I followed her
 lover, while his leader was preparing for his
 expedition.

She was sitting alone in his tent, in a situa-
 tion

16 THE REVERIE.

tion not easy to be described. Educated in the lap of luxury, she had multiplied the wants of nature ten-thousand-fold; and required assistance every moment for necessities created by caprice. Though her lover's fortune placed her above the real distresses of such a place, and supplied her with most of the conveniences, as well as all the necessaries of life, she had numberless artificial occasions, which habit had made in a manner indispensable to her, and which, as it was impossible to provide for then, in such a vague unsettled state, she exerted as much contrivance to supply, as had first enabled human ingenuity to find out the most important conveniences of life; though with this essential difference, that as the end was fantastic here, the means necessarily appeared ridiculous.

We found her at her toilet, which was a sumpter-trunk, set upon one end, and covered with a foul shirt. On this she had placed a pocket-mirroure, and on each side of that a row of phials, and gallipots filled with colours, cosmetic paste and washes which she always carried about her. Her combs and brushes were set out on the saucers she had just been using for breakfast. Her shoes and stockings lay on the bed, which was also her seat; and to wash herself, she made use of an utensil, which had been placed under it for another occasion. With this apparatus, all set in form, she was as attentively busy at the important work of dressing, as if she was going to make her appearance at a drawing-room. Her lover's entrance interrupted her. "Fie, *Damon*, (said she, blushing "at the ridiculous figure she made) how can "you intrude so rudely into a lady's ruelle?

"You

"You see I have set out my toilet. The bed
 "and the trunk serve for every thing. Dumb
 "waiters are sometimes most convenient; hah!
 "hah! hah!"

The moment I saw her, I could perceive that this gaiety was all affected; that, sick at heart, she flew to levity for relief from the torture of reflection. Such a ruin was sufficient to raise compassion in any mind not utterly lost to every sense of humanity, as well as virtue. She was just entered into the prime of life; her form elegant and striking; and her features, if not faultlessly beautiful, yet glowing with such luxuriant health, such animated sensibility, as had the effect of the most perfect beauty. But in her present situation, all these charms appeared to disadvantage. A gloom of conscious guilt overcast her smiles; and amidst all her mirth and endearments, she was ashamed to look up, and meet the eye of the very author of her shame.

When she had forced out the laugh with which she concluded the above speech, her *Damon*, smiling with an air of indifference, "Necessity is the mother of invention, my dear *Chloe*; (said he) and yours seems to have been well set to work. But I come to tell you some news that I fear will interrupt you. I am ordered out upon action directly; and as it is like to be a warm affair, I think it is better to provide for your safety before I go, for fear of any thing's happening to me. You would be horridly at a loss by yourself, in such a place as this, if I should be killed."

She started at the mention of action; but his
 last

18 THE REVERIE.

last words struck her with terrors too strong for her to bear. For some moments she stood like the statue of horror, unable to move or speak; but her very fears at length gave her utterance. "Good heaven! (exclaimed she) What do you mean? What action can you be ordered into that should endanger your life? Did you not promise me, that you would quit this accursed life directly? Did you not prevail upon me to come here with you, only that you might lay down your commission without dispute? You cannot, shall not, think of going into any action! You must come away this moment."

—"That was my design, my dear, if it had not been for this unlucky affair; but now it is impossible for me to stir. If I return, I will that moment lay down; but I cannot possibly do it sooner. It would be an eternal blot upon my honour."

—"Honour! (returned she, with a sigh, that seemed to burst her heart) How can you mention that word to me? If you are resolved to go, I will wait the event here. Should you be brought back wounded, my care may not be unnecessary! If worse should happen, the horrors I shall suffer till I receive the account, will compleat my aversion to life, and make me glad to follow you. I have now no business in this world without you."

The agony in which she said this would have melted any other heart; but he felt it not. Finding her proof to this argument, he therefore had recourse to his last expedient. "I am much obliged to you, my dear, (said he, quite unmoved) for your kind intentions to take
care

"care of me; but I hope I shall not want it. Beside, there is another thing, which embarrasses me a good deal. I have just received an account, that my wife, out of her exemplary love and duty, has accepted my invitation, and is coming to us directly."

"To us! (answered she, alarmed almost to distraction) Is it possible? What shall we do? Where shall I fly! I never can, never will see her. I had rather die ten thousand deaths, than look her in the face."

—"To be sure, I allow it must be rather awkward; but the mischief is, I cannot tell how you will avoid it, if you stay here."

—"You must write to her peremptorily, this moment, not to come; and when you leave this place, take a different route from what you intended, for fear she should not obey you."

—"Aye! but the worst is, I don't know where to direct to her. She set out immediately, on receipt of my letter; and as the post is obliged to come so far about, for fear of being intercepted by the enemy, and she travels with passports the shortest way, she may be here this evening, for aught I know;—and then it would be so gross an abuse not to see her, even after her undergoing the fatigue of such a journey, at my express desire, that I cannot avoid waiting for her. Decency at least must be observed."

—"Decency! How can you insult me by mentioning such a word? I slighted that, and every thing else, for you. Had I paid any regard to decency, I should not have been here now in this condition."

"Nay,

——“Nay, for the matter of that, my dear, “I am not much behind you. I shewed as “little respect to those things for your sake as “you could for mine. But let us not enter “into fruitless disputes. What are you re- “solved to do? for I must march within this “hour.”

——“Honour! decency! But I am justly “served. What am I resolved to do! Say ra- “ther what you intend to do with me, and do “not torture me any longer in this manner; “for I see plainly enough, that my presence is “a pain, which you want to get rid of at any “rate. Honour! just heaven!”

——“Why child, if you are determined to “think so, it is in vain to reason with you. “You shall do just as you please; either go “or stay. What I meant to propose was this: “You remember your old friend, who took a “frolick with *Will Buck* two or three years “ago. She lives in a very pretty retired man- “ner, in a neutral town, about twenty miles “from hence. Now, if you approve of it, it “would be no bad scheme for you, to go and “pay her a visit, till we see how things go. I “am sure she will be very well pleased to see “you; and there you will be free from the in- “conveniencies, and safe from the dangers of “a camp; and near enough for me to step to “you as often as I can spare a moment. I’ll “write a letter to *Will* about it directly; and “as I know his finances are not in the best “situation, I make no doubt but he’ll be very “glad of your staying there as long as you “please; for you shall have money enough, to “bear all the expence. I would not let you

“be

“be under obligation to any one. Well, what
“think you of my scheme? Was it not a lucky
“thought? You and she were very intimate
“formerly, and will now be the most proper
“and agreeable companions for each other.”

It is impossible to describe the different passions which were painted in her face, while he was making this proposal. She knew him too well to take such a rational scheme for a sudden thought; and concluded from thence, that he was satiated with her company, and had formed a premeditated design to get rid of her; to facilitate which he had first made a pretence of his being ordered into action, and when that did not take effect, forged this story of his wife's coming; for, notwithstanding her distress, she had observed the many inconsistencies in what he said. However, her pride would not permit her to discover her suspicions, as it would look like striving to force herself longer upon him.

“When you are resolved, (answered she, with a most expressive look) I have nothing left but to obey. Give orders for my going, I shall soon be ready. All places are indifferent to me, and all companions equally disagreeable. My own thoughts will afford me company enough. I leave you to yours.”

“My dearest girl, (replied he, more pleased at her compliance than affected at the manner of it) what I propose is for the best. I only study your convenience and satisfaction. If you can think of any other way, I am ready to do it.”

—“I have no power to think! I wish I never could! But let me be gone. I have staid too long already. Let me not interfere
“with

“with your regard to decency and honour.”
—Saying this, she directly huddled on her travelling habit, while he went to order his chaise to the door of his tent.

When he had done this, he returned to give her some necessary instructions for her journey, and palliate the offence he had given her, by caresses and professions of love and constancy. She heard him with the most contemptuous silence; and taking a purse of gold, which he gave her, with an air of indignation flung into the chaise the moment it arrived, without speaking a word, or making the least return to his fondness.

The spirit which she shewed on this occasion was evidently raised by resentment; and of course could not last long. Indeed she was scarce able to support it till she got into the chaise, where she melted into a flood of tears before she was out of sight. Her lover saw her distress; but the joy he felt at being freed from her company, prevented his feeling any concern at it. He shrugged up his shoulders in self-complacency; and, hugging himself on his deliverance, prepared to attend his commander at the appointed hour.



CHAP. IV.

War ! Horrid war ! They'll never want employment who think themselves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moon-shine. The great channel of secret intelligence.

THERE was something so deliberately base in the whole conduct of this person, that I left him with the highest contempt, and returned to his commander, who was by this time ready to wait upon the general to receive his orders.

The moment he entered the tent, the general arose, and, dismissing every other person present, received him with the highest respect.

“ Well, my friend, (said he) I am now ready to communicate to you the plan which I have formed ; but it will be proper that the person for whom you design the honour of the command, should be present.”

“ He is present, if your highness makes no objection to him. I know that all your plans are formed with judgment ; and as your more than usual earnestness about this shews it to be of importance, shall be proud of having the execution of it entrusted to my care.”

—“ You, my friend ! I know not what to say ; I cannot spare you from my side. I want your advice every moment. At the same time, I am unwilling to rob you of an opportunity of acquiring so much glory. Here is the intelligence I have received, and
2 “ here

“ here is the scheme I laid down upon it. You
“ will examine them, and alter any thing you
“ don’t approve, as circumstances may require.
“ To you I give a discretionary power, to act
“ as you see proper. Had I known you would
“ have gone, I should not have drawn any par-
“ ticular directions. Go; and success await
“ you.”

The other received this distinguished mark of confidence and favour with the highest pleasure; and, taking leave of the general, hastened away to join his troops, who were by this time drawn out ready to march. As soon as he had taken a view of them, he opened his instructions; and looking them over, put himself at the head of his men, with whom he marched all night, through woods and morasses deemed impassible, and at day-break found himself just before a quarter of the enemy, who, confiding in the distance and natural strength of their situation, had neglected to fortify themselves, and expected nothing less than to be attacked.

The difficulties of the march had fatigued his troops to such a degree, that it appeared next to madness to let them attack an enemy greatly superior to them in number. But their ardour was such, that they despised every advantage, and demanded to be instantly led on. The proper improvement of that enthusiasm is generally decisive. The commander therefore indulged their impetuosity, confiding in their valour; and convinced that his safety and success equally depended upon surprize, if he failed of which, it would be absolutely impossible for him even to make a retreat in the condition they were

were in, through such difficulties as they had struggled with in coming.

Scenes like this are impossible to be particularly described. Accustomed to conquer, they made their onset with a resolution that bore down all before them. In the confusion unavoidable on such occasions, their enemies fled at the first impulse, imagining they were attacked by the whole army, while the victors made an heavy slaughter of all who had no time to escape.

Had they stopped here, the advantage would have been important. But hurried on by their natural ardour, and flushed beside with success, they pursued the fugitives, who by this time had recovered from their first surprize, and formed upon an eminence, not very far from their late camp. The action now was really dreadful. The assailants were several times repulsed with severe loss, and owed their success at last to an effort of meer despair, being determined, to a man, to die rather than have their victory snatched thus out of their hands.

Their loss in this affair equalled that of their enemies, in the surprize of their entrenchments, and amounted to more than half their number; but they remained masters of the field, the honour of which they looked upon as a recompence for all.

On their return to the army the general met them, and embracing the leader, congratulated him on the glory of his victory; and *thanking* the men, in the orders of the day, sent them away happy; while he pleased himself with the success of his scheme, which gave him the appearance of doing something, flattered his employers

ployers with imaginary advantages, and raised his merit with them; at the same time, that in reality it served rather to protract than determine the war, by inspiring each party with a desire of revenging so equal a loss. However, it was deemed sufficient by him to be made the subject of congratulatory messages to the sovereign under whom he served, and all the powers confederate with him.

I was so sick of this mercenary method of making war, by which the miseries of that scourge of mankind were so highly aggravated, that I resolved to quit this army directly, and see whether that of the enemy, opposed to it, was conducted in a more rational manner.

I have said that my guide had given me power to transport myself, by a bare act of my will, wherever I pleased. Though this was necessarily a great advantage in many instances, there were yet some circumstances attending it, which made me chuse to decline making use of it, except upon extraordinary occasions. The instantaneous transition from one scene to another, distant and unconnected, was so unusual to me, that it left a chasm in my mind, and made me for some time at a loss to comprehend the things before me, for want of the introduction of entering gradually into them. This I had experienced more than once, when at any time my guide used to turn my eye suddenly and without some previous preparation, to any new scene in the review I made under his immediate direction. For this reason I resolved, when it was possible, to take the opportunity of accompanying some person, wherever I had a mind to go, whose business would serve as a clue, to introduce and direct

rest me without perplexity or confusion; by which method I had also the advantage of observing several things worthy of notice, in the countries through which I passed, which would have escaped me if I only flew over them in the other way.

For such a guide and companion I was not long at a loss. The general that very evening held a council of war, the resolutions of which two of the members could not refrain from talking over that night, after supper. Not suspecting that they were overheard, they canvassed all that had passed very freely, and in the course of their conversation mentioned several matters of the greatest importance to be kept secret. This the valet de chambre of him in whose tent they were was not inattentive to. He was a native of the enemy's country, and retained by them to procure intelligence of every thing that happened in the army where he was. Accordingly he placed himself where he could distinctly hear all that was said; and pretending sleep, to avoid the danger of detection, listened to their discourse with the greatest attention.

As soon as they separated, and he had put his master to bed, he wrote an exact account of all that he had overheard; and giving his letter to one of his associates, who passed for no more than a common purveyor to the camp, charged him to deliver it as directed, with the utmost expedition, as it was of the highest importance; and this experienced person I resolved to accompany.



.C H A P. V.

*The longest way about is often the nearest way home.
The pleasure of comparing notes creates friendship
in affliction. A new species of knight-errantry.*

THE armies lay so near each other that my guide might soon have performed his errand, could he have gone directly with safety. Instead of that, to avoid every suspicion, he took diametrically the contrary way, designing, when he should be out of danger of being observed, to make a turn, and go by a safer though more distant course.

I shall not attempt to describe the country through which we travelled. Could the most ambitious power that ever waged a war view such a scene with the dispassionate eye of reason but for one moment, it would strike his heart with horror, and make him desist from pursuits so destructive to his kind.

The first place we stopped at happened to be the town to which the officer had sent his mistress, as I have said before, under a pretext of her avoiding his wife. I should have taken notice, that in the course of the action he had often repented of not taking her advice, and wished himself to be in safety with her; though when it was over, his heart exulted so much in the success, that for some time he could think of nothing but war and glory. Indeed his behaviour had been such as in a great measure recovered

covered the esteem of his leader ; and with the rest of the army, who have a partiality for the indulgence of passion, and are particularly smitten with the more shewy virtues, totally obliterated his reproach.

As we entered the town, I accidentally saw her at a window, and my fellow-traveller stopping for refreshment, I took that opportunity to see how she liked her present situation. When I joined her, she and her friend were going to take a walk in their garden.

There was something particularly striking in the appearance of the latter. Tho' she had never been a regular beauty, and now had lost a good deal of the bloom of youth, it was impossible for man to behold her without desire ; at the same time, that the fire which flashed from her eyes shewed that she felt all the passions she inspired. A similarity in their circumstances had very soon improved their former acquaintance into that degree of intimacy which is commonly called friendship. When they were seated in an arbour at the bottom of the garden, " I wonder, madam, (said the lady of the house) that you have had no account from your friend, since this action. Public report says it was very warm ; but as no particular mention is made of him, it is certain he has come off safe. Officers of his rank are never overlooked."

" Indeed, madam, (answered the other) I know not what to attribute it to but the levity that rules all his actions. I am out of his sight, and consequently out of his mind. But I have no right to complain. I deserve it all, and more, for being such a dupe to my own vanity and his base designs, as to

C 3

"think

“think I could fix one whose soul is inconstancy itself. My eyes are at length opened to my folly. I deserve to be slighted thus, and deserted in a strange place.”

——“Have patience, dear madam! Do not seek for imaginary grievances. It is impossible he can desert you. No man can be so insensible as to slight such charms. The hurry of war is above our conception, and often prevents the performance of the duties dearest to the heart.”

——“O my friend! you are too good to seek consolation for a wretch just sinking into despair. But it is all in vain. What business had he with war? His fortune placed him above the common motive of necessity; and he assured me that he was sick of the folly of ambition, and would retire to some private place in Italy, where we should be unknown, and there dedicate his life to love and happiness. But no sooner had he obtained his base ends than he changed his scheme; and feigning I know not what reasons about laying down his commission with credit, and such idle stuff, he led me hither, just to shew me about, and make the shame of my being cast off the more notorious and mortifying, perhaps to enhance its merit, and prepare the way for a reconciliation with his wife, which his writing her that letter gives me sufficient ground to think he is not without thoughts of.”

——“For shame, dear madam! summon up your resolution, and do not torture yourself with such vain, such impossible apprehensions. I know your good sense, and would
“not

“not flatter you. A reconciliation with his
 “wife is an absurd thought. Not that I think
 “it at all improbable, on her part. The soft
 “nature of our sex can forgive any thing; but
 “the difficulty lies in himself. After giving
 “her such treatment, he can never forgive her,
 “can never believe she is sincerely reconciled;
 “and therefore will hate her for her hypocri-
 “sy, and be always in fear of some secret re-
 “venge. Or, even if she should convince him
 “to the contrary, the contrast between her
 “conduct and his, will be so mortifying to him,
 “and give her such a superiority in his own
 “eyes, that he will never be able to bear it;
 “and must avoid her presence, to preserve his
 “own peace. This, my dear, is your securi-
 “ty against this worst misfortune possible to
 “happen to a woman. Shame, poverty, any
 “thing, were preferable to being slighted for a
 “wife.”

—“What an infatuated creature was I to
 “bring myself into this state, that my happi-
 “ness must depend on such a base foundation?
 “Happiness, did I say? It is misery; the se-
 “verest misery. The constant anxiety and
 “fears, inseparable from such a state of uncer-
 “tainty, are worse than any actual misfortune.
 “But I deserve it all. I am inexcusable in the
 “eyes of the world, and odious in my own.
 “But what will not the baseness of man and
 “the folly of woman do?”

—“The base artifices of man to obtain
 “his ends, and his shameless perfidy after,
 “should be a warning to our sex; but
 “*Nature* ♣ *nature, let the wise say what they*
 “*will;*” and while woman has vanity and de-
 “fires,

“ fires, man will take advantage of the former,
“ to flatter her into the gratification of the
“ latter. You have this consolation, how-
“ ever, that your case is not singular. I do not
“ say, example justifies a wrong action; but
“ still it certainly is a satisfaction to think, that
“ others have fallen into as great errors as our-
“ selves; that we are not the worst of our kind.
“ All the folly that you upbraid yourself for
“ have I been guilty of, and with this severe
“ aggravation, that the person for whom I made
“ such a sacrifice was not in circumstances even
“ to delude me with the romantic schemes of
“ happiness, which helped to turn your head,
“ but was forced by necessity to apply himself
“ to the horrid trade of war for subsistence; so
“ that the pain of his absence, and the fear of
“ losing him, were heightened by the dreadful
“ apprehension of being reduced to dependence
“ on the friends, whose resentment I had so
“ justly provoked, if any thing should happen to
“ him. Yet all this have time and reflection re-
“ conciled me to, and taught me to submit with-
“ out regret to a fate which I can't remedy.

“ But let us drop this disagreeable and fruit-
“ less subject. My intercourse with my native
“ country is so little, that I had not even heard
“ of your affair till my friend sent me the plea-
“ sing account of the honour designed me by
“ your company; and then without any parti-
“ cular circumstances, which he either was un-
“ acquainted with, or had not time to write.
“ As I imagine there must be something un-
“ common and interesting in them, I shall
“ esteem it a favour, if you will indulge me
“ with the relation; and to encourage that
“ con-

“confidence, I will candidly inform you of
 “every thing concerning myself, the account
 “of which, I know, has been greatly and most
 “cruelly misrepresented; and if you do not find
 “much entertainment in it, you certainly will
 “ample consolation, from a comparison of my
 “case with yours. Not that all my adventures
 “have been barren of matter for the former
 “also, now that the danger and ridicule
 “which attended them at the time are over.
 “You seem surpris’d, my dear, at my mentioning
 “my adventures; but ours is literally
 “a life of adventure; and the moment a woman
 “takes the step that we have done, she
 “as it were commences knight-errant, and sallies
 “forth, if not to seek, at least subject to
 “meet adventures wherever she goes; every
 “man who thinks it worth his while assuming
 “a right to make his attacks upon her in what
 “manner he pleases.”



CHAP. VI.

*History of a remarkable Lady. The great benefit of
 polite education, with the force of good example.
 Common occurrences of various kinds, and their
 natural consequences.*

“THERE is nothing more absurdly un-
 generous than the invectives levelled at
 our sex indiscriminately, and without inquiring
 into the nature of our faults, and making just
 allowances for the causes leading, or rather in-
 deed impelling us to them.

“The youth of man is devoted to profitable instruction; but that of woman to initiation into the paths of ruin. While they are acquiring the general principles of knowledge, or learning some profession for the exercise and advancement of their future lives, we are taught nothing but trifles useless in themselves, and if not immediately criminal, yet leading indirectly to every crime, by turning the mind upon wrong pursuits, and weakening all its powers by an habit of idleness, impossible ever to be broken through; for idleness, my dear friend, is the bane of woman, let her attribute her failings to whatever other apparent cause she will.

“The most important part of my story may be comprised in a few words. You are acquainted with my family, and the particular circumstances of it, which made my situation more critically dangerous even than that of the generality of my sex; a danger that was still heightened by other circumstances peculiar to myself, and which, far from being attended to in that light, and guarded against with proper care, were looked upon as advantages, and accordingly urged to their utmost force.

“Born in a rank that placed all the pleasures of life within my reach, and blessed with a constitution equal to the enjoyment of them, I seemed marked out for the attacks of man; the luxuriance of my health kindling all the passions of nature, before reason could gather strength to guide and keep them within proper bounds, and the liberties allowed by fashion giving every opportunity for their gratification. Such an aptitude for pleasure was also forwarded, where it should have met with restraint.

“ There are some persons our relation to whom makes respectful mention of them a duty, be their conduct what it will. I shall therefore only say that, instead of instilling the principles of virtue by precept, and enforcing its practice by example, that person, whose example and precepts must have had the greatest weight with me, exerted them quite the contrary way, turning every thing serious into ridicule, and indulging every licentious passion in the most public manner. The consequence, with regard to me, may be easily concluded. Inclined by nature to pleasure, I willingly imitated the pattern set me as far as was in my power, and launched into every excess, as opportunity tempted; and if I paid greater regard to appearances, and conducted myself with more reserve, it was not from any restraint of principle; but because I saw that fashion did not authorise the same boundless liberty in youth, as it did in more advanced life.

“ But this reserve soon began to be very uneasy to me, and the pleasures I enjoyed, to be confined within narrower limits than I liked. Ripened, as I have said, by the luxuriance of my constitution, I felt all the warmest passions of my sex before it was imagined that my tender youth was capable of such sensations; and was treated like a child long after I thought myself a woman. The difficulties this laid me under were often very disagreeable. I made every explanation that was not a direct breach of decency, and gave hints which would have been readily understood from any one of a more advanced age. But, to my severe mortification, all was attributed to meer imitation; and Miss

was significantly said to echo her mama's words, when she would much rather have practised her actions.

"At length, however, I was relieved from this teasing situation, by one of those accidents which determine the fate of human life." As I was sitting one evening at an assembly, fretting myself to death to see several ladies, whom I looked upon as my inferiors in every thing but age, taken out before me, an officer, who read my thoughts and was resolved to have some amusement with me, came up to the place where I sat, and entering into chat with a young lady who was with me, led her to ask him if he did not design to dance; upon which, turning to me with an air of the most respectful politeness, he answered that he would, if I would do him the favour to be his partner.

"Such a preference, though to one of my most intimate acquaintances, for the manner in which she had asked the question was a plain offer to dance with him herself, was too pleasing to be slighted. I assented most readily, and in the height of my spirits at my triumph, gave such plain hints of the state of my inclinations, that he soon comprehended them; and being somewhat warm with wine, made advances to me which I had long wished for, but never received before.

"The impression made upon us by a first application is hard to be resisted. For my part, I was too much pleased with it to make the attempt; and really feeling all that warmth he professed, met his wishes more than half way. In such a life as I led, and to persons so disposed, opportunity could not long be wanted;

but when my lover came in a cooler moment to reflect on the consequences of an intrigue with one of my age and rank, should it ever happen to be discovered, prudence damped the ardour of his passion, and prevented his carrying the conquest he had made to the height of our mutual desires. But though he deferred it for the present, he did not absolutely give up the design, when circumstances should wear a more favourable aspect.

“In families like ours, every person who dressed well and would play had ready admission. He availed himself of this, and, under the appearance of paying a compliment to my mother, took every opportunity of attending me to all places of pleasurable resort.

“The difference of our age, and particularly his being married, obviated every suspicion of his intentions, as they should have opened my eyes to the infamy and folly of carrying on such a correspondence. But I was incapable of considering any thing beside the pleasure I felt in his company, which was evidently so sincere that, beyond his design, it affected him, and he began also to feel the passion he had only professed before.

“Though he conducted himself with the utmost circumspection and address, it was impossible to keep up such an intercourse long without the real motive of it being suspected. The first hint of this alarmed the pride of my relations, though the original cause had not been thought worthy of their regard. They instantly assailed me with expostulations and reproaches, as they did my lover with menaces; but all in vain.

“There is nothing more injudicious than to discover

discover a suspicion of what it is not absolutely in our power to prevent. It takes off the restraint of shame, and raises a false resentment that urges the crime in revenge of the injurious accusation. Instead of working the effect my friends designed, this conduct only hastened the consequence which they meant to hinder. Finding they could not themselves break off the intercourse between us, though they knew not certainly to what length it had been carried, they had recourse to superior authority, and prevailed to have my lover sent on an expedition, from which it was more than probable that he would never return; or at least if he did, it must be after such a length of time as they doubted not would wean my affections from him, and fix them on some other more proper object.

“ But all their schemes were disappointed. The expedition miscarried, and he returned before they imagined he had even reached the place of his destination; and far from being cooled in our mutual regards by absence, they rather gathered strength to break out with greater violence.

“ For some time, however, we observed so much caution, as to save appearances at least, let suspicions be what they would. But a gardener surprising us one evening in an arbour, when we thought ourselves safe from observation, though the fellow was highly bribed to secrecy, we thought it imprudent to depend upon him; my lover therefore threw up his commission, and we immediately eloped together out of the reach of my friends resentment, who, we were well convinced, would leave nothing undone to be revenged on the

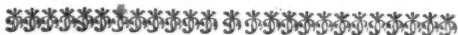
man.

man who had thrown such a public scandal on their family.

"I now thought my happiness compleat, and, giving a loose to love, despised the censure of the world, and looked no farther than the present moment. But a little time made a change in my sentiments, and I began to languish for the other pleasures which I had forfeited by the step I had taken.

"I would not by this intimate any uncommon alteration in my lover's behaviour; but the joy of novelty was worn off, desire was satisfied, and reflection began to obtrude upon us. Our situation necessarily precluded us from society, at least any that could afford us satisfaction, and confined us to each other; and when the tumult of passion began to subside, as we dared not apply to reason for relief, time grew tedious, and we mutually sighed for variety, to give a relish even to pleasure. The effect this had upon our tempers heightened our unhappiness. Unable to look into ourselves for the real cause, each accused the other of inconstancy and want of love; and these reproaches, instead of removing the complaint, were beginning to aggravate a coolness that was unavoidable, into determined dislike and aversion: for, my dear, let us in the warmth of youthful imagination flatter ourselves with what notions we will of eternal constancy and unalterable love, sense will soon be sated and languish for variety, if reason does not lend its assistance to fill up the dull pause of passion. With us the consequence was obvious, as our connexion depended entirely upon ourselves. But before we had time to resolve absolutely
on

on a separation, an event happened which removed the immediate cause of our disgust, and awoke all our former tenderness.



CHAP. VII.

Continued. An unusual effect of absence. The loss of reputation sometimes inconvenient. Reflections on a qualification which all pretend to, and few possess; with a curious account of a man of consequence.

“**I** HAVE observed to you that my lover had no fortune; all his hopes even depending on his military profession. The manner in which he had come away with me cutting off these for ever in his own country, necessity obliged him to seek employment among strangers. This the tumult of my thoughts had made me overlook, at the time when it was in my power to have prevented the consequences of it. But think what a state I must have been in when the hour of his departure came! I look back to it with horror even now when use has made his absence familiar to me, and softened many of the inconveniences of it.

“Without the conversation of a friend, to beguile the tedious melancholy hours, and blunt the sting of grief; without the approbation of my own mind, to sweeten thought and make reflection a pleasure, I was left a stranger in a strange place; and, what was still worst of all, every morsel I eat imbittered by the dreadful

ful consideration, that it was earned at the instant hazard of the life dearest to me in the world ; for the first thought of our parting removed all that weariness which had been the cause of our disgust, and the occasion of it doubly endeared us, by shewing how much we had given up, how much more we hazarded for each other.

“ Our parting exceeded the power of description. After the first transports of my grief were over, I sunk into a state of insensibility, and grew absolutely indifferent to myself and every thing about me, fixing my thoughts entirely on the days which were to bring me an account from him, and living only for their arrival.

“ At length lenient time began to administer its never-failing relief; and youth and health united their powers to dissipate a gloom so contrary to my natural disposition ; I gradually recovered my spirits, and felt again a relish for the pleasures of society. But these pleasures were very different from those which I had formerly delighted in. My mind had learned to think, and I had had time to view things in another light from that in which they had appeared before. My affections, it is true, were still the same, invariably fixed upon my friend, and all the wishes of my heart centered in him ; how justly though I did not dare to consider, holding every thing that concerned him too sacred to be even enquired into.

“ These wishes indeed were of a much more extensive and exalted kind, than those which had given rise to our connexion. You may have observed that I called him my *friend*. From this time, I looked upon him in that light ;

light; and if not entirely in that alone, the very uniting the idea of friendship with love was the highest improvement to the latter, and in a great measure purified it from every gross alloy.

"The effect this had upon my mind is scarce to be conceived. I was not incapable of thought; but I had never given myself time to think. The moment therefore that I began, I found a pleasure in it which cannot be conceived; every hour brought me knowledge that made me both surprised at, and ashamed of my former blindness and ignorance; I read in my own mind, though unhappily too late, all the wisdom necessary for the conduct of life. I thus literally became a new creature; and on my emergence from the solitude in which I had buried myself since my friend's departure, sought the company (and flatter myself that I was not unworthy of it) of the most valuable part of my sex.

"But I soon had the mortification to find myself precluded from this pleasing hope. Retired and unexceptionably as we had lived, the circumstances of our elopement had somehow been discovered; so that when I appeared in company, instead of meeting the reception I had fondly expected, my advances toward intimacy were repulsed by my own sex, and I found myself exposed to the familiarity and libertine addresses of the other, who always lay it down as a rule, that a woman who has broken thro' the laws of virtue with one man, has entirely thrown off all farther regard to them, and is a fair quarry for general pursuit.

"You may easily judge what a shock this was to me. I now began to feel the inestimable loss of reputation, and returned to my former

former retirement with an heart bursting with disappointment, shame, and remorse. But I was not suffered long to enjoy the peace I fought even there. My new admirers pursued me, and in spite of all I could say persisted in their galantry; and that often in a manner too gross to have been offered to any but a professed prostitute.

“Had this happened some time sooner, I should have instantly written to my friend, to come to my *relief* from such insolent abuse; but my thoughts had now taken a new turn, and I dreaded nothing more than its coming to his knowledge, for fear of any ill consequences to himself from the warmth of his temper, which I knew would be provoked to the highest rage at such an attempt. For this reason I resolved to take no notice of it to him, but behave in such a manner to my admirers as should make them ridiculous even in their own eyes.

“Habits long confirmed are not easily broken through by the best resolutions. I had a natural levity of temper; and the critical nature of my intercourse with my friend before our elopement, laid me under a kind of necessity of practising coquetry in my general conduct, in hopes of covering my particular connection with him. I will therefore take shame to myself, and confess that in my present solitary condition, the prospect of amusement, in playing off their foolish addresses, had some weight with me in this design; never considering that such a conduct was inconsistent with the principles in which I now prided myself, and must inevitably disappoint my hopes of recovering the esteem

esteem of the prudent and virtuous of my own, and rational part of the other sex.

“ I see you are affected with this melancholy detail ; but my heart was so full, that I could not stop its overflowing. I shall now conclude with one of the many adventures which this new scheme of mine produced, the oddity of which will probably restore you to spirits.

“ The persons who thought proper to do me the honour of declaring themselves my admirers were of every age and rank in the place. As they had discovered the nobility of my birth, they all thought it incumbent upon them to display their utmost politeness in the manner of making their addresses. Though every country has peculiar customs which constitute the rule of behaviour, true politeness is essentially the same every-where, and differs only in the external modes of expressing it. The mechanical part, as I may justly call it, which consists in cringes and compliments, may be easily learned ; but the unembarrassed ease and proper freedom of address and deportment, which denominate the character at first sight, and that desire to give pleasure, which pleases in its very appearance, must have a foundation from nature, in a benevolent and generous disposition, and be confirmed by early education and long practice. The latter indeed may give an habit that shall deceive a superficial view ; but where the former is wanting, the judicious observer will soon discover and despise the imposture.

“ I had abundant experience of the justice of this remark in the behaviour of my new admirers. Had I had nothing more than meer common amusement in my thoughts, this would have

have afforded me sufficient; but resentment at their impudence made me determined to push their folly to its utmost length, and then expose it to public ridicule.

“ The few who really possessed that politeness which all aped, soon perceived, by the manner of my receiving their advances, that they were disagreeable to me, and accordingly desisted from giving me any farther trouble. But their awkward imitators in the externals of good-breeding, forming their judgment of me from themselves, construed my complaisance into approbation, and thought I was pleased with what they said, because I did not directly fly into an outrage; but when I had taken time to look into their characters, and see which was fittest for my purpose to work upon, I gave the rest their dismissal, in the manner most like to take effect.

“ Among the selected few whom I permitted to flatter themselves with hopes of success was an old burgher, who had made an immense fortune by every iniquitous practice in the mysterious business of a *contractor*, for supplying the armies of the powers at war with provisions. Though he was sprung from the very dregs of mankind, and had passed his youth in the most sordid and servile employments, his heart was so puffed up by his riches, that he must on all occasions assume the man of birth and good breeding. This his own base disposition made it impossible for him to do in any thing beside their follies and vices, in all of which he made a most remarkable figure. He built fine houses, he bought pictures, he gamed; and, to compleat his character, he must now have a mistress of
quality;

quality; and I, forsooth, was the happy object he had pitched upon for this honour.

"I should have observed, that as soon as he took it into his head to commence a man of figure, he had married a wife, whose whole fortune consisted in the nobility of her family, being descended in the ninth remove from a German baron, and none of her illustrious ancestors having stained their blood by any kind of industry.

"Before he could obtain such an honour, he was obliged to hire an herald to deduce his pedigree, by the easy means of changing only four letters in his name, from an equally illustrious house; and to turn an only daughter by a former wife, whose industry had been greatly assistant to his making his fortune, out of doors, without any provision more than a bare support from absolute want.

"The disposition that could demand such terms was far from being softened, when its tyranny was confirmed by marriage. She governed in the most despotic manner. He was obliged to quit business. His fortune was lavished upon her relations, who let him know they thought him honoured by their acceptance of it; and he was but a cypher in his own house, where every servant quoted her command for disputing his authority, and told him directly that he was not qualified to give directions in so genteel a family.

"In such a situation it was not strange that he should seek for satisfaction abroad; but even in this his design was consistent with the rest of his conduct, and very different from what might most naturally be imagined. Insignificant as
he

THE REVERIE. 47

he was at home, he gave himself the highest airs of politeness and consequence among his companions, where he was safe from the terror of his tyrant's power, to confirm his title, to which character, as I have said before, he formed the project of paying his addresses to me, not from any particular passion he had for me.

C H A P. VIII.

Continued. A short way of making love. Bargains best made in few words; with an odd instance of old-fashioned folly.

“IT is impossible to give any description of this important person's courtship. His politeness, it is true, reached so high as to accost me with as many bows and cringes as make the awkward ceremonial of some crowned heads, and with an equally good grace. But here it all ended; and when he came to speak to me, it was in the same phrase and manner as he would have bargained for a parcel of cheese, or meal.

“Madam, (said he) understanding as how your ladyship's favours are to be disposed of, I come to treat about the purchase. I like the appearance of your commodities, and do not doubt but they are in good order, and merchantable; and shall therefore give you your own price. I am not one of your higgling chaps that make many words to a bargain. Ready money is my way; and the rest I leave to yourself.”

"Though I had studied my part very well, I was somewhat disconcerted at such an address. Recovering myself however in a few minutes, I was rather diverted than offended at the oddity of it, and resolved to drive the *bargain*, as he justly called it, in his own way. Accordingly I answered him with an affected confusion, that I did not rightly understand what he meant.

"Madam, (replied he) my meaning is to—
 "to—to—. In short madam, plain dealing
 "is best. My meaning is, to purchase some
 "certain favours from you, for which I am
 "willing to pay you the highest price of the
 "market. I despise making fine speeches; but
 "if you are inclined to deal, no one shall out-
 "bid me. I never think good wares too dear.
 "Come! Don't stand shilly shally! Say! Is
 "it a bargain, aye, or no?"

"It was impossible for me to pretend ignorance any longer; though I did not think proper to accept of his proposals too readily, for fear it should make him think slightly of my *ware*; at the same time that I saw it was necessary to keep up his hopes, by seeming to enter into treaty with him, as he was insensible of that expectation and anxiety which to minds of more delicacy are the food of love.

"You men of consequence (I answered)
 "have a peculiar way of doing every thing.
 "Your fortunes raise you above the formalities
 "necessary to be observed by other people. I
 "own I do not disapprove of your proposal;
 "but as it is a thing which I have never yet
 "thought about, I must take some time to
 "consider what terms are proper for me to
 "make.

"make. In the mean while I shall be glad to see you as often as it is convenient for you to do me that honour."

"Odso, madam, (returned he, overjoyed at his success) you are a sensible woman, and speak like one that has been used to business. I like you the better for your frankness. It is my own way. And when you have fixed your price, we shall not differ. There shall be no delay on my part. Ready money! Ready money is always my word."—"Saying this, my lover took his leave, and left me not a little at a loss how to manage with him.

"As I was no stranger to the circumstances of his family, the first thought that occurred to me was, to reveal the whole to his wife, and concert measures with her for punishing his infidelity and presumption. But, upon reflection, I enlarged my scheme, and resolved to try if I could not turn his ridiculous passion to some advantage for his deserted daughter, before I gave him up to her chastisement.

"Accordingly I went directly to a lady with whom I knew she was acquainted, and enquiring, as if from common curiosity, into her circumstances and character, had the pleasure to find her every way worthy of my regard and assistance. I therefore sent for her very privately that evening, as if to give her some needlework to do for me, her father's allowance being so small that she was obliged to have recourse to industry, to enable her to live with any degree of comfort, though shame made her do it with as much privacy as possible; and giving my conversation that turn which I

thought most likely to win her confidence, pressed her to let me know her designs and prospects for life, for making which enquiry I assured her I had other motives than meer curiosity.

“Moved by the manner in which I spoke, she burst into a flood of tears; and, as soon as she was able to speak, told me modestly, that she had no prospects, and was incapable of forming any designs; that indeed the height of her wishes would be to be married to a young man who had been bred to business under her father, but was turned off as well as herself on the new-ordering of his family; that they had loved each other from their infancy; but he having no fortune to enter into trade with, his family, which was very reputable, having been ruined by the calamities of war; and her father abandoning her in the manner he did, they could not think of transmitting their misfortunes to their innocent posterity by marrying; and therefore had vowed to each other to live single, as the only proof they could give of the sincerity of their mutual attachment.

“I was not proof to such a story. I embraced her tenderly; and assuring her of my friendship, bade her hope for an happy change in her fortune very speedily. I then enquired how much would be sufficient to settle her husband in business with a prospect of success, and encourage them to marry? and on her answering, that if they had about a thousand crowns to add to some little matter they had already made a shift to lay up by their frugality, they would venture, and trust the event to the blessing of providence on their honest industry. I told her, that

that if I was not disappointed much beyond my expectation, she should not long want a greater sum than that; but that all depended on her not taking the least notice of her having been with me, or even mentioning my name to any one living, till I should give her permission. This caution she promised to observe most carefully, and then took her leave with a lighter heart than she had felt for some time.

“My design upon my *ready-money* lover was now urged by a better motive than either amusement or revenge, which had first set me upon it. The money, which I doubted not to extort from his absurd passion, I resolved to give to his daughter; and then to make use of the assistance of his wife, to avoid performing my part of the bargain, and compleat my original scheme, who, I was sensible, would not only punish him sufficiently for his vicious folly, but also expose him to the highest and most public ridicule.



C H A P. IX.

Continued. Many buyers raise the market. On ballancing avarice and vanity, the former kicks the beam.

“ACCORDINGLY, when he came to pay me a visit next morning, I gave him an opportunity of renewing his treaty, which he pressed so warmly to be brought to a conclusion, that, after a little affected hesitation, I con-

descended to capitulate; and at length assented to his proposal for the consideration of two thousand crowns.

“At the mention of such a sum he looked aghast. “Two thousand crowns! (said he, as soon as he could shut his mouth to articulate a word) Why, sure your ladyship can’t be serious! I never heard of such a thing in my life. Two thousand crowns for a night’s lodging! I have lodged a whole army for less before now. You surely can’t be serious, in making such a demand! A prince is not able to purchase your favours at such a price.”

“Then no prince shall have them, Sir, (answered I, putting on a look of offended dignity) and if you think my demand too high, you are welcome to go where you may be served cheaper. I know where I can have more from another person; but as you spoke first, I would not treat with any one else till I had concluded with you.”

— “More than two thousand crowns! Death, madam, it is impossible. Who is able to offer more than two thousand crowns?”

— “Really Sir, I do not think myself obliged to answer such a question. However, to let you see that I am above imposing on you, What do you think of the count?”

“At that word his pride instantly took fire. He had been born a vassal of the count’s family, to efface the remembrance of which he now took every opportunity of entering into competition, and insulting him with the ostentatious display of his superior wealth. This I knew, and therefore made use of his name, though without any authority, as the surest method of
working

working him up to my design, being confident he would scorn to be outdone in any thing, much more a matter so essential to his character, by one whom he both hated and despised so highly.

“The event shewed I had judged right.”

“The count, madam! (said he, with an air of contempt) Why! What of him? Is not my money as good as his?”

—“Yes, Sir, I believe it may; but you do not seem so well inclined to part with it. I thought, after what you said last night, that we should not have a second word; but I find people can talk of their ready money, without opening their purses.”

“Madam! I’d have you to know, madam, that I scorn such an imputation. It is well known that I never go back from my word, madam. When I say it, I will do it. But really, don’t you think you ask too much? Is there no prevailing on you to abate?”

—“Sir, you said yesterday, that you did not like to make many words; no more do I, Sir. On the strength of your offering ready money I set the very lowest terms; and I wonder how you can think them touch to a woman of my quality. In my country, I have known an orange-girl get more. But perhaps you would chuse such low-lived creatures; though I own I took you for a person of better spirit, and above descending to any thing unworthy of your rank; and I am sorry to find that I am mistaken. It is true I had some hints of the kind given me, and therefore did not give the count a positive denial; so that I can easily come to treat with

“him again. He knows what is due to a lady
 “of distinction, and will not make words about
 “such a trifle. So, Sir, your humble ser-
 “vant.”

“While I was making this notable and deli-
 cate speech, which I could scarce suppress my
 laughter to utter, he stood in the most whimsi-
 cal situation, as if ballancing the account be-
 tween avarice and vanity. At length the latter
 prevailing, “Hold, madam, (said he, catching
 “me by the sleeve, for fear I should leave him)
 “pray don’t be in such a violent hurry. I know
 “how to behave to you as well as the count,
 “and better too; and I’ll see him damn’d be-
 “fore he shall touch the hem of your gar-
 “ment. I’ll make him know that he shall not
 “pretend to outbid me, for any thing I have a
 “mind to! That I will! And so, madam, you
 “shall have your price, without any draw-
 “back; and in earnest of the bargain, take this
 “purse of an hundred ducats. Only name the
 “time and place; that’s all. That’s all; I won’t
 “stand for a receipt.”

—“Then, Sir, if you will please to come
 “secretly, at ten to-morrow night, to my gar-
 “den-door, I’ll meet you there myself, and
 “conduct you up.”

—“Very well; I’ll be sure to come. I am
 “always punctual to a minute, in those affairs;
 “but must I bring the rest of the money with
 “me, or will you make me your banker, and
 “draw it out as you want it?”

—“I should, Sir, with all my heart; but
 “it happens that I have occasion for it to-mor-
 “row-morning, and therefore must beg the fa-
 “vour of you to bring it to me by nine o’clock.”

—“How

—“How, madam! Nine o'clock in the morning! I thought you said ten at night.”

—“Yes, Sir, so I did, so perform my part of the bargain. I only mean that you should bring the money so early, as I have a pressing call for it in the fore-noon. I presume you have no objection to obliging me so far; and don't doubt my honour to keep my promise.”

—“N—N—No, madam! I—I—I can't say as how I do doubt your ladyship's honour in the least, for the matter of that. But still, I—I—I—. Will not the evening do as well? I should be glad to oblige you, to be sure; but advancing money before we have even had a sample of the goods, is quite out of the way of business. It is what I never do.”

—“Then, Sir, here is your purse again; and I am sorry to have thrown away so much time. I must and will have the money to-morrow morning. I know the count will make no difficulty. Persons of quality have confidence in each other.”

—“Madam, I have as much confidence as he, or any man; and as for *quality*, with the addition of my wife's arms, I have nine quarterings more than he. His rank indeed! And so madam, I am ready to oblige your ladyship with all my heart, if it was ten times more. I only said it was out of the course of business. I did not refuse you. No! No! I know better what is due to a person of rank, than to refuse such a trifle. We always have a regard for one another.”

—“Then Sir, I may depend upon you, at nine in the morning, without fail.”

——“You may most assuredly, madam; and
“so take the earnest again.”

“All things being thus settled, I permitted
him the honour of a salute, as earnest of the
bargain on my side, and sent him away quite
happy.

“I suppose his impatience for the arrival of
the next morning was not quite so high as mine,
violent as his passion was. However, he was
punctual to his time; and being immediately
admitted to my dressing-room, as soon as the
servants withdrew, “Here, madam, (said he,
“with an emotion that shewed the struggle in
“his breast at what he was doing) here is the
“money. You may tell it over. I have only
“deducted the hundred ducats I gave you in
“earnest, and the usual discount for advancing
“money before-hand; only five per cent, no
“more; and we never do it for less. Business
“will not afford it.”

“Well, Sir, (answered I, fully satisfied that I
“was secure of so much) I do not understand
“those matters; but I leave it entirely to you.
“And to convince you that I am a person of
“honour, I will be as punctual to my appoint-
“ment as you have been to your’s. At ten
“precisely, you shall find me at the garden-
“door. But, for fear of being observed, don’t
“you think it would be better if you were to
“disguise yourself some-way. A lady’s repu-
“tation, you know, is a very tender thing;
“neither would it be so proper, that a person
“of your dignity should be discovered. It would
“lessen your importance in the eyes of the
“public.”

——“Why, madam, to be sure, what your
“lady-

THE REVERIE. 57

“ ladyship says is very right; and therefore,
 “ though I shall scarce know myself when I lay
 “ by my robes, I will strive to do without them
 “ for once, and come disguised in the dress of
 “ any private gentleman. I have heard that
 “ the greatest pleasure of an intrigue is in the
 “ stratagems and tricks that are practised to hide
 “ it. Hah! hah! hah! And so I wish your
 “ ladyship a good morning. Atten! Remem-
 “ ber at ten.”

“ My scheme having succeeded thus far, I
 was impatient to communicate their good for-
 tune to those who were to reap the benefit of it.
 I therefore wrote to his daughter, to come to
 me that night about eleven o'clock, and bring
 her lover with her. The great difficulty now
 was how to open the affair to the wife, in such
 a manner, that she should be ready to be pro-
 duced at a proper time, without danger of her
 letting her wrath break out too soon, so as to
 prevent the accomplishment of my design.

“ The only way I could think of was, to go
 to the lady from whom I had the story of the
 family, and who, I had reason to believe, would
 gladly give her assistance to promote any scheme
 for punishing her husband, and exposing him to
 ridicule. At the first mention of the affair, she
 entered most heartily into it; and, to make sure
 of the lady, went directly and engaged her to
 spend the evening with her; not chusing to let
 her know a word of the matter till every thing
 should be ripe for execution, for fear of the vio-
 lence of her temper.



CHAP. X.

*Continued. Listeners seldom like what they hear.
The danger of provoking high blood; with the
great merit of peace-making in the modern way.*

“ALL things being thus prepared, the expected hour at length arrived when I attended to admit my gallant, who did not make me wait long. On my opening the garden-door, I was surprised to see the manner in which he had disguised himself. He had put on an old suit of cloaths all over dawb'd with lace, which had belonged half a century before to a relation of his wife's, whom the tradition of her family recorded to have been a general officer; and which she preserved with the most religious care, as an indisputable proof of her illustrious descent, supplying new lace or cloth occasionally, to repair the depredations of time.

“The absurdity of putting on for privacy a dress whose glaringness and singularity must attract the notice of every one who saw it, and would probably draw the mob after his heels, could not have escaped any one but himself; but his head was too intent upon making a figure in the eyes of his mistress, to mind any thing else; as I was far from being displeased at it, my motive for desiring him to disguise himself being only to expose him to stronger ridicule on detection, which I did not design he should escape.

“As

“As soon he entered the garden, his first care was to make me observe the brilliancy of his appearance, by telling me that according to my desire he had come in disguise, but could not possibly debase himself, or dishonour me so much as to put on any dress unworthy of his rank, or improper to appear in before me. I thanked him for my share of his compliment; and being apprehensive that he might be for taking some liberties which I did not like, if I made any delay there, led him directly up to my own chamber, where I left him in the dark, telling him I would return as soon as I saw my servants properly disposed of.

“I then went down into the parlour, where my confederate had just brought his wife, big with expectation of hearing something from me that nearly concerned her honour. Few words were requisite to introduce a subject which all were equally impatient for. I directly unfolded to her the injustice designed to her bed; (the affair of the money I thought proper not to mention for obvious reasons) and telling her, that having in vain tried every argument to get rid of his importunity, and convince him of the flagrancy of such a crime against a lady of her rank, I had at length pretended to comply with his desires, on purpose to give him up to her admonitions and authority, which I hoped might be more effectual to reclaim him; and therefore made an appointment with him, as if to gratify his vile desires, in consequence of which he was that very moment in my chamber, whether she was at liberty to go to him.

“It is impossible to describe the effect this story had on her. She stood for some moments.

convulsed with rage. At length recovering herself a little, she was for going directly and trampling the wretch under her feet; but her friend interposed, and insinuating, as we had concerted, that though what I said might possibly be very true, it would yet be a satisfaction to the lady to be a witness to it herself; wherefore she thought it would be the best way, if I pleased, for me to return to him, and enter into some such dissuasive discourse as I had before used, his answers to which would confirm what I had said, and be a testimony against him, that he could not attempt to deny or evade. To this I replied with an offended air, that I was not accustomed to have what I said doubted; however, on such an occasion as this I should wave all punctilio, to give satisfaction to one for whom I had so high a respect as her ladyship; and therefore was ready to do that, or any thing else she should desire.

"Flattered by this compliment, she nodded majestically, and suppressing her wrath as well as she could, let me know that she would attend me to the disgraceful scene.

"My gallant was by this time beginning to be impatient. On my opening the door (which I left open for his wife, though I shot the lock to impose upon him) he advanced to me, and taking me by the hand asked why I had not brought a light? "Deeds of darkness (said I, with a loud sigh) should avoid the light. I do not believe I shall ever bear to see the light again after consenting to give you this meeting. But I hope you will reflect on the blackness of such a crime as this you have been so long soliciting me to, and desist before it is too late."

—"Hey-

THE REVERIE. 61

— "Hey-day! What can be the meaning of all this? What fool's-play can you be at now? Come! Come! For shame, stand to your word. I cannot stay long with you to-night. I must be at home before my *Jezebel* of a wife, to pull off these cloaths. If she should see them upon me, I should never hear the last of it. I cannot stay above an hour; and so make haste."

— "I am amazed, Sir, that you can speak of a lady of your wife's rank in so disrespectful a manner! It gives me a very bad opinion of you. She merits better treatment; and after the honour she has done you in condescending to be your wife, it is the highest injustice and ingratitude in you to wrong her bed with any body else."

— "Blood, madam, you are enough to make a man mad, to stand trifling so at such a time as this! As to what you say about my wife's bed, it is all nonsense. No man can bear to bed with such an ugly, filthy brute; and for the honour she did me, I am sure I have paid dearly for it. I have raised her great family from beggary. They had not a rag to cover their illustrious nakedness, till I took compassion"—

"At these words, in burst his wife like a tygress robbed of her whelps. "Villain! slave! base mechanic! (exclaimed she) You take compassion on my family! You raise them from beggary! But I'll not stoop to talk to you. I'll have satisfaction! I will! The blood of your base heart shall wash away the affront. I'll summon all my relations to-morrow-morning, and lay your villainy before

62 THE REVERIE.

“fore them. They’ll vindicate the honour of
 “our house; they’ll do justice to themselves
 “and me, in a manner that shall strike terror
 “into all such ungrateful wretches.”

“While she poured out these threats, she
 was searching for him all round the room; but
 he fortunately escaped her by creeping under
 the bed, the moment he heard her voice, where
 he lay in a situation that may easily be conceived.
 Not being able to find him, she roared out for
 lights; but I thought it would be too severe to
 give him up, till her anger should be somewhat
 cooled, and therefore countermanded them;
 and as she had by this time raved herself out of
 breath, I took her by the hand, and leading
 her to a chair, “Pray, madam, (said I, in a
 “soothing accent) sit down for a moment and
 “strive to compose yourself. I own, the pro-
 “vocation you have received is very great, to
 “have your bed slighted, and your person spoke
 “so injuriously of.”—

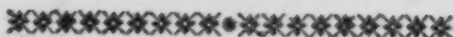
“Mention not that! (answered she) men-
 “tion not that! I despise him too much to re-
 “gard any thing he can say of myself. But
 “my family! The villain, to traduce my fa-
 “mily, and talk of their being under obliga-
 “tion to him! They who suffered him to come
 “into their pedigree, and quarter their arms!
 “I will have revenge. I will have his heart’s
 “blood.”

“The resentment you shew, madam, (in-
 “terposed the other lady) is worthy of you,
 “and proves the nobility of your blood. No
 “person of family can bear such abuse. But
 “still, madam, consider who it is that has of-
 “fered it. A creature that is not worthy of
 “the

"the resentment of your relations, and has not
 "the spirit to meet them to be killed fairly,
 "and as a man of honour should kill him; and
 "you would not have them turn assassins and
 "murder him, and so let all his fortune go to
 "his daughter, as you could not inherit it after
 "such an action. For all these reasons I would
 "recommend it to you to make up this ugly
 "affair. What has passed is known only to
 "ourselves, and need go no farther. Where-
 "fore, if he will ask your pardon for what he
 "intended to do, and actually said to this la-
 "dy, and will make over half his fortune to
 "you, to settle upon your own family, in case
 "you should have no children yourself, I think
 "your ladyship had better forgive him."

"The other heard her out with great pa-
 "tience; and then pausing for some time, as if to
 "weigh matters, "Well, madam, (said she, sigh-
 "ing) since you advise it, I submit. For this
 "offence I will accept of the satisfaction you
 "propose; but let him take care how he repeats
 "it."

"Matters being thus happily adjusted, I cal-
 "led for lights, and desired my gallant to make
 "his appearance, who having overheard all that
 "passed, ventured to creep out of his hole, tho'
 "without daring to speak a word.



CHAP. XI.

Concluded. A relapse is often worse than the first disorder. By the help of good friends, the grey mare proves the better horse. The whole concluded with some interesting reflections, which prove that people should look before they leap.

“THE candles discovered a groupe of figures not easy to be described. My unfortunate gallant, all pale and trembling, his bushy wig turned awry, and the powder of it spread over his cloaths, which were all tumbled and dropping wet from something he had spilled in his creeping under the bed, fixed his haggard eyes upon his tender mate, who no sooner perceived the splendid reliicks of her kinsman’s rank abused in such a manner, than forgetting her pacific resolution, she relapsed into all her former fury.

“Audacious villain (exclaimed she, her eyes glaring with rage, and her whole face distorted with every diabolical passion) “to profane that sacred testimony of the honour of my family on such a wicked, base occasion! Were you not afraid that the offended spirit of it’s illustrious owner would come and tear it from your vicious carcase? But he has left the task to me.”

“Saying this, she flew at the trembling wretch with an impetuosity not to be prevented, and, driving her fangs into his cheeks, in an instant bathed his face in blood. Cowards when
aroused

aroused are always most desperate. Though nothing could have made him face her fury deliberately, the moment he felt her claws in his flesh he forgot his fears, and giving an hideous roar, returned her assault with equal violence, fastening one hand in her hair, and striking her on the face and breast with all his might with the other.

"The combat now was really terrible, and the victory for some time doubtful. But at length with our assistance, who, when we thought she had suffered enough, under the appearance of parting them, overpowered him, the amazon got the better, and kneeling on his breast as he lay on the ground, vented her rage upon him while she was able to strike a blow. When she could beat him no more, we made a shift to separate and raise them from the ground, and having with some difficulty restored them both to their senses, resumed our mediation, in which we were so successful, both parties being sufficiently sick of the quarrel, that a reconciliation was agreed to, which we took care should be on the most mortifying terms to the old letcher.

"During all these transactions, my poor gallant used frequently to look at me so significantly, that I was afraid his wife would have observed it, and extorted an explanation. But it escaped her notice, and he thought proper not to mention any thing of the matter; whether that he judged such an instance of extravagance would only provoke her more; for, lavish as she was of his money upon her relations, she grudged him every penny he spent; or concluded from my conduct, that I should deny

deny the charge, which in that case would only aggravate his shame, as he had no proof of it.

“To confirm him in this opinion, which I guessed to be the cause of his silence when his lady and he were first ready to depart, I mustered up all the assurance I could; and addressing myself to her; “I hope, madam (said I) “that if this odd affair should ever happen to “be known, you will bear witness to the purity and virtue of my conduct: And you, Sir, “I must caution against taking any liberties “with my character, with a view of extenuating your own crime, or laying any thing to “my charge which you cannot plainly prove, “as you regard your life; which, you are sensible, would be made answerable for any insult offered to me.”

“To this speech she replied in the affirmative, while her husband returned only one of his expressive looks, and then they lovingly departed together.

“When my confederate and I had indulged our mirth for some time, we went to my gallant’s daughter, who, with her lover, was just then come. On my entering the room where they were, the strongest anxiety appeared in both their faces, though modesty prevented their giving it utterance. Not to keep them in pain, “You told me yesterday, madam, (said I, taking her by the hand) that a thousand crowns “would give you a prospect of happiness, with “this deserving gentleman. I now have the “pleasure to inform you, that I have applied “to your father, with whom I have pleaded “so successfully, that I have got you two “thousand from him, which I have ready to “give

"give you, and hope heaven will bless it in your hands."

"What this happy pair felt on this occasion, may be easier conceived than described. They fell together on their knees before I could possibly prevent them, and kissing my hands, bathed them with tears of extasy. My heart melted in sympathy with them. I raised them from the ground, and embracing them both, led them, unable to speak, into the next room, where I put the money into the lady's hands, who directly gave it to him. We then sat down to supper, during which, to relieve their spirits that were sinking under the pressure of joy and gratitude, I gave a loose to the pleasure my heart was overflowing with, and entertained them in the most obliging and familiar manner; and when the servants retired gratified their curiosity, which I saw raised to a torture, with an account of the whole affair, but in the light most favourable to my old gallant, to avoid giving his daughter pain, who, notwithstanding his unnatural treatment of her, never mentioned him but in terms of duty and respect.

"Though the burgher and his lady had promised, as really they ought for their own sakes, to keep this curious affair secret, it soon took wind. The lady, whose natural sweetness of temper was not much encreased by this affair, never saw the livid marks of her husband's prowess upon her face, or thought of the profanation of her kinsman's cloaths, that she did not read him a comfortable lecture on his baseness and debauchery before all companies; by which means all she knew of the matter became public. But this was not all. My gallant

lant had boasted among his intimates of his supplanting the count in my favour; and when he was so far recovered from the effects of his wife's resentment as to be able to shew his face, scrupled not to say that he had carried his success to the height of his wishes, though he never took courage to renew his applications to me, nor even, which I wondered at, to demand restitution of his money.

"This laid me under a necessity of telling the whole affair, in my own vindication, both his giving me the money and the use I had made of it, which gave the story another turn; those who were most unfavourable in their opinions of me before now changing their note, and extolling my justice and generosity to the skies. Nor was this the only advantage I received from it. The rest of my admirers, terrified by the burgher's fate, thought proper to draw off in time, and give up a pursuit that might be attended with danger; so that I was delivered from the persecution of their impertinence.

"By this time the campaign was ended, and my friend returned to me, who enjoyed the whole story with the highest pleasure; but as my gallant might some-way have it in his power to make my abode in that place disagreeable, for he was more vexed at the use I had applied his money to, than at his own losing it, before he took the field next season, he removed me hither where I have lived ever since, if not in the credit I could wish, yet without any new reproach, and where I want nothing so much as the approbation of my own mind to make me happy.

"You

THE REVERIE. 69

“ You may probably wonder why I do not seek this happiness, by breaking off my present connection with my friend, and returning to my family ! But, alas, the things which we ought to do are not always in our power. I see what is best, but I follow that which is worst. My heart is now so wedded to him, (if I may use the expression) that death only can part me from him ; and though the pleasure I enjoy in his company is never without allay, even for the poor pittance of his time which it is in his power to spend with me, from the reflection of its being criminal both in the commencement and continuation of it, I have not resolution, I cannot even say I have a wish to be separated from him.

“ Beside, whom should I return to ? What happiness could I expect at home ? My family indeed have let me know that they would receive me ; but how ? Not to their esteem ! That is impossible. As a reprobate whom they have admitted out of charity, to give her an opportunity of repentance, and save her from ruin in another life as well as this ; as a reproach to them, which they would keep among themselves to hide it from the world. Every look would upbraid me, every word insult my folly. At least consciousness would take it in that sense, which were equally intolerable.

“ I have thus, my dear friend, given you a view of my unhappy life, both to entertain you and ease my own heart, by pouring out its griefs into your bosom. If you think me worthy of the like confidence, or that my advice can be of any advantage to you, I shall give it with as much sincerity as I shall receive yours with gratitude

titude upon all occasions; and I promise you the most inviolable secrecy."



CHAP. XII.

One story generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dress. Common consequences of fashionable intimacy, and female friendship, with the secret of making a right use of a shoeing-horn.

THE other lady, who had listened to her friend's story with the strongest attention, was some time before she made any answer. At length, with a down-cast look and heavy sigh, "I should make a bad return, dear madam, (said she) for the good opinion you have shewn of me, could I harbour any doubt of you, or refuse to comply with any thing you desire. My unhappy story has few circumstances; and O that the sequel of it may have fewer yet! Those in which it differs from your's are all to my disadvantage. The principles of virtue were inculcated in my opening mind with the tenderest care, and enforced to my imitation by the most lively example. I passed the most dangerous season of life, when ripening youth too often makes passion an over-match for reason, without reproach; and at last ran head-long into ruin, with my eyes open.

"You must wonder at a conduct so contrary to every motive that should influence a creature

endowed with the faintest glimmering of reason. But the cause of it may easily be traced. Public fame had flattered me into an opinion of my own beauty, and many examples justified my ambition of rising to the most exalted fortune on the merit of that alone. Yielding therefore to the impulse of vanity, I thought of nothing but improving that advantage; and, under the appearance of studying my own pleasure, laid snares, with the most anxious and mercenary assiduity, for every man whom I thought proper for my purpose: the wretched toil to which the greatest part of our sex devote the prime of life.

“ I proceeded for some time on this plan, when the gentleman with whom I am at present connected took it into his head to single me out for the object of his gallantry. Though his being a married man cut off all hopes of success in my favourite scheme, there was something so flattering to my vanity in being admired by a person of his rank, that I could not resist the pleasure of it, especially as I meant nothing criminal, and this kind of gallantry had the sanction of fashion.

“ As the general intercourse kept up among people of distinction had been improved into some degree of intimacy between this gentleman’s wife and me, the assiduity with which he paid attention to me upon all occasions for some time passed for the effect of familiarity and friendship. But whether she suspected the truth, and therefore thought proper to shew a coolness to me, or that consciousness of deserving it made me think so, I at length began to fancy that she slighted me; and being confirmed

firmed in that opinion, by finding myself omitted in a general invitation of her acquaintances, I conceived the most violent resentment against her; to wreak which in the severest manner I affected to listen to her husband's addresses with pleasure, and gave reason for suspicions which were foreign to my heart, though at the same time I was not insensible that by such a conduct I ran the hazard of defeating my original design; but this I vainly thought I could remedy when I pleased, by breaking off all connection with him as soon as I had gratified my pique against her.

"There is nothing more dangerous than listening to the allurements of vice, though with the most innocent intention. It is like playing on the brink of a precipice. By making the idea familiar, it takes off its terrors, and brings on a false security that generally betrays into a fall.

"I expected that my admirer's wife would soon perceive this change in my conduct, and by breaking with me entirely give me an opportunity of triumphing over her in the most mortifying manner, by shewing the most sovereign contempt for what made her so unhappy. But instead of this she continued to treat me with the same if not greater intimacy than ever, and convinced me that the offence I had taken had been all groundless.

"Whether she did this to retort my schemes, and make me look despicable even in my own eyes, or in hopes of shaming me into a proper sense of my behaviour by the contrast between it and hers, I cannot say; but this I know that it had the former effect most fully,

and would certainly have succeeded in the latter also, had it not been for one of those accidents which, as you justly observed, shew the insignificancy of human wisdom, and rule our lives.

“A gentleman of distinguished rank and fortune, but who was far advanced in years, and in every respect an object of aversion and contempt, unhappily took a liking to me. The advantages of such a match dazzled the eyes of all my friends, who exerted their utmost influence to induce me to consent to it. But tho’ it was the very object I had all along had in view, and exceeded the most sanguine hope my vanity had ever formed, when it came to the test, my heart rebelled, and I could not bring myself to barter happiness for grandeur.

“Though I gave this answer in the most determined manner, and supported it with reasons impossible to be refuted, my lover would not desist. On the contrary, he seemed determined to weary me out by his importunity, and, to second it, engaged the authority of my family, on the strength of which he always urged his odious suit with the most insulting confidence.

“The contrast between this conduct, and the respectful insinuating address of my former admirer was too striking. I began to hearken to him with more pleasure than ever; and, from a confirmed persuasion that I could not be happy with the other, rashly concluded that I must be so with him, as if the alternative was unavoidable.

“As my ancient suitor had settled his bargain with my friends, he looked upon me as
VOL. II. E secure,

secure, and therefore made no secret of the affair. The moment it came to my lover's ears, he expostulated with me upon it in the most passionate and tender terms; and though I had yet formed no resolutions which made it necessary for me to account for my conduct to him, I held the other in such aversion, that in the weakness of my heart I could not conceal it; nor my unhappiness and apprehensions from the authority and importunities of my friends.

“He was too well versed in the science of intrigue not to take immediate advantage of this. He consoled with me on the cruelty of such a persecution, enumerated the many instances in which it had been unhappily successful; and heightened my dislike of the other into abhorrence, by several anecdotes of his character which I was before a stranger to. Nor did he stop here. As he was intimate with his rival, he instantly exerted all his art to urge him to press his suit with me more earnestly, imputing my refusal to coyness which wanted only to be wooed, and turning his bashfulness, as he called it, into ridicule.

“While he stimulated him in this manner, he made me believe that he used every argument which generosity and honour could suggest, to dissuade him from a pursuit that he saw was so disagreeable, but all in vain; the other declaring, that, if I persisted much longer, he would have recourse to the authority of my friends, which they had promised to exert at a proper time, when resistance should be out of my power. This scheme was too successful. Urged on by him, my suitor pressed his addresses with redoubled warmth, and enforced them
with

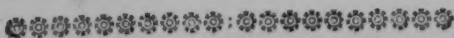
THE REVERIE. -75

with new offers, which engaged my friends still more sanguinely in his behalf; and by that means confirmed all my lover had said to me, who aggravated my apprehensions of compulsion to such a height, fixing the very hour when I was to be sacrificed to a particular day on which I had been obliged to accept of an invitation to his country-seat, in company with some of my nearest relations, that in the madness of affright I listened to the proposals he made me, and consented to come away with him, persuaded that, however blameable such a step might be in other cases, self-preservation justified it in me; so that I really ran away from my suitor, rather than with my lover.

“The mystery of this management I was not long unacquainted with. He was so proud of the address he had shewn in it, that the moment he had me in his power, he could not avoid boasting of it in the vanity of his heart. This was the first thing that awoke me to reflection, though I have since had abundant reasons beside. The mortification of finding myself duped in such a manner, by one whose understanding I had ever held in too low esteem, to have any apprehensions of the kind, with the ridiculously vexatious circumstances which attended my elopement, had such an effect upon me, that I wrote to my friends in the anguish of my soul, to beg I might be permitted to return, and throw myself absolutely upon their mercy in every respect but that of being sacrificed to that odious old creature; but a false pride prevented their complying with my request. They concluded, though most injuriously, that my ruin was compleated, and

rejected me with disdain, as a reproach to them.

“I then had no choice left, and was obliged to persist from necessity in the crime of folly, as, I am persuaded, is the case of many of those who appear most culpable. What will be the consequence I dare not even divine. This I am determined on: I will not be the sport of his caprice, carried about like an unnecessary part of his baggage, only for shew, to gratify his vanity at the expence of my shame. He shall either quit his military life at the end of this campaign, and retire, according to his repeated promises and oaths, to some place where we shall not be known; or I will quit him, and return home at every event. I am entitled to a fortune that will afford me a morsel of bread in some country-village, where I may have leisure enough to repent of my folly; and even that is better than the life I lead now.”



CHAP. XIII.

More military matters. Politics on one side of the question,

JUST as the lady had concluded her story, my fellow-traveller continued his journey. I therefore left the fair friends together, to compare the errors of their past conduct, and confirm each other in their resolutions of amendment.

The

The futtler, having taken the circuit he intended, arrived at the camp to which he was going without any accident, and delivered his packet into the general's own hand, who running his eye over the contents, "This will do!" (said he) "This will do! I have long waited for an opportunity to give them a decisive stroke, and now I have got it; thanks to my faithful and vigilant agents! Sure no other people ever were so infatuated as to harbour the subjects of their enemies thus in their very bosom, in a time of open war! They do not preconcert a motion that I have not notice of. Indeed if it were not for the intelligence which I receive in this manner, I should often be at a loss."

The purport of the intelligence which he had received was, that the adverse army would be so considerably weakened, as the next day, by several detachments, that a general attack might be made almost with a certainty of success. Such an opportunity was not to be missed. He instantly set about making all the necessary preparations, and sent orders to another general, who commanded a separate body of forces, but subordinate to him, to second his design, by a vigorous attack at the same time on the side next him. The dispositions he made wore the most promising aspect; but, according to the usual uncertainty of military operations, his whole scheme miscarried. He met with so warm a reception from the enemy, who had an opportunity of opposing their whole force to him, the other general not attacking at the same time, that he was forced to retreat with precipitation and considerable loss, and leave

the other, who was just then coming up, exposed to the victorious army, which might have given him a total defeat, had not that been contrary to the general's scheme of protracting the war; who therefore, content with repulling one part of the enemy's forces, permitted the other to retreat without a stroke.

This disappointment inflamed the discord which already subsisted between the two generals; the chief alledging, that he should have succeeded in his attempt, had his orders been properly obeyed by the other, who retorted the accusation, and said he was abandoned on purpose that he might be cut off, which must have been the consequence had not the enemy mistaken a retreat, for which he saw no necessity, for a stratagem to draw him in between the two corps, each of which was almost equal to his whole army.

The consequence of this disagreement is obvious. Each general had his own creatures among the officers, who, openly espousing the cause of their patrons, began a kind of civil war among themselves, which threatened the most dangerous effects, had the enemy been intent upon taking the advantage of them.

On my proceeding to take a view of this army, I was sensibly struck at the difference between it and that which I had seen before. In the other, though a variety of interests prevented the various corps of which it was composed from holding that friendly intercourse with each other, that ought to subsist between men engaged in the same cause, yet still that jealousy went no farther than an unsociable distance, and never interfered with duty.

THE REVERIE. 79

duty. The men beside were well provided with the necessary appointments of every kind, which preserved them in that health and vigor indispensably essential to success.

But here every thing wore a different aspect. Though all the subjects of the same sovereign, and therefore united in every view of interest, the officers, as I have observed, were divided into factions, and embroiled in constant quarrels; and the private men sickly, half-starved, and half-naked; yet, under all these distractions and distresses, the levity of temper which characterises their nation displayed itself in its greatest force; the officers forgetting their animosity the moment they had put up their swords, and chatting together on matters of mirth and amusement with all the familiarity of friends, till some accident revived their disputes; and the men dancing to divert hunger, and keep them warm, and all venting their resentment against the authors of their several grievances in a scurrilous song or lampoon.

While I was making these observations the night after this miscarriage, my attention was struck by a conversation which passed between two officers on guard, who, having drawn off to some distance from their men, thought themselves in no danger of being over-heard, and therefore opened their hearts without reserve.

“I think, (said one of them, whose accent shewed him to be a foreigner) that considering all things, we got very well over this affair. Had the enemy pursued his advantage, I do not know what might have been the consequence.”

“That is very true, (answered the other)

“ it might have been somewhat disagreeable;
“ but this will always be the case where court-
“ favour is put in competition with merit, and
“ rivals joined in command whose emulation
“ is to supplant each other, though at the ruin
“ of the public cause; and this is the very
“ thing that has drawn this war out to such a
“ tedious length. The general who began it
“ gloriously was immediately removed, to make
“ way for one whose sole aim was to make a
“ fortune by every iniquitous and inhuman me-
“ thod of ruining the unhappy countries which
“ were the seat of the war, and debasing the
“ very army he commanded of their necessary
“ appointments. When his avarice was sa-
“ tiated, and the public clamour grew too
“ loud, he was succeeded by another favourite,
“ though of an opposite party, who was ho-
“ nester, it is true, but had less military know-
“ ledge, which brought a disgrace upon the
“ glory of his country, not paralleled in its
“ annals.

“ To retrieve that, necessity pointed out the
“ present general, on whose activity and va-
“ lour great expectations were founded. Nor
“ did he disappoint them. His entrance on
“ the command was signalized by several suc-
“ cessful and glorious exploits, which were to
“ prepare the way for more important events;
“ but before he had time to put his great de-
“ signs in execution, the same prevailing in-
“ fluence which had so unhappily removed the
“ first general, and taken offence at the pre-
“ sent also, found means to incumber him
“ with his present colleague, and by that means
“ stopped his progress, as you have seen this
“ day;

“ day ; and where it yet may end, I tremble to
“ think.”

“ Faith, (replied the former) this is but an
“ uncomfortable account, I own ; but I never
“ trouble my head with looking forward. My
“ business is to fight when I am in the field,
“ and live as well as I can upon my pay when
“ I am not ; and I mind nothing else. Not but I
“ should like to know something of these matters
“ too ; but I can’t tell how it is, I have a bad head
“ for politics myself, and I never converse with
“ any one who is able and willing to instruct
“ me. If it be not too much trouble, I should
“ be obliged to you for some information. It
“ will serve to pass away the time, as we have
“ nothing to do. Pray what was the cause of
“ this war that has cost us so many fine ar-
“ mies ? And what are we sent here for ? For
“ my part, I cannot comprehend it for my life !
“ We are marched all this way, I know not
“ for what ; and lose our lives I know not
“ how, dying like rotten sheep without any
“ credit to ourselves, or advantage to our sove-
“ reign.”

“ You ask a question, my friend, (returned
“ the other) not easy to be answered, nor safe
“ to be discussed, were it possible for us to be
“ overheard ; but as I think there is no dan-
“ ger in that, I will strive to give you the best
“ account I can of the matter.

“ The English and we, you know, are ne-
“ cessarily enemies, because we obstruct each
“ other’s views. If it was not for those head-
“ strong Islanders, we should long since have
“ raised the glory of our sovereign to the highest
“ pitch, by the conquest of all Europe ; as, on

“ the other hand, they would engross the commerce of the whole world, and of course become masters of all the wealth in it, did we not cross their avaricious views by every possible means. In negotiating, we always have the advantage of them; but when we come to war, I do not know how it is, but they sometimes are hard enough for us.

“ As for the present war in particular, it took its rise solely from their presumption and injustice. Under pretence of our having forcibly possessed ourselves of some spots of land which belonged to them in the boundless deserts of America, they fell upon our defenceless merchants without any previous declaration of war, and took numbers of them in a cowardly pyratrical manner.

“ Provoked at this insolence, our monarch in his wrath sent one of his armies, and conquered an important part of their dominions. Astonished at this stroke, they stood looking at each other in the most despicable affright, while he proceeded gloriously in his conquests in every part of the globe.

“ Their terror was for some time so great, that they called in a parcel of their mercenary allies, to protect them from his vengeance, which they apprehended would pursue them, even in their own country; not giving themselves time to consider, that there was a sea between them which it was impossible for his troops to pass.

“ At length they were roused from this state of fear and stupefaction into a kind of phrenzy, in which, by some strange mismanagement in our affairs, they not only recovered

“vered almost all the conquests we had made
 “from them, but also pushed their success
 “to a length which a Frenchman can not
 “think of without blushing.

“To ballance these advantages, and bring
 “them to a proper way of thinking, we are
 “sent here, where our alliances and the num-
 “ber of our forces encouraged us to hope,
 “that we might make such acquisitions as on
 “a treaty of peace should be deemed equiva-
 “lent to theirs, and exchanged for them. Hi-
 “therto matters have not succeeded quite so
 “well as we expected; but still we have gain-
 “ed one great point, in making them dissipate
 “that wealth, which is the foundation of their
 “power, in a fruitless opposition to us; a fol-
 “ly that will certainly reduce them to beggary;
 “if they persist in it much longer, which our
 “monarch knows, and for that reason conti-
 “nues to carry on the war, even under such
 “apparent disadvantages.



C H A P. XIV.

*A new scheme of carrying on a war. An ill-timed
 doubt often disconcerts a good story. Anecdotes of
 a loyal family. The history of Sir ARCHIBALD,
 and ZELIDE prince's of Armenia.*

“I AM very much obliged to you for this
 “information, (replied the foreigner) I
 “own I have never viewed things in this light
 “before. I have indeed felt some of the bad

84 THE REVERIE.

“ consequences of our want of success in the
 “ stoppage of my pay; but I never dreamed of
 “ the advantages which might attend the prosecution of an unsuccessful war.

“ But in the mean time, is there no danger
 “ that we may be out in our calculation, and
 “ ruined first? By all appearances, the finances of the enemy are in a much more
 “ flourishing way than ours. They pay every
 “ body punctually, and even enlarge their
 “ expences every day, in pushing their good
 “ fortune, and supporting the conquests they
 “ make.”

“ And so much the worse for them, (re-
 “ torted the Frenchman) their punctual pay-
 “ ments will soon leave them penniless. Our
 “ government acted more prudently. By re-
 “ fusing to pay their debts, they kept money in
 “ their hands to carry on their designs, which
 “ the others will soon find themselves unable
 “ to do.

“ As to their enlarging their expence in sup-
 “ porting their conquests, that is the very
 “ thing we desire. We let them conquer on-
 “ ly to draw them into more expence. You
 “ cannot think that our mighty monarch would
 “ have permitted their insolence to have gone
 “ unpunished so long, if he had not some great
 “ end in view. No! No! Their conquests
 “ will be their ruin, take my word for it. As
 “ soon as they have exhausted themselves by
 “ conquering, they will be glad to give all up
 “ for a peace. It has ever been so. It is but
 “ sending a nable negotiator to treat with them,
 “ and the work is done; their heads are too
 “ heavy for politics. No! No! their making
 “ conquests signifies nothing. “ As

THE REVERIE. 85

"As to what you say of our being ruined
 "first, that is all a mistake. Our king can
 "never be ruined while there is money, or mo-
 "ney's worth, in his dominions. It is all his
 "own. He need not stoop to flatter his sub-
 "jects to lend; he has power to take. They,
 "it is true, may possibly suffer for a time? but
 "what does that signify where the glory of
 "their sovereign is concerned? No true
 "Frenchman ever thinks of that. He leaves
 "such selfish considerations to English mer-
 "chants and mechanics. He is above them.
 "I say, *for a time*; because our resources
 "are all within ourselves. Let us be never so
 "exhausted by war, a few years of peace never
 "fail to restore us; and we have the pleasure
 "to reflect, that the attention paid to our in-
 "terests then always makes amends for what
 "we suffered before; whereas our enemies
 "think of no such thing. The moment they
 "get a peace, which their eagerness for it sel-
 "dom lets them have patience to wait for on
 "good terms, they fall to wrangling among
 "themselves, and never trouble their heads
 "about the good of the public, till they have
 "occasion to call for assistance again; so that
 "their affairs are always better managed in
 "war than in peace, even in respect to the
 "matters most foreign to war.
 "The reason of this is, that their gover-
 "nors not having any direct property in the
 "goods of their subjects, they think it not
 "worth their while to take any care about
 "them; whereas with us, all being in our
 "sovereign's power, he looks upon them as
 "his own, and studies their improvement ac-
 "cordingly.

“ cordingly. Of this there might innumera-
 “ ble instances be given in all the articles of
 “ commerce, the balance of which we con-
 “ stantly continue to bring into our favour, in
 “ peace, by some means or other, in less time
 “ than they wrest it from us in war.”

“ All this may be very true, for ought I
 “ know, (said the foreigner) but one thing I
 “ am convinced of, which is, that however
 “ conducive this power may be to the monarch’s
 “ glory, it were better for his subjects that he
 “ should be without it. I have experienced
 “ both cases, and therefore am the better able
 “ to judge.”

“ If so, (answered the Frenchman with some
 “ tartness) I wonder why your countrymen
 “ chuse to come and fix themselves among us!
 “ Few people leave a place they like for one
 “ they do not.”

“ Very true, (replied the foreigner gravely)
 “ they seldom do. But there may be circum-
 “ stances to influence such a choice. I have
 “ heard this glanced at more than once; and
 “ in such a manner, that I had difficulty to
 “ refrain from taking notice of it. I am not
 “ captious in my temper; but still I cannot bear
 “ insinuations injurious to my country. For
 “ this reason, as I esteem you, and consequent-
 “ ly desire your good opinion, give me leave
 “ to relate a few of the particulars of my own
 “ case, which, I imagine, will make you view
 “ the matter in a different light, from what
 “ you seem to have done hitherto; and convince
 “ you of the injustice of such reflections for the
 “ future; nor shall I trespass on your patience
 “ long.”

“ You

THE REVERIE. 87

" You are not a stranger to the revolutions,
 " which have happened in the British govern-
 " ment. I will not enter into a discussion of
 " the power which the people of England have
 " on many occasions exercised over their sove-
 " reigns. That part of the British dominions
 " in which I was born has ever been remark-
 " able for the contrary principles; our un-
 " shaken loyalty having always been proof to
 " temptation, and even to tyranny.

" In this antient monarchy my ancestors en-
 " joyed distinguished honours, before the fa-
 " milies of many of the present sovereigns of
 " Europe had emerged from barbarism and ob-
 " scurity. Our possessions were extensive; and
 " if nature had denied the enervating delicacies
 " of luxury, Heaven made ample amends by
 " the number and virtue of our vassals, whose
 " valour, guided by the loyalty of their lords,
 " often supported their sovereign's throne in
 " the dire conflicts of ambition, the struggles
 " which the untamed sons of savage liberty
 " made against law and rule.

" The virtuous actions of our ancestors are
 " handed down for imitation; nor is the sacred
 " record discontinued, till a series of unworthy
 " deeds makes the degenerate posterity blush
 " at the upbraiding comparison. Doubt not
 " therefore the tale which I am going to re-
 " late; nor think it to be the fiction of vanity
 " or imagination. The reverend sire has still
 " delivered it invariably to his attentive sons,
 " nor has a syllable been altered in the course
 " of so many generations.

" Our fame was not unknown in foreign
 lands. Wherever the shrill trumpet called the
 war-

warriors forth to arms, our banners waved the foremost in the field; and trophies, won by feats of hardiest prowess, graced our social halls.

“ We had proceeded in this honourable path for many ages, when holy Lewis, glowing with pious zeal, undertook to deliver the sacred repositories of the blessed saints, the places hallowed by the footsteps of our Lord, from the profanation of infidels. Fired at the news of such a glorious design, the heir of our illustrious house led forth the chosen youths of all our hills, to fight the battles of the faith. The name of their chief prepared a welcome for them, and justified the choice which Lewis made of youthful Archibald, to lead the van in all his armies, after he had dub'd him his own knight.

“ The unhappy event of this great design is too well known. I shall therefore confine myself to what immediately concerns this my most honoured progenitor. During the struggles which Lewis made with the malevolence of fortune, the actions of sir Archibald made him the terror of the hosts of the infidels; at the same time that his exemplary virtues were a reproach to the looser manners of his fellow-soldiers. In an excursion which he made one day, in quest of intelligence, fate directed his steps to the banks of a rivulet in the neighbourhood of the Saracen camp, the beauty of which tempted him to trace its course along the woody vale.

“ He had not proceeded far, when the sound of female voices struck his ear. The songs with which they filled the winding valley, declared the innocence and happiness of their hearts. He listened

tened for a while; and then, as he was a truly chaste and courteous knight, was turning about to retire, for fear of intruding on their privacy, when a shriek of affright told him his assistance was necessary to them. He hesitated not a moment; but, rushing forward, saw that a troop of the marauders who swarmed around the camp of Lewis, and dishonoured the christian name with their atrocious crimes, had surprised a band of helpless females, and having dispersed their feeble guard of eunuchs, were carrying them forcibly away. He knew their danger in the hands of such worse than brutal ruffians; and proclaiming his own name in a voice that shook the hill, ran forward to their rescue.

“Awed at the well-known name, they seemed to pause; but their leader seeing that sir Archibald was alone and on foot, for when he first heard the voices he had left his horse with his men, that he might not disturb them as he advanced to listen more distinctly, waved his hand to his associates to follow, and clapping spur to his horse’s sides was out of sight in a moment. But all did not escape so easily; the well-aimed javelin of sir Archibald pierced the hindmost as he had turned himself for flight, and brought him lifeless to the ground. The active knight instantly seized the steed of the fallen cavalier, and vaulting nimbly on him rode after the ravishers, whom he soon over-took, the struggles of the females impeding their flight, and their cries directing his pursuit. The villains at first taking him for their companion avoided him not, nor stood on their defence; but the deaths of the two first of their number, who fell within the reach of his sword,

sword, convinced them of their error, and that it was impossible for them to fly from him.

"Custom had inured them to danger, and despair now made them valiant. Their number also against his single arm gave them a prospect of success. They let go the women therefore, and forming themselves into a troop bore all together upon him. But he disdained to wait for their assault; and rushing furiously into the midst of them, for some time maintained the unequal combat, and ballanced their numbers by his valour. Five of their bodies now lay breathless round him, when his horse, pierced to the heart with a spear, fell to the ground so suddenly, that all his agility and strength were not sufficient to disengage him from him. In this situation he expected nothing less than instant death, when all at once the assailants turned their backs, and sought their safety in flight.

"Surprised at this, sir Archibald looked round, and saw his faithful men galloping up toward him. They had heard his voice when he first called to the ruffians, and imagining that he wanted their assistance advanced with speed by the side of the rivulet, till they found the wretch whom he had pierced with his javelin; alarmed at the sight of whom they doubled their haste, and happily came up time enough to save their lord.

"The first care of sir Archibald was to search for the women, whom it was difficult to find, their fright having made them hide themselves the moment they had been let go by the ruffians. At length, however, the diligence of his men discovered them all but one,
the

THE REVERIE. 91

the loss of whom the rest deplored in the most passionate terms. Sir Archibald concluding that she must have been carried off by some of the ravishers, while the rest stopped to attack him, was at a loss what to do. It was in vain to think of overtaking them without some guide to direct his pursuit, and whom to get he knew not.

"In this perplexity he bethought himself of trying whether some intelligence might not be gained among those who had fallen by his sword, if they all were not as yet quite dead. He was not disappointed. From one of them he learnt their place of rendezvous; and that their leader had borne away his prey, as sir Archibald had conjectured. The generous knight was alarmed at her danger, and, ordering two of his men to conduct the disconsolate damsel back to the Saracen camp, set off himself with the rest in search of her.

"The place to which he was directed was a cave in the darkest recess of a wood, at a considerable distance from him. The day was now far spent, and the way so difficult to be found, that it was night before they reached the cavern. Sir Archibald waited not to demand entrance, but drawing his sword rushed boldly in. Heaven seemed to have delayed him to the moment that should make his coming most critical. Inflamed with brutal passion, the miscreant, when he could not persuade the damsel to compliance, had resolved to gratify his base desires by force. Her cries reached the ear of sir Archibald as he entered the cave, and directed him to her rescue; which he effected just as her strength was exhausted in the struggle, and she

she lay a defenceless prey to the spoiler. With one stroke he severed the wretch's head from his body; when, raising the astonished maiden from the ground, he strove to restore her spirits by the most tender and encouraging assurances of safety and protection.

"At first she threw her eyes wildly round the dreary cave, and, filled with the horror of the scenes she had just gone through, could scarcely believe her senses that she was delivered. At length recovering power to speak, "What man, or rather what angel art thou" (said she in the Saracen tongue, fixing her eyes upon him as he stood without his helmet, which he had pulled off when he had first raised her from the ground) "whom Heaven has thus miraculously sent to save me from ruin? The benefit is so great, that I had rather think the latter, as the obligation is too much to owe to man."

"Lady, (answered he in the same language, which he had learned in the war) I am a man! a sinful man, who knows it is his duty to succour virtue in distress."

"A man! (replied she earnestly) Say then of what lineage and country art thou come, that I may study the most acceptable reward for thy courtesy and valour!"

"Thou seest before thee, (returned he) lady, a Christian knight, whose faith makes virtue a duty, and looks not for reward."

"A Christian! Gracious Heaven! (exclaimed the lady, as recovering herself after a long pause) Pardon courteous stranger the ravings of a distracted brain! No reward can return the obligation I am under to you, and yet I must

THE REVERIE. 93

" must sue for more; I must intreat you to
 " conduct me directly to the Saracen camp,
 " and release me to my distressed parent, who
 " now laments the loss of his only child."

" " Talk not of rewards, most beauteous lady,
 " (said the knight, gazing in rapture on her)
 " the pleasure of doing you a service is its own
 " reward. All I require is to know your name;
 " and O! tell me, I conjure you, (continued
 " he, falling on his knees before her) if it be
 " possible for a soldier of no ignoble birth or
 " fame, to make the offer of his honest heart
 " acceptable to you."

" " Brave knight, (answered she) an heart
 " like thine is worthy of the most exalted maid's
 " acceptance; but there are insuperable obsta-
 " cles to thy desire. As for my name, it would
 " avail you naught to know it. Let me adjure
 " you therefore by that virtue which your soul
 " reveres, to desist from any farther enquiries
 " about me; and conveying me to the camp
 " of your enemies, there to leave me to my
 " fate."

" " Thy will, O beauteous arbitress of my
 " destiny, (replied he) is a law to thy devoted
 " servant. I obey thee; but first permit me
 " to pour out the fulness of my soul."— Then
 " taking her fair hand as he kneeled before her,
 " and holding it between his, " Accept my ho-
 " mage, sovereign lady of my heart! (said he)
 " and receive me from this hour for thy true
 " and constant knight; and by this sacred
 " pledge I swear, (touching her hand devout-
 " ly with his lips) no other dame shall ever
 " raise a wish in my breast contrary to the faith
 " I here plight unto thee."—

" And

“And in return I promise thee, most valiant
 “and right gentle knight, (said she) that the
 “remembrance of thy courtesye shall never be
 “erased from my grateful heart; nor any other
 “man supplant thee in that regard which it is
 “lawful for a virgin to feel for her deliverer.”

“Comforted by this kind promise, sir Archibald took her by the hand, and, leading her to the mouth of the cavern, mounted her behind him on his able steed, and bore her without accident to the Saracen camp.

“As soon as they came to the most advanced guard she dismounted, and pulling a costly jewel from her breast, “Wear this (said she tenderly) in remembrance of one who will never forget her generous deliverer.”

“I accept, dearest lady, (answered he bending his knee to the earth) a gift made precious by thy hand, and promise to wear it as a badge of thy authority over my heart; as thou, if I have found favour in thy sight, wilt also condescend to take this ring from thy servant. My honoured mother bestowed it with her dying benediction, and enjoined me never to give it till I could truly give my heart along with it.”—She kindly took the pledge of his love, and put it on her hand directly; then, bidding him adieu, advanced alone to the guard, who instantly conducted her where she commanded them.

“Sir Archibald stood for some time, unable to stir; his eyes followed her as far as he could see through the shades of night, and he listened to her steps till the sounds insensibly died away from his ear. Awaking at length as from a trance, “Unhappy Archibald (said he, striking his
 “hand

THE REVERIE. 95

"hand upon his grief-swollen breast) to what
 "misfortunes has thy wayward fate reserved
 "thee? Never till this day did my heart feel
 "the power of beauty. I laughed at love, and
 "called his bondage folly; but amply has the
 "tyrant now avenged his cause, and pierced
 "me with his sharpest, most invenomed lance.
 "Ye maids of Caledonia, who oft have wept
 "your slighted charms, and called the heart of
 "Archibald insensible, now triumph in his
 "fall. He loves without a ray of hope to pro-
 "mise him success."

"Thus did he consume the remaining part of
 the night in fruitless lamentation, till his fol-
 lowers at the approach of morning reminded
 him, that it was necessary for him to return to
 the Christian camp.

"From this hour his heart was a stranger to
 happiness. Did he know even who the object
 of his wishes was, he might at least have pleased
 himself with forming imaginary schemes for ob-
 taining her love; but her command, which he
 most religiously observed, precluded him from
 making any enquiries about her, as his men's ig-
 norance of the Saracen language had also pre-
 vented their learning any thing from the dam-
 nels whom they had conducted to the camp.

CHAP. XV.

*The History of SIR ARCHIBALD, and ZELIDE
princess of Armenia, continued.*

“**B**UT though his private peace was thus poisoned, it slackened not his attention to the duties of war. On the contrary, the troubles of his mind making him weary of life, he eagerly sought every occasion of losing it with honour. In the last unfortunate action between Lewis and the Saracens, Sir Archibald, at the head of his bonny lads, charged the infidels with such impetuosity, that he broke into the main body of their army; and had he been followed with equal spirit by the other squadrons under his command, might possibly have altered the fate of that unhappy day. But envy, which always follows superior merit, had inflamed the hearts of certain French lords, who thought themselves eclipsed by his fame, to such a degree against him, that when they saw him break like a torrent into the battle of the enemy, instead of following his steps with emulative virtue, they basely drew back, and gave the infidels an opportunity of surrounding him, and his few brave men.

“Thrice did he penetrate so far through their numbers, as to seize the imperial standard; but the multitude, whom dread of such a disgrace made throw themselves desperately between him and it, as often bore him back. At length

length, collecting all his force for one last effort, he burst in irresistibly among them, and seizing it with one hand had raised the other to smite the chief, whose vigorous gripe withheld it from him, when a stone, hurled by a dastard slave who dared not approach within the reach of his sword, felled him to the ground. The base herd instantly rushed in, and were ready to wreak their cowardly revenge upon his defenceless body, when the chief, who respected valour, though in an enemy, and judged by the richness of his armour that he must be some person of note, whose ransom would well reward his humanity, interposed; and, discovering that he still breathed, ordered him to be removed to his own tent, and there taken proper care of. With sir Archibald fell the spirit of the christian army, and left the infidels an easy and compleat victory.

“He had not been long in the tent of the chief, when, by the assistance of those into whose care he had been given, he began to recover his senses. Opening his eyes he looked around in silent astonishment for some time; then turning to the attendants who were busied about him, he asked them courteously where he was, and to whom indebted for such friendly treatment; but they laid their hands upon their mouths, to let him know that they must not converse with him. This increased his perplexity. The tent, and the habit of those who administered such kind assistance to him, shewed him that he was in the hands of the enemy; but that very assistance, so contrary to their usual practice, heightened his astonishment still more and more.

“ The next morning he found himself so well recovered, that he desired permission to wait upon his benefactor to return him thanks, and learn what ransom he demanded, which he doubted not but Lewis would readily pay. The chief received him courteously, and informing him of the total defeat of the christian army, gave him to understand that his hopes of liberty were at an end.

“ The effect which this account had on him was easily perceived. The manly fortitude that sat upon his brow before gave place to listless dejection. “ Thy will be done, O God ! ” (exclaimed he with a loud sigh) then fixed his eyes upon the ground.

“ The chief, who imagined that his grief arose from the thought of his captivity, encouraged him with assurances that he should not receive unworthy treatment. But sir Archibald soon shewed him that his distress arose from a more exalted motive. “ Think not, “ most courteous and noble lord ” (said he, raising his eyes slowly from the ground and fixing them on the chief, with a look that shewed a soul overburthened but not broken by woe) “ think “ not that my grief is for myself. Liberty is “ the jewel of every virtuous soul ; without it “ the sentiments of honour, generosity, and courage, are a torture. “ But still I mourn from “ a more extensive cause. I mourn the mis- “ fortunes of my royal master, the princely and “ pious Lewis. I mourn the defeat of the armies of the Lord. I am but a worm, an “ atom in the creation, unworthy of a thought “ in such a scene of ruin.”

“ The chief was struck with such greatness

THE REVERIE. 99

of soul, and, repeating his kind consolation, demanded who sir Archibald was, and what rank he held in the army of Lewis. But the high-minded knight had formed the resolution of concealing his name and quality, to hide the disgrace which he thought his captivity would reflect upon his noble house and country.

"No! (said he to himself) never shall it be said that sir Archibald is a slave! that a noble Scot was forced to bend the knee to barbarous infidels. Let me perish unknown,

and let my reproach die with me."—Then, as if recollecting himself, "I am no more than a private knight, O noble lord, (answered

he) whom a desire of fame brought to this fatal war. I was not born in the ligiance of

royal Lewis, nor bore any high rank in his armies. I led a few brave youths, the fol-

lowers of my way-ward fortune, to the field, who all, as I suppose, have fallen with ho-

nour; and O! that I had shared their glorious fate; but I was unworthy, and am re-

proved for slavery."

"There is a sympathy between noble souls, which soon unites them. The chief, who before admired the valour, now loved the virtue of his captive. He directly received him into his intimacy, and was so struck with the charms of his conversation, that he opened to him all the secrets of his soul. As they sat together one day, beguiling the heat of the noon-tide hours, in pleasing discourse, the chief paused for some time as if lost in thought; then starting in a kind of transport, "It shall be so; (said he) 'tis Heaven inspires the thought."—Then addressing himself to sir Archibald, "Selim,

“ (that was the name he had given him) thou
“ must go and plead the cause of thy friend.
“ That eloquence which can charm the fiercest
“ passions of the soul to peace, can surely kindle
“ the more gentle ones of pity and desire. I
“ love, most warmly love; but the object of
“ my wishes is insensible to my pain, nor will
“ listen to my intreaties. Go then and soften
“ her heart, paint my passion in proper co-
“ lours, and teach her to make a just return
“ to it. Attempt not to dissuade me from the
“ thought. It is Heaven that inspires; and I
“ will pursue it.”

“ Sir Archibald, who knew by sad experience
that love is an over-match for reason, answered,
that, far from contradicting his will, he was
ready to obey him in any thing he should com-
mand; and only desired to know how his weak
endeavours were to be applied. The chief em-
bracing him tenderly, “ I will inform you of
“ every thing, (said he) and will not doubt of
“ your success. You must know that, about
“ three moons since, the guard of one of the
“ advanced posts brought to my tent a damsel
“ most richly attired, who they said had come
“ to them just before the morning-watch, and
“ required to be conducted to the commander
“ of the night. The moment she entered and
“ cast her eyes upon me, “ Achmet, (said she,
“ with an air of dignity that awed my soul)
“ lead me to the pavilion of thy master. I am
“ Zelide, his daughter, who was this day sur-
“ prized by the enemy, as I walked along the
“ banks of the rivulet; and have now recover-
“ ed my liberty in a manner not necessary to
“ be told.

“ I

THE REVERIE. 401

" I was so dazzled at the sight of her beauty,
 " for she had no veil on, that I was some time
 " before I had power to make her any answer.
 " At length, prostrating myself at her feet,
 " Forgive, O beauteous princess, (said I) the
 " ignorance of thy slaves, who have not paid
 " the respect due to thy sublime state."——
 " Rise, (answered she) and lead me to my fa-
 " ther; I forgive every thing."——
 " Encouraged by this condescension, I ven-
 " tured to rise, and taking her hand, which she
 " graciously held to me, conducted her to the
 " pavilion of the Armenian monarch. The joy
 " that her return raised can no more be descri-
 " bed than the situation of my heart. All was
 " tumult, extacy, and madness.
 " As soon as I had delivered her into her fa-
 " ther's hands, I prepared to retire, when cal-
 " ling to me, " Stay Achmet, (said the inrap-
 " tured monarch) and receive the reward of thy
 " service. I have sworn to give Zelide to the
 " man who should rescue her out of the hands
 " of the ravishers, and restore her to me. Her
 " maidens have told me what noble spirit you
 " exerted for her. Here Zelide, take an hus-
 " band who has deserved you."
 " I prostrated myself at his feet in transport,
 " and embraced his knees, unable to express
 " the joy of my full heart; when the princess
 " replied to her father, " The merits of Ach-
 " met are sufficiently great, without assuming
 " those of another. I owe my liberty to an
 " unknown hand."
 " It is impossible to express what I felt at
 " hearing her say this. The manner in which
 " she spoke convinced me that her heart was
 " not

“not inclined in my favour; and I knew the
“fondness of her father too well, to think that
“he would put any constraint upon her incli-
“nations. However, I yielded to the impulse
“of my passion, and throwing myself at her
“feet, “Revoke not, O beauteous princess,
“(said I) the gracious words of my lord; nor
“reject an heart that is devoted to thee.”—

“Desist, Achmet, (said the monarch stern-
“ly) my hasty vow is saved; and the hand of
“Zelide to be obtained only on the terms pro-
“posed before.”—Awed at these words, I re-
“tired in dejection equal to the height of my
“late short-lived hopes; and from that day has
“my heart been a prey to despair.

“The assistance which I now require from
“you is this: In pious gratitude to Heaven,
“for her escape from bondage, Zelide has ob-
“tained permission from her father to relieve
“the captives of the war. For this purpose
“they are ordered to repair to a certain place
“before her pavilion, where she sees them
“through the silken curtains of her tent, and
“frequently converses with such as have any
“thing particular in their appearance to ex-
“cite her curiosity. Thither you shall go;
“and I promise myself that you will plead my
“cause with success, if it so happens that she
“enters into conversation with you.”

“Had the chief attended to the effect which
his story had upon sir Archibald, he would not
have been so ready to send him as his advocate.
Every circumstance convinced him that the
princess was the object of his own love, whom
he had despaired of discovering, and filled him
with emotions which he could not suppress.

Re-

THE REVERIE. 103

Recovering himself, however, time enough to escape the observation of Achmet, whose mind was too intent upon his own story to give much heed to any thing else. "It is my duty," (said he) "to obey thy commands; and different though I am of the abilities which your partiality bestows upon me, I am yet ready to undertake any thing which you think can conduce to your happiness."

"Achmet again embraced him, and informing him at what time and where he should wait upon Zelide next morning, left him, while he went himself to attend his sovereign, in the course of his duty.

"No sooner was sir Archibald alone than he began to reflect on the commission which he had undertaken, and the distressing situation he was in. In the first emotions of his high spirit he blamed himself for not having avowed his passion, and asserted his prior claim; but a consideration of his unhappy state immediately checked this rash thought, and the desire of meeting the dear object of his love at any rate determined him to go, and trust the event to fate. "What shall I do? (said he) Shall I plead for the love of Achmet and destroy my own hopes? Or shall I betray his confidence, and speak only for myself?" Then pausing a while, "I will do neither; (he continued) if nature forbids the former, honour equally opposes the latter. Never shall it be said that sir Archibald broke faith with man. I will represent his love with fidelity; I will declare my own with honest truth, and leave the decision to herself."——Pleased with this determination, his heart grew lighter; and the

thought of meeting Zelide filled him with joy, to which he had been long a stranger.



CHAP. XVI.

*Continuation of the history of Sir ARCHIBALD
and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia.*

“**H**AVING received his last instructions from Achmet, sir Archibald went at the appointed hour next morning to the royal pavilion. Though he was habited in the humble weeds of a slave, there was something in his appearance that spoke his noble birth, and prejudiced every heart in his favour. His stature was above the common size of men, his limbs turned in the exactest symmetry of strength and beauty. His auborn locks flowed in ringlets to the middle of his back, and his dark-blue eyes sparkled with sensibility and manly spirit; while a gloom of melancholy, suited to his present station, softened their fire, and threw a pallid veil over the ruddy bloom which youth had painted on his cheeks.

“He had not stood long, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and his heart throbbing with the most anxious emotions, when an eunuch came to distribute the relief which the princess sent to the captives, ordering such of them as she had pointed out to him to advance to the side of her tent, that she might enquire into the nature of their particular distresses.

“The

THE REVERIE. 105

"The state of fir Archibald's heart, when the eunuch passed him by unnoticed, may be easily conceived. All his high hopes sunk at once. "She knows me not! (said he to himself) or she scorns to know me! Mistaken "Achmet! to think that I could have any influence upon her."

"He continued these melancholy reflections while the princess was examining some of the other captives, and was departing with them, when the eunuch beckoned to him to advance to the tent. His emotions now were stronger than he could bear. He scarce had power to obey the summons. As soon as he approached the curtain, "Christian, (said a voice from behind it) how long hast thou been a captive, "and to whom?"

"Most gracious princess, (answered he trembling and in agitation, that almost deprived him of utterance) for so I am instructed to address you, I lost my liberty in the late battle that proved so fatal to the unhappy Lewis; and my poor services belong to the illustrious "Achmet."

"To Achmet! (replied she) Great honour must he have acquired by the conquest; and "should treat such a captive as thou appearest to be with uncommon courtesy!"

"The honour of Achmet (returned he) wants not so mean an addition. Thy slave was the captive of an host. As for my treatment, it is that of a man. An heart that is softened with love, like Achmet's, cannot want the gentlest virtues of humanity."

"Thou speakest of that passion (said the princess) with a voice of sympathy. I suppose

"pose thy own heart is not free from it, and
 "that the loss of thy liberty is imbittered by
 "that of a wife, or mistress in thy native land."

"Thy slave is not married, most gracious
 "princess, (answered he) nor had my heart
 "felt the power of love before I saw these fatal
 "plains."

"Then it should seem (continued she) that
 "some of our beauties have subdued you to him.
 "How long have you born his yoke, and who
 "has bent your stubborn neck to it?"

"The captivity of my heart, O sovereign lady,
 "(answered he) is scarce three moons old;
 "but the particular severity of it has made that
 "time an age. To cut off every hope, the very
 "name of the person whose chains I wear is
 "hidden from me in impenetrable darkness."

"That's hard, indeed; (said she) but true
 "fortitude is above despair. Perhaps you may
 "find her yet. Come just at the close of eve-
 "ning to this place, and you will meet a per-
 "son who will inform you of strange things;
 "but mention not a word of this to Achmet.
 "Adieu! Be discreet, be resolute, and be hap-
 "py."

"The surprize with which this conversation
 struck sir Archibald was so great, that he more
 than once questioned himself whether it must
 not be only an illusive dream. Satisfied, how-
 ever, at length, that it was real, he retired to
 his own quarter, among the attendants of Ach-
 met, till his emotions should subside, and he
 could recollect himself sufficiently to appear be-
 fore him without danger of discovering what
 had happened. He threw himself in a corner
 of the tent, and covering himself with a carpet

that he might not be disturbed, lay motionless and lost in thought. He had not lain long when two of the domestic slaves of Achmet, natives of Greece, came into the tent, and not perceiving that any person was present, entered into a conversation upon murdering their lord, and flying into their own country with the booty which they should be able to plunder in the confusion caused by his death. After considering upon several methods, they at length agreed to poison him in a bowl of sherbet, which one of them, who was his cup-bearer, undertook to give him that very evening, while the other should pack up all his gold and rich jewels which were in his care, ready for them to carry off. Having thus concerted the scheme, they immediately went to prepare for the execution of it.

"The first mention of this horrid design awoke all the attention of sir Archibald. He listened to their discourse, without giving them any alarm; and as soon as they departed gave thanks to Heaven for directing him to that place so opportunely, to save the life of his preserver, and so return the obligation he owed him; arising, therefore, he went to the tent of Achmet, who entered just at the same time.

"The moment the chief cast his eyes upon sir Archibald he called him to him, and waving his hand to his attendants to withdraw, "Se-
 "lim, (said he, his eyes glistening with rap-
 "ture) congratulate your happy lord. My
 "gracious sovereign has this day blessed my
 "hopes with a promise of the hand of Zelide;
 "and, as if Heaven meant to endear you still
 "farther to me, has made the rescuing of the
 "royal

“royal standard from your hand the glorious
 “cause of giving me the preference to all my
 “competitors. Have you been with the prin-
 “cess? Have you mentioned my love to her?
 “The only delay to my happiness now is, to
 “obtain her consent. O bless me therefore by
 “saying that she listens to my love.”

“I have mentioned it to her, (answered sir
 “Archibald, who had need for all his presence
 “of mind on such a trying occasion) in the
 “most affecting manner; but it is too soon to
 “expect the satisfaction you desire. Much
 “time and many words are requisite to warm
 “a virgin’s heart.”

“For this you shall have ample opportunity,
 “(replied Achmet) to-morrow I will send you
 “with a present to her; and every morning it
 “shall be your pleasing task to carry her the
 “tribute of my love.”

“The confidence, with which Achmet said
 this was a pain to the honest heart of sir Archi-
 bald, as he knew he must necessarily disappoint
 it. To change therefore to a topic more plea-
 sing to him, “You saved my life, (said he) and
 “now Heaven shews its approbation of that
 “generous action, by making me the means of
 “saving yours.”—— “He then informed him
 of the conspiracy he had just discovered in so
 providential a manner, and gave him advice
 how to detect it in the very moment of execu-
 tion, to make the punishment of the wretches
 more signal.

“The soul of Achmet was struck with ter-
 ror at this account. The near hopes of happi-
 ness which possessed him at this time armed
 every thing that might defeat them with double
 terrors.

terrors. He embraced sir Archibald in a transport, and resigned himself entirely to his direction, his own mind being in too great agitation to attend to any thing.

"As the time for executing their flagitious design was just arrived, Achmet went to take his evening's repast, and seating himself on the carpet, without any appearance of suspicion, called for some cooling beverage, to slack his thirst. The cup-bearer, who had every thing prepared, presented him the bowl, when sir Archibald, who watched his looks, and plainly perceived the anxiety of guilt in his face, made a signal agreed upon to Achmet, and then went into the inner tent, where he found the other loading himself with the gold and jewels of his lord. Dragging him forth therefore, with this indisputable evidence of his guilt upon him, as soon as he came into the presence of Achmet, he seized the cup-bearer also, who stood panting with impatience to see his lord drink the fatal mixture, which he yet held untasted in his hand.

"The accomplices no sooner saw each other apprehended in this manner, than they sunk into the despondency of conscious guilt, and waited, pale and trembling, for the fate which hung over them. "Miscreants, (said Achmet, rising from his seat in a rage) what could prompt you to this wickedness? Speak! Declare this moment at whose instigation you made the base attempt; or torture shall wring the secret from your bursting hearts."

"The wretches were unable to make any reply, when sir Archibald interposing, "Mighty Lord, (said he) the nature of their crime

"shews

“shews it was all their own; and points out
 “the punishment proper for them. Let them
 “drink the poison they had prepared for you,
 “and perish by their own device. Base as they
 “are, remember they are men; nor tempt them
 “to aggravate the guilt with which their mi-
 “serable souls are loaded by accusing the in-
 “nocent.”

“Be it so, (answered the chief) their fate
 “is in your hands.”

“Sir Archibald upon this took the bowl, and
 dividing the horrid contents, gave it to the
 trembling wretches, whose lives, torn from them
 by the most dreadful torments, soon paid the
 price of their guilt. Achmet then, embracing
 his deliverer once more, retired to try if he
 could calm the agitations of his soul by rest.”



CHAP. XVII.

*The history of Sir ARCHIBALD and ZEILIDE,
 princess of Armenia, concluded.*

“THE time when the princess had order-
 ed the attendance of Sir Archibald was
 now arrived; he therefore hastened to the ap-
 pointed place, where he had not waited long
 when an eunuch coming up and beckoning to
 him said, “Be discreet, be resolute, and be
 “happy.”

“Sir Archibald, who well remembered these
 words, followed him, without hesitation or re-
 ply, into the royal pavilion, where he was led
 through

THE REVERIE. 111

through several sumptuous tents, one within another, till his guide, stopping and making a signal to him to wait there, left him. He waited not long, when a female covered with a veil entered, and seating herself on a sofa, "Christian, (said she, in a low voice, and beckoning to him to come near her) "the damsel whom you rescued from the ravisher in the cave, desires you should know that she retains a grateful sense of your courtesy and virtue."

"Gentle lady, (said he, in a voice of rapture) "accept the warmest thanks of your servant for this benign condescension; and O! complete the favour, by telling her, that her devoted slave lives only in the hope of seeing her again, and pouring out the fullness of his heart before her."

"Her heart (answered she) perhaps is not less full than yours; but before she can comply with what you desire, it is proper she should know who you are, and what your rank was in your native land."

"My rank, (replied he, with a sigh) most courteous lady, was noble, scarcely inferior to royalty; the honour of my ancient house unstained."

"Say then, (returned she) if she whom you profess to love should stoop from royalty itself to listen to your suit, what you would do to merit such a favour? Would you forego your country, renounce the worship of your ancestors, and happy in the recompence of her love, and of the state to which she would raise you, swear you never would think of either?"

"Sir Archibald was struck with such horror at this proposal, that it was some time before
he

he was able to make any reply. At length, as if awaking from a dream, "Support me, Heaven! (exclaimed he with a sigh that seemed to burst his heart) Support me! and proportion the trials of your creature to his strength!"—

"Then turning to the female, "There is nothing, lady, (said he) within the power of man to do, or suffer, which I should not attempt with joy for such an incalculable recompence; nothing which did not clash with honour or virtue. But what you propose would overturn both; and should I be tempted to comply, I were unworthy of a reward so basely earned."

"Is this your answer? (replied she with an accent of indignation) Can you pretend to feel the power of love, and yet to slight its object for the idle fictions of superstitious priests? Can you mention honour, and prefer subjection to royalty? Think better; nor blast your ripening hopes with such a mean ungrateful choice. Search your heart well, your fate depends upon the word you speak; for, never more will you be asked the question."

"Burst then, O wretched heart! (sighed he) and put a period to your torture. To live without my love is impossible; and Heaven itself forbids the terms on which alone I can obtain her. Tell her, kind lady, that, dearly as my heart adores her beauties, a principle higher even than love, and stronger than ambition, places an insuperable bar between us. But O, say at the same time, that the word which thus gives up my hopes, gives up
"my

“ my hated life also. I must not have her, and
 “ I cannot live without her.”

“ Virtuous Christian, (said she, lifting up
 “ her veil, and discovering her beauties to his
 “ ravished sight) thou provest thyself worthy of
 “ the best blessings of Heaven by this thy no-
 “ ble attachment to its laws. Behold the object
 “ of thy love, who glories in an equal flame: yet
 “ had thy heart wavered in the cause of virtue,
 “ I should have disdained the dishonourable sa-
 “ crifice, and quitted thee for ever. Restrain
 “ your raptures, and hear me for a moment.
 “ You know not yet whom your virtues have
 “ subdued, or what you must attempt to obtain
 “ her. I am Zclide, the only daughter of the
 “ monarch of Armenia. My ancestors long
 “ gloried in the name of Christians; but un-
 “ able to resist the barbarous Saracens, accord-
 “ ing to the policy of the world, they renounced
 “ their faith, to preserve their power.

“ My father, mistakenly attached to the re-
 “ ligion of Mahomet, in which he was thus
 “ bred, led his forces against the invasion of
 “ Lewis; and, to excite the ardor of his gene-
 “ rals, declared, that he would bestow me the
 “ heiress of his throne, in marriage upon him
 “ who should deserve best in the war. The emu-
 “ lation which this raised was often fatally ex-
 “ perienved by their enemies; but still their
 “ merits were so equal, that none could claim
 “ his promise until the last battle, when Ach-
 “ met's recovering the royal standard from the
 “ enemy unhappily decided in his favour. Too
 “ soon I learned the unwelcome news; but still
 “ by my intreaties prevailed upon my father to
 “ suspend or at least conceal his determination,
 “ till

114 THE REVERIE.

“till this fatal day, when all his generals soliciting him together to put an end to their importunities, he declared his choice. What canst thou do to avert this misfortune? Canst thou by any means accomplish our escape to thy native land? Gold and jewels in abundance I can bring, to procure the means for our journey, and make our retirement happy. To thy honour I am bold to trust myself, nor aspire to a more exalted state than to be thy wife; for though I have been obliged to profess the religion of Mahomet, in my heart I am a Christian. My mother, who was a native of Circassia, believed and instructed me in that holy faith; to preserve which I promised her, in her last moments, to give up every thought of worldly grandeur. My soul is grieved to disobey, and leave my father; but a superior duty calls me.”

“O beauteous princess, (said sir Archibald, prostrating himself at her feet) how shall the labours of my life make a return for this happiness, this honour?”

“Restrain your raptures, (replied the princess) our time is too precious for them now. Three days respite only have I been able to obtain from my father; before they are expired we must escape from hence, or I am for ever lost. I leave the manner of our flight to you. In this casket is some gold. More, with the richest of my jewels, will I bring with me to-morrow night, as soon as darkness shall favour our design, to the hermit’s cell on the side of the hill, westward of the camp. There let me meet thee with all the necessary means for our flight.

“One

“ One only companion shall I bring with me.
 “ Adieu.”—Saying this, the princess departed, and the eunuch entered and conducted sir Archibald back through the royal pavilion to the place where he had first met him, who immediately returned to the quarters of Achmet.

“ He laid himself down, as if to rest; but spent the remainder of the night in forming schemes for his intended flight; but the difficulties which attended all he could devise drove him almost to despair. At length he resolved upon one that appeared least liable to disappointment. As soon as Achmet arose he went to him, and accosting him with an air of perplexity and distress, “ I come (said he) a suppliant to thy compassion, O generous and princely Achmet. If ever thy servant has found favour in thy sight, listen to the request of my heart. I was troubled on my bed this night, and my soul was terrified by visions. The object of my love, whose image is never absent from my mind, appeared before me in agonies of grief. “ Fly (said she) to my rescue! My father, deaf to my intreaties, and regardless of my distress, prepares to give my hand to another. O fly and save me! Save us both from ruin and despair.”—I awoke in dismay, and in the anguish of my soul am come to thee. Permit me, assist me to go to my native land; and, on the faith of a true knight, I will send you the ransom which you shall require.”

“ I require not a ransom for the liberty of my preserver, (answered Achmet) and willingly consent to your return as soon as my nuptials with the princess shall have confirm-
 “ ed

116 THE REVERIE.

"ed my happiness. You must not leave me till
 "you have seen and shared in my joy."

"O name not happiness or joy (replied Sir
 Archibald) before a wretch sinking in despair;
 "the light of my misery would damp your joys.
 "By all your fondest hopes I conjure you there-
 "fore, not to delay me a moment. Let me
 "be gone this very night; for something warns
 "my soul never to close my eyes, till I have
 "set out on this important journey."

"Far be it from me (said Achmet, moved at
 "the poignancy of his distress) to oppose the
 "intimations of thy better genius. Go in
 "peace; and may thy journey be successful. If
 "aught in my power can contribute to it, de-
 "mand my help with freedom."

"O generous prince, (answered the knight)
 "thy goodness overwhelms my soul, and
 "makes my parting from thee, even on so
 "dear an occasion, painful. If thou wilt give
 "the impression of thy signet, I will set out
 "with two, the poor remains of all my faithful
 "followers, whom I this day have found among
 "the captives, as sent by thee on some impor-
 "tant business; and trust the conduct of my
 "steps to Heaven."——To this proposal Ach-
 met not only agreed, but also gave him some
 gold, to make provision for his journey, and
 then dismissed him with a tender embrace.

"Sir Archibald spent the rest of the day in
 procuring swift and able horses, with every
 other convenience requisite for his journey; and
 at the appointed hour repaired to the hermit's
 cell, where the princess soon after arrived, dis-
 guised in the habit of a man, and attended by
 one of her most favourite maidens in the same
 dress. The illustrious fugitives set out directly,

passing all the guards by virtue of the signet of Achmet, and made such expedition, travelling through private and unfrequented ways, that by the dawn of morning they thought themselves safe from danger of pursuit. As soon as it was light, they stopped by the side of a stream that ran through a thick wood, where they refreshed themselves, and their horses, and rested till the close of the day, sir Archibald watching while his princess slept.

“ In this manner they continued their journey under the immediate protection of Heaven, till they arrived at Constantinople, chusing the road least liable to suspicion, to baffle pursuit; there they directly embarked on board a French ship, which landed them at Marseilles, from whence they journeyed by land to Rochelle, and there hired a ship that carried them safe to Scotland.

“ The joy raised by the arrival of sir Archibald was not confined to his father's house. The whole kingdom, which had shared in his glory, shared in it. His aged father, who seemed to have lived only to resign his honours to his worthy heir, was unable to support the emotions of his rapture, and expired in his embraces, after having bestowed his benediction on his son, and the fair partner of his escape, to whom earl Archibald was joined in the holy bonds of wedlock, as soon as he had performed the last duties to the honoured remains of his father; for her delicacy had not suffered her to think of marriage, till she was arrived at the end of her travels.

“ Prudence and modesty suggested it to this illustrious pair to conceal the countess's high descent

descent, that they might avoid the vain parade of ceremony, and enjoy their lives in retirement, in which earl Archibald's high sense of honour, in concealing his name and country, when a captive, secured them from discovery.

"The only cloud that seemed to over-cast their joy, arose from the pious concern of the countess to hear some account of her father. To procure this, the earl sent one of his faithful men, who had accompanied him in his escape, who undertook not only to gain his lady tidings of him, but also, by some means or other, to lighten his sorrow, by letting him know that she was happy. He set out in the dress of a pilgrim, and performed his journey with success, bringing her word, that, struck with her flight, which he looked upon as a punishment from heaven for his professing the religion of Mahomet, against the admonitions of his conscience, which was secretly inclined to the christian faith, he had resigned his crown to Achmet, and devoted the remainder of his days to Heaven, in a monastery.

"This account completed the happiness of the countess, who blessed the wise dispensations of providence, which had thus made her the cause of her father's conversion. The earl designed never to have quitted his sweet retirement; but the stronger attachment of loyalty once more called him forth into the busy world. His sovereign dying suddenly, and leaving an infant heir, several of the nobles, stirred up by impious ambition, strove to get the royal infant into their hands that they might murder him, and so usurp his throne; but the vigilance of his

his mother prevented their designs, and conveyed him secretly into France.

“Arouzed by the distress of his sovereign and his country, which was now a prey to all the miseries of anarchy, earl Archibald arose, and by his valour and prudent conduct soon restored peace. The people, in gratitude for this service, with one voice offered him the crown; but he refused it with noble disdain, and obliging them to swear allegiance to their rightful prince, recalled and placed him on the throne of his ancestors.



C H A P. XVIII.

Anecdotes of a loyal family concluded. Several instances of uncommon loyalty rewarded in the common manner, with some reflections interesting to those whom they may concern.

“THE descendants of earl Archibald followed his steps in the paths of honour and virtue. In the days of the unfortunate MARY, whose sufferings ended not even with her life, her fame being still maligned to extenuate the injustice of her fate, the noble earl, head of our house, stood firm in the cause of injured majesty, sacrificing the greater part of his ample possessions, to support his royal mistress.

“When JAMES succeeded to the rights which had proved so fatal to his mother, those services were all forgotten, and his favours lavished

vished on a set of upstart hungry parasites : but not discouraged by this ingratitude, when his ill-fated son wanted the assistance of his loyal subjects, in the impious contest between the ENGLISH and their sovereign, which cost him his sacred life, again our house stood forth, a noble pattern of unshaken loyalty, and were the greatest sufferers in his cause.

“ At the restoration of the monarchy, they met the same reward as they had before from the grand-fire of CHARLES ; nor reaped any other benefit from that happy event, than the gratification of the loyalty, which was the ruling principle of their lives.

“ Gold is purified by fiery trials. This only made their virtues shine with brighter lustre. They shewed the same attachment to the son as they had to his father ; and disdaining to submit to power which they looked upon as unnatural-ly usurped, followed misguided JAMES, when he abandoned his throne, into a foreign land, exerting their loyalty in service to his person, till Heaven should point out a propitious moment for accomplishing their hopes of recovering for him at least the ancient crown of his ancestors ; a crown which they wore with distinguished glory, till Heaven in its wrath joined another to it, greater indeed in wealth and power, but not of greater honour.

“ Since that fatal period our glory has shone with diminished splendor ; and we have been looked down upon as dependants, by those who dreaded us before as rivals ; and at length, to compleat the ruin of our wretched country, some of her degenerate sons, seduced by bribery and vain hopes of power, sealed their own infamy,

infamy, and her disgrace, by formally renouncing every shadow of royalty, and giving up the very style and title of a kingdom which had flourished, for a long succession of ages, before that to which they basely thus betrayed its rights had even gained a name.

“The venal and inconstant English, a mingled race, made up of every people under heaven, and those whom their example had debauched, may practise and applaud such corruption; but Scotland’s true-born honest sons will ever watch occasion to shake off the shameful yoke, and restore the honour of their country by restoring to its throne a race of kings descended from themselves.

“Educated in these principles, though under the power which I abhorred, it was natural for me to seize the first opportunity of drawing my sword in the cause of my rightful sovereign. I joined in the attempt made by his son, and was a sharer in his unparalleled sufferings.

“I had been too active in his interest to escape unnoticed. This precluded every thought of living in my own country, even if I could stoop to dissemble my principles, and submit to the prevailing powers. The honour of my ancestors was now the only inheritance which I derived from them. In the difficulties therefore which such a situation was subject to, my natural recourse was to the profession of arms, the only profession which would not be a disgrace to my blood, unstained from endless ages by the mean arts of industry: and whom should I offer my sword but to the prince

to whom my royal master had himself fled in his distress; and who, I flatter myself, has had no reason to repent of the asylum he afforded me; for though my actions have not been yet rewarded by fortune, my name is not unknown to fame?

“This honest representation will to every candid mind remove the prejudices so injuriously entertained against me, and all in my unhappy circumstances. We come not as preferring another country to our own, or striving to supplant the natives in the favours of fortune. Necessity, irresistible necessity, urges our reluctant steps; and we are received and rewarded accordingly, not with the respect of welcome guests, the liberality and honours due to merit. The coldness of charity frowns upon our approach, and all our services are thought to be overpaid by a bare subsistence. Indeed, such are the sentiments which this undeserved treatment inspires, that, did not the short-sighted policy of our native country bar our return by injunctions insignificant to them, and impossible to be complied with by us, the ardour of our loyalty would be damped, and many of us gladly go home and live in peace; by which means, if we did not actually become their best subjects, we should at least rid them of their most dangerous enemies.”

The appearance of the morning here put an end to his discourse, which his companion heard without interruption, though with visible indifference, and assented to in the politest manner. When they were relieved they retired to their respective tents with equal expedition, though on different occasions; the former

former to replenish his snuff-box, which he had emptied in the earnestness of his conversation, and the other to wash his neck-cloth and ruffles, and powder his hair, that he might make a proper appearance when he waited upon his general.



CHAP. XIX.

The difference between fighting battles in the field, and in the cabinet. The happiness of having good friends, with further instances of military equity.

AS the late miscarriage had made a considerable alteration in the situation of affairs, it was necessary to send notice of it to all the parties engaged in the same cause, that they might regulate their measures accordingly. Nothing could draw a stronger picture of human vanity, than the terms in which this account was given. Instead of owning with candour that they had been severely repulsed, and in danger of an absolute defeat, they only said, "that the enemy having escaped by accident from an attack by which they designed to have gained a decisive victory, they had thought proper to make some alterations in the plan of their operations for the rest of the campaign."

But this vain evasion was instantly seen through; the steps they were obliged to take, in consequence of a disappointment which they affected to treat so lightly, shewed that it was a

matter of the most serious nature, and had effectually broke through all their measures for that campaign, on the success of which they had built such sanguine hopes, and exerted their utmost efforts to promote it.

As there was nothing more to be seen here, I took the opportunity of accompanying a courier who was sent on this occasion to another of the armies, confederate in the same cause, the general of which had acquired such reputation by his conduct, that I expected to find the art of war reduced by him to a regular science, and carried on in a manner worthy of a rational being: how well my expectations were answered, the event will shew.

I found him in his tent, reading over some orders which he had just received from his court. When he had finished them, "What
" trouble have I (said he to himself) to keep
" these people from ruining themselves? A wo-
" man has the vapours, and therefore I must fight
" a battle to raise her spirits with the news of
" a victory. A minister wants to display his
" talents, and I must take a town, that he
" may draw up the articles of capitulation;
" and yet the least miscarriage in the execution
" of their orders, however ill-timed or absurd,
" will be laid entirely to my charge. This
" is the happiness of serving under people who
" know nothing of the matter; who direct the
" operations of a campaign in their closets,
" draw up armies upon paper, make marches,
" and form sieges with their fingers in the
" wine spilled on the table; and fight battles,
" and beat their enemies as they get drunk.
" But I am not to be moved by their humours.

" I

"I have preserved them hitherto in spite of themselves, by adhering steadily to my own opinion; and I will continue to do so, or resign the command, and leave them to their fate."—— Saying this, he gave orders to double all the fortifications of his camp, and then returned a summary answer to the minister, that the situation of affairs at that time made it impossible for him to obey his directions.

Such cautious conduct in an army, whose strength seemed almost to make all caution unnecessary, appeared very extraordinary; but a little observation explained the reason of it. In the mean time other occurrences, new to me, and strange in speculation, though common in the military practice, attracted my attention.

As the general went to take a view of his entrenchments, that he might see where it was most proper to add to their strength, according to his own system, he was met by a deputation from the inhabitants of the country, on a most interesting occasion. Though he was determined not to take the least notice of any thing they could say, he thought proper to give them an hearing, to save appearances.

The person who spoke to him, in the name of the rest, addressing him with an air of respect, mixed with indignation, "I am sent to your excellency (said he) by the few remaining inhabitants of this wretched country, to implore your commiseration of their distressed state. The misfortunes, impossible to be avoided in the seat of a war, have long since consumed their strength, and exhausted all their regular resources. The contributions

“demanded by your excellency yesterday, exceed their utmost power. The indispensable means of subsistence is all that is left them; to take the smallest portion from which must make life a curse, and aggravate their miseries to despair. Your sovereign and our’s are confederates in this war, the cause of which was originally your’s; and so must the advantage be in the end. We expect nothing. Why then must the weight of it be laid entirely upon us? If you come for our protection, Why do you not drive our enemies away? If that is not to be done, Why not march into their territories, and remove to them a burthen which we can no longer bear? It were better for us to support but one army, even though that were of enemies, than two. The number of our very friends has eaten us up. We throw ourselves therefore upon your excellency’s justice and compassion, and beg an alleviation of distresses, which we are unable to sustain. Represent our case in its proper colours to your sovereign; and, in the mean time, suspend the execution of orders which overwhelm us with despair.”

The general heard this pathetic speech without the least emotion; and as soon as it was concluded, “I am sorry for your sufferings; (answered he coldly) but the redress of them lies not in my power. You must apply to the ministry. If they supply me with other means to support the war, I shall be glad; till then I must make use of those in my hands.”—Then turning directly to an officer who stood near him, he ordered the contributions

tributions to be levied, without favour or delay,

The unsuccessful advocates had scarce departed when an express arrived from one of his advanced posts, to inform him that the enemy had laid all that side of the country in flames, and were just then making some motions which appeared as if they intended to attack him in his entrenchments. His officers heard this account with the highest indignation; and, confiding in their numbers, expressed their eagerness to prevent such an insult, by marching out directly to meet them.

But the general disregarded their ardour, and firmly resolved to pursue his own system;
 “ The enemy should know me too well, (said
 “ he) to imagine that I can be taken with
 “ such a bait! When there is nothing more
 “ to burn, the flames will go out of them-
 “ selves. All their braving shall not make me
 “ quit the advantage of my situation. The
 “ event of battles is uncertain, and often
 “ proves contrary to the best founded expectation.
 “ Beside, their affairs and ours are in
 “ a very different state. A victory might ac-
 “ complish all their designs, which are disap-
 “ pointed as effectually by delay as by a defeat;
 “ it is therefore right in them to risk every
 “ thing. But the contrary is our case; we
 “ might lose every thing by a defeat; and do
 “ gain as much by delay, as we could by vic-
 “ tory; so that to put any thing to the hazard
 “ were madness. As to the disgrace to our
 “ honour, in being braved thus, that is nothing.
 “ Success alone is honour in war. I am sorry,
 “ it is true, for the ruin of the country;
 G 4 “ but

"but I have other business here beside preserving that, and which I must first attend to; and I shall think myself happy if I can accomplish it at so easy a rate as the ruin of a country that does not belong to us."—
Saying this, he continued his ride, absolutely unmoved at the sight of the flames which arose from all the villages in that particular part of the country from whence he had drawn his subsistence, while there was any remaining for him.

There was something so deliberately cruel in protracting the miseries of the innocent in this manner, in order to wear out an enemy whom he was evidently afraid to face in the field, that however consonant it might be to the principles of military equity, and however just his maxim, that "Success alone is honour in war," I turned away from the sight with abhorrence.



CHAP. XX.

War! War in procinè! The comforts of Greatness. A night-scene, with a continuation of it, neither of the most agreeable nature.

THOUGH my heart was by this time sick of war, curiosity still had force to make me take a view of the army opposed to this, the character of whose commander promised some variety, and more active scenes at least, if not more rational and humane than those I had

had hitherto seen. "It is not possible (thought I) that the military science, which has been so highly extolled by men of the greatest genius in every age and country, and made the seal of fame, the indisputed title to every advantage of this world, should be such a confused medley of blunders and butchery, carried on headlong, without regard to the most indispensable principles of justice or humanity, or attention to any rational or determined point, beside avarice, or a savage passion for revenge. The generals who make so grand a figure in the writings of poets, and historians, could not have been like these; nor the battles, by which they acquired their immortal glory, such fruitless random scenes of blind, and worse than brutal carnage! I have been often cautioned against forming my judgment too hastily."

Having confirmed myself in my resolution by these reflections, I was so desirous to put it in execution, that I would not even stay to travel with any other person, as I had done before; but availing myself of the powers with which the spirit had endowed me, I *wished* myself directly into the enemy's camp.

The first things that struck me here were the eagerness and assiduity of every individual, so different from the listless stupidity and carelessness which had given me such disgust in the other armies. The soldiers seemed by their looks to understand the motives of the war in which they were engaged, and to think themselves interested in the event. Such a sight gave me pleasure. "This (thought I) is something worth beholding! These act like men,

“by exerting that reason which distinguishes them from brutes; and that cause must be just which so many approve of, and support with their lives.”

As I was making these reflections, the commander (whom I found to be their sovereign) passed me, and by his affability and encouraging address added wings to the diligence with which they all strove to execute his commands. I joined him directly, studious to observe every look and action of so extraordinary a person.

He was that morning making a general review of his army, which was drawn out for that purpose. Though every thing was strictly regular, and bore the most martial appearance, I remarked that the monarch frequently sighed as he darted his experienced eye along the ranks. He seemed to look for something which he could not find, and melted almost into tears at the tender youth of the greater part of his troops.

But if the private men appeared young and unexperienced, the officers of every degree wore the opposite characters in their countenances. Birth, riches, or favour, evidently had no place in their promotion. They rose by merit alone, and the soldier who deserved command was sure of obtaining it. This was the most effectual provision which human prudence could make to ensure success; nor did the event disappoint it. If the inferiority of his numbers hindered his obtaining decisive victories, the excellent discipline of his forces so far ballanced that advantage, that his enemies could not prevail against him.

When

THE REVERIE. 131

When he had finished the business of the morning, he retired to his tent, and throwing himself, with a fatigued look and discontented air, into a chair, "When will this horrid work be at an end? (said he) When shall my wearied heart have rest? O ambition, thou madness of misguided man! Thou source of the worst evils which afflict his wretched race! To thee are sacrificed all the tenderesses of humanity, all the most sacred principles of social and moral virtue. And for what? To pursue an unessential phantom, to grasp at a bubble that melts at the touch, and illudes the empty hand! For such is the glory of this world, however highly blazoned by prejudice and vanity; the echo of a sound that has passed by, the shadow of a cloud that floats in the air."

He was interrupted in these reflections by the arrival of a courier, with dispatches from one of his ministers. The moment he ran his eye over them, that gloom of lassitude and discontent which overcast his brow vanished, his eye flashed with resentment and martial ardour, and his whole frame seemed to be on fire. He gave orders for all his generals to attend him directly, and then walking a turn or two about his tent, "No! (said he) it is not come to that yet. Never will I submit to such ignominious terms, while I have one subject able to draw a sword. Never will I tarnish the glory of so many victories by the least concession. Is my fate to depend on the caprice of a woman? Are my dominions to be parcelled out by dreaming statesmen? Sooner shall the ravages of war con-

“sume them all, than I will yield to such dishonour. I’ll fight it out to the last man, set fire to the last town with my own hand, and perish in the flames, before my soul shall bend to their desires, or comply with such disgraceful conditions.”

The entrance of his officers broke off his meditations. He paused a moment, to moderate the emotions of his soul, and then addressing himself to them, “My friends, (said he) our enemies insult us. They make proposals too haughty and severe to be received even from victors. But we will bring them to a more moderate way of thinking. I am resolved to make one effort, to put an end to this destructive war. We will this night attack the enemy in such a quarter. Our wary adversary will not run the hazard of succouring his colleague in the dark, for fear an attempt should be made upon his own camp in the mean while; so that, for this time, the advantage of numbers will not be against us. In other respects, I know the difficulty of the undertaking; but difficulties never discourage a brave mind from great attempts. I am sick of the horrors of war, and will see no more of them. We will either conquer or die.”

His generals heard these words with a melancholy, fierce delight. They all wished to see an end put to the calamities which laid their country waste; if that could not be accomplished, death appeared a desirable release from the horrors with which they were surrounded. As soon as they left their sovereign’s presence, therefore, they embraced each other, as men who

who expected not to meet again, and then went to prepare every thing for putting his commands in execution.

As for the monarch, the approach of such a scene seemed a relief to his mind, by diverting his attention from the reflections which tortured him before. Unentangled in the tender connexions of nature, which, as it were, multiply a man into many selfs for the safety of each dear particular of whom, his anxiety is greater than for his own, he looked forward to the dreadful hour unmoved; and, despising any danger which threatened himself, was not disturbed with sympathetic apprehensions for others.

At length the moment, loaded with the fate of so many thousands, arrived. The horrors of such a sight are beyond description; my soul still sickens at the thought. I have said that the attack was to be made in the night. Nature, as if to hide the madness of mankind, wrapped the guilty scene in tenfold darkness. This was favourable to the assailants. Inspired with the resolution of their sovereign, they knew that their road to victory was right forwards, and rushed on with an impetuosity impossible to be resisted; while their opponents, attacked on every side, knew not where to direct their force. But neither did they know whither to retreat. If distraction therefore made their efforts less effectual, despair supported their resolution. They fought at random, and destroyed their friends as well as their enemies: but still they fought with valour, heightened by despair. At length their entrenchments were all forced, and they were driven,

driven, themselves scarce knew whither. The darkness, which before was against them, proved now their security. Pursuit was impossible. The advantage also had already cost the victors so dear, that they were cautious, as the least miscarriage might reverse the success.

The heart of man must be seared against every feeling of humanity, to support such a sight as the morning-light disclosed. The victorious monarch, animated with all his martial enthusiasm, was unable to bear it. He led his men, harrassed as they were, in pursuit of the enemy, though he expected not to overtake them; but then it removed him from this horrid scene.

As soon as his spirits had cooled a little from the ardour, or rather madness, necessary to support them through their late exertion, he sought to relieve nature by rest. But the labours of his mind were far from being at an end. Sleep had no sooner overpowered his weary senses, than his imagination was at work, and placed him in the midst of the tumults and confusion from which he was but just delivered. He gave aloud the several words of command, and fought over again the whole battle of the night before, with as much eagerness and anxiety as if he was actually engaged, till at length the hurry of his spirits and agitation of his whole frame awoke him, little refreshed by such broken slumbers. Such a life could not afford pleasure in the contemplation. I was just turning from him, surfeited with *heroism* and *greatness*, when an affair that shewed his character in a new light attracted my attention.



C H A P. XXI.

An approved medicine for a sick mind. A curious conversation between two great persons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame.

W^HEN he arose from his thorny pillow, he went to a trunk, and taking out a book, "Learning (said he, sighing) has been called the medicine of the mind. Let me try if I can find it so. No mind ever wanted a medicine to heal its sickness, more than mine does at this moment."—Then reading a page or two, "Aye, (continued he) these are fine schemes, if they could but be brought to bear. Any of them would ensure the wished-for, envied epithet of great, without the fatigue of this horrid trade of war; though I much fear this too will disappoint me as that did, and that in the end I shall find I have consumed my life in building castles in the air."

He then paused a moment, in a discontented mood, and, throwin^g by the book, took up a written paper, on which he had scarce cast his eye when he seemed to have found the remedy he wanted. A smile of self-complacency softened his brow, his eyes sparkled with pleasure, and his heart throbbed with conscious pride, as he read it over most emphatically to himself. "Why did I not fix my hopes of fame, my claim to immortality, on these? (said he, swelling

“ swelling into tenfold consequence as he
 “ spoke) the muses would not have disdained
 “ my addressees; they would have crowned me
 “ with that glory which I fought for in vain in
 “ philosophy, and fear I pursue with no better
 “ prospect of success in war. But soft! Is not
 “ this the day on which that favourite of the
 “ muses, *Crambo*, promised to come and shew
 “ me his last work? Who knows but I may
 “ effect the sum of all my designs by his assist-
 “ ance? Every other business must give place
 “ to this. I would not miss the pleasure of
 “ conversing with him, or run the hazard of
 “ any other’s seeing his works before me, for
 “ many reasons.” — Saying this, he called
 one of his attendants, and, sending some general
 directions to his officers, gave orders that no
 one should be admitted to him that morning
 but a particular person, whom he described.

He had not waited long, when the expected
 visitor arrived, disguised in such a manner
 as must effectually conceal him. The monarch
 received him with the greatest familiarity,
 and pointing to a chair near himself, “ Sit
 “ down, my friend, (said he) distinction is un-
 “ necessary among the muses’ sons. You won-
 “ der, I doubt not, at my desiring you to
 “ come in that disguise; but the reason was
 “ this: In my situation every motion is ex-
 “ posed to notice. When I have a mind,
 “ therefore, to steal an hour from care, I am
 “ obliged to use some artifice of this kind, to
 “ conceal my design. I am now thought to
 “ be engaged on the most weighty affairs;
 “ and your dress, with the mysterious manner
 “ of your introduction, favours the deceit, and
 “ makes

" makes you pass for some secret emissary who
 " has brought me intelligence. Were it known
 " that I enjoy one hour of social converse,
 " like another man, it would take off from my
 " importance, and weaken that implicit respect
 " which the nature of my affairs makes indis-
 " pensible. This is the blessing of pre-emi-
 " nence : painful pre-eminence, eminent in
 " woe.

" But let us quit so disagreeable a subject.
 " Have you brought me the piece you men-
 " tioned in your letter ? I long to see it ; and
 " hope you have not taken the least notice of
 " it to any other person living. Alexander
 " was not more jealous of his tutor's publish-
 " ing his knowledge for the instruction of the
 " world, than I am of your communicating
 " your works, even by the bare mention of their
 " names, before I have had the first perusal of
 " them. Like him, I would engross the sole
 " enjoyment."

" Your majesty does me the highest honour
 " by this jealousy ; (answered the other) but I
 " am afraid the object will be found unworthy.
 " However, such as it is, I lay it at your
 " feet."

—" But has no living person seen, nor
 " even heard of it ?"

—" None, I can most truly assure your
 " majesty. I obeyed your commands with the
 " greatest care. Here it is. The subject, I
 " own, is trifling ; but I hope the execution
 " will not displease you. It is a short confu-
 " tation of all the prejudices which have so
 " long enslaved the human mind, under the
 " title of religion. I have proved, in an alle-
 " gorical

“gorical history, by familiar instances taken
 “from real or at least possible life, which is
 “the same thing, that chance governs the
 “world, and every occurrence in it; and that
 “to attribute them to any other cause, such as
 “infinite power, wisdom, goodness, and such
 “like, is most absurd, as they are plainly con-
 “trary to the effects of such a cause; and to
 “give a greater force to my reasoning, I have
 “all along affected to treat these very notions,
 “which I controvert, with the most solemn
 “respect.”

“Just as I have written with the greatest
 “acerbity against maxims (interrupted the
 “king) which I practise every hour of my
 “life.”——Then running his eye hastily over
 the first page, which chance had opened to
 him, “This is the thing (continued he, in a
 “rapture) which has been ever wanted to clear
 “the eyes of man, and enlighten his mind
 “with the radiance of real knowledge. The
 “voice of reason here utters the sacred words
 “of truth, adorned with all the beauties of
 “imagination. How exactly have you hit
 “upon my sentiments! how forcibly expressed
 “them! My actions must have long proved
 “to all who are capable of lifting up the veil
 “which necessity obliges man to wear, that
 “this is my opinion. You must leave the
 “manuscript with me, that I may peruse it at
 “my better leisure; and remember, I have
 “your promise, that you will not mention a
 “word of it to any mortal. I have reasons for
 “this injunction, which may not be disagreea-
 “ble to you.”

——“Nothing that your majesty commands
 “can

" can be disagreeable to me; nor need you
 " doubt my service. Here is another little
 " thing, a mock-heroic poem, in which the
 " folly of all the philosophy, and the false pre-
 " tensions to knowledge, which have imposed
 " upon the world for so many generations, are
 " properly displayed. It is something of the
 " same nature with the other, the design of
 " which it compleats, by shewing that there
 " is nothing certain in this life; and, there-
 " fore, that true wisdom consists in doing that
 " which is most agreeable to ourselves, with-
 " out regard to any contrary opinions, how-
 " ever hallowed to foolish veneration by the
 " rust and cobwebs of antiquity."

——" My system still. Yes! let me have it.
 " My head is stunned with the noise of war,
 " and wants the harmony of your numbers to
 " compose it. This is poetry. This is the
 " genuine effusion of a mind inspired. Such
 " writing disdains the critic's rage, and even
 " rises above the wreck of time. What ele-
 " gance! What fire! How bold, and yet how
 " clear."

——" Your majesty's approbation is the
 " highest object of my ambition. It is fame.
 " Though till that sanction is made public, I
 " doubt not but I shall have an outcry raised
 " against me, particularly on account of the
 " first work, for bringing ridicule to aid my
 " arguments, against opinions so long conse-
 " crated, by ignorance, to blind respect. But
 " it was impossible to restrain the sallies of wit
 " on subjects which lay so open to its lash."

——" Most

—“Most certainly; nor are they in the
“least reprehensible. A poignant jest often
“shames a man out of an opinion which no
“argument could make him give up. You
“tell me with the assurance of sacred truth,
“that no man living knows any thing of ei-
“ther of these works. In return for your
“complying with my desire in that, I will
“now intrust you with the darling secret of my
“soul. No man must ever know any thing
“of them. I mean, as your’s. Shall I tell
“you all? You are sensible of the ardour with
“which I pant for fame. Though chance has
“thrown me into the more turbulent scenes of
“life, my heart languishes for the happiness of
“retirement, for the glory that is acquired by
“the calmer works of learned ease: nor were
“my first essays to obtain it so unsuccessful as
“to discourage the pursuit, did the indispen-
“sible duties of my station permit it.
“Can you then, my friend, indulge this
“ruling passion of my soul so far, as to give up
“these children of your brain to my adop-
“tion, and let me produce them to the world
“as my own, without danger of paternal
“fondness’s breaking out, and claiming them?
“I know it is a delicate and difficult request;
“but I will amply recompense your com-
“pliance, and then you will soon be able to
“produce more. The spring from whence
“these flowed is not exhausted.
“Beside, I claim a kind of right to them.
“They are the very sentiments of my soul,
“which I designed to have published as soon
“as I could spare time to dispose them into
“proper order. In this you have prevented
“me,

“me; may I not say rather, saved me the trouble, and now present my own anticipated offspring to me, with the advantage of being educated by your hand. The matter is literally mine, as much as it is your’s : the form indeed is all your own. What do you say ? Are you willing to gratify my desire ?”

—“Every command of your majesty’s is entitled to immediate obedience ; I most willingly consign them into your hands, to dispose of as you please, either to publish or absolutely suppress them for ever. Could I have thought of their having such a glorious fate, I should have laboured to make them more worthy of it.”

—“They are very well. It is the subject that particularly strikes me. If I find any thing amiss in the manner of treating it, I will myself correct it. Here ! take this order to my treasurer : You see it is expressly said to be for *secret service*.”

“Your majesty’s munificence (answered the lucky author, who was so astonished at the greatness of the sum, that it was some time before he had power to speak) overwhelms me with confusion. This is too much ; too much for me to take !”

—“But not for me to give (replied the monarch, smiling). Let me see you again before you go away. I must now give some orders, which are this moment come into my head ; but I shall be at leisure by the time you return from the treasurer.”

The author bowed with the most profound respect, and departed in evident happiness of heart.

When he was gone, the king, looking at his new purchase with the highest delight, "At length (said he) I have accomplished my design. These will extend my fame through the whole circle of the human powers. I shine already as a legislator and historian; these add the characters of a poet, and a divine. Singularity is the first step to eminence. A great man should do nothing in the common way. Now that I have unhinged the religion of the world, as soon as I am at leisure I will devise a new one of my own, and erect it on the ruins of the old. This is all I want to confirm my being the greatest man of this, or any age."

When he had pleased himself with these reflections for some time, he resumed his wonted thoughtful look, and went to meet his ministers, who, struck with his appearance, listened to his words with a kind of religious veneration, prepared to obey whatever he should command, without presuming to discuss it even in their own minds, as if he had been a being of a superior nature.

Having dispatched these affairs, he retired to meet the happy author, who had received the money, and was returned according to his orders. "Well, (said the king) I hope you don't regret the exchange you have made. I have nothing more to say to you at this time, but to desire that I may hear constantly from you. Much as I am involved in other affairs, I shall always find time to correspond with you; and observe, that I insist on your laying aside all formality, and writing your thoughts as freely as they rise

"in

"in your mind; as I, and all lovers of philosophic truth do."

"Your majesty (answered the other) heaps new honours on me, by every new command. I will obey you with the utmost punctuality, and think myself happy if my poor works can merit the approbation of so consummate a judge."—The scene now grew so fulsome, each flattering the other in the grossest manner, that I was glad when it was ended.

This contemptible instance of vanity sullied the lustre of the monarch's other qualities, and made me so sick of ambition in every shape, that I could bear the sight of him no longer. I therefore took my leave of heroism and greatness, of which my heart was sick, and departed along with the author, in whom I saw something that raised my curiosity to be better acquainted with him.



CHAP. XIII.

A remarkable instance of poetic gratitude and justice, with some anecdotes of a celebrated genius.

THE moment he left the monarch's presence, he made all possible haste to get out of his reach also, for fear of his changing his mind, and resuming his most profuse present. When his heart was freed from this fear, on his entering the territories of a neutral power,

power, he stopped, to recover his fatigue, and consider how he should dispose of his new fortune in the most proper manner. After a variety of schemes, he at last resolved to fix his abode in the territories of a certain free but poor state, where he should be at liberty to pursue his own inclinations without interruption, and gain respect by the magnificence which he was now able to display.

This first point being settled, his thoughts naturally recurred to the means by which he had acquired his fortune. Amply as the monarch had paid him for the honour of fathering his works, his vanity took the alarm at the same he should lose, and envy determined him to break faith with his benefactor, and betray his weakness by publishing the works in his own name, as soon as ever the king should declare them to be his; for he would not do it sooner to prevent him, that the detection might heighten the disgrace, the thoughts of his being under obligation, to which he meant to make so base a return, inflaming his heart with the most malignant hatred. "I will expose him
 "to the contempt of mankind, (said he) for his
 "meanness and vanity. He never shall have
 "the honour of my works. When he has
 "plumed himself in the merit of them for a
 "while, I'll strip the gawdy daw of his stolen
 "feathers, and point him out to universal ri-
 "dicule. He make alterations too! and cor-
 "rect my errors! Let him, let him expose
 "himself! The coarse patches will betray the
 "bungling hand that puts them on, and serve
 "for a convenient foil to the rest. If he de-
 "sires fame, let him earn it, and not strive
 "thus

" thus to steal it from another. He never shall
 " have the honour of my works. Had he not
 " been a fool, he might have foreseen this, and
 " in the plenitude of his tyranny have put it
 " out of my power to defeat his design, by
 " taking away my life; but I am now beyond
 " his reach, and shall take care to keep my-
 " self so."—— Then melting into rapture, at
 the thought of his wealth, " I will live (con-
 " tinued he) like a prince among those repub-
 " licans, whose parsimony will be a foil to
 " my munificence. Every thing about me,
 " every thing I do shall have an air of gran-
 " deur; I'll build a theatre at my own house,
 " where I will have my works represented ac-
 " cording to my own taste, to my chosen
 " friends."

The deliberate baseness of this resolution, so
 contradictory to the proper use of the powers
 which produced the occasion of it, tempted me
 to look back to the principal occurrences in the
 life of so extraordinary a person. He was born
 in a neighbouring country, where genius is
 encouraged by approbation, and starves in the
 midst of flattery. Abilities, such as his, soon
 distinguished themselves. He became the fa-
 vourite of the publick, and heard nothing but
 his own praises. But his reign was not long.
 He thought with a freedom and spirit which
 gave jealousy to a government established on
 the principles of despotism, and was obliged to
 fly his native land, to avoid falling a sacrifice
 to his fame.

The country in which he took refuge was
 in every respect the reverse of that he left. Ap-
 probation was given sparingly, and never soon;

H

but

but the more substantial reward of present profit seldom disappointed merit; and rational liberty gave genius its full scope. Here he first tasted the sweets of independency, and formed schemes for establishing himself in the possession of that inestimable blessing. But his eagerness disappointed him, by betraying him into some actions which obliged him to quit that country as precipitately as he had his own, to avoid a more ignominious fate.

After some time spent in discontented rambling, this prince, whom his fame had reached, not only gave him an asylum in his dominions, but also heaped his favours on him so lavishly, that he resumed his hopes of independency, which this last affair enabled him to accomplish in a manner he had never even raised wishes to. The return he meditated, and did afterwards partly make (for when he considered more coolly, he dropt that part of his scheme of letting the king publish them first, for fear his credit should overbalance his own, and make himself appear the plagiarist, and therefore printed them directly in his own name; a perfidy which the discontented monarch did not dare to impeach, and could not punish) was agreeable to the natural tendency of his disposition, and of a piece with his behaviour to the people whose beneficence had afforded him relief, and first raised his hopes, whom he calumniated with the most malignant virulence, as soon as he was out of the reach of their offended laws.

The abilities which enabled him to triumph over so many difficulties as his folly drew him into, were certainly very great, though vanity
much

much lessened their merit. An affectation of singularity, of shewing himself wiser than all the rest of the world, making him dispute the truth of, and treat with contempt these principles which had ever been held in the highest respect, and established as the rules of moral action, the foundations of religious faith.

Impious and absurd as such vanity was, it found applause and imitation from the kindred vanity of the greater part of mankind; and the interest they had in supplanting an authority that contradicted their practice, and made it criminal in the eyes of others, and dangerous in their own.

To this cause chiefly he was indebted for the rapidity of his rise to fame; for literary merit, however great, is obliged to stand the test of time before it meets general approbation, where some lucky circumstance does not concur thus to favour it.

Shocked at such a prostitution, I left him to pursue his own machinations; and, having abundantly satisfied my curiosity with military matters, resolved to change the scene of my observations, and go to the courts of the powers engaged in war, in hopes that, for the credit of human nature, I might find the measures of their civil government deduced from more rational principles than those which appeared to influence the conduct of their armies.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

THE
R E V E R I E;
OR, A
Flight to the Paradise of Fools.
BOOK II.

C H A P. I.

A council scene. The mildness of female government; with a remarkable instance of the happy effect of reproof upon great minds.

THE first court which I thought proper to take a view of was that of the power most immediately engaged in the war against the prince whose camp I had just left. Accordingly I wished myself thither directly, to avoid the pain of travelling through the scenes of desolation and misery exhibited by all the countries around.

On my arrival I found the sovereign seated in council, in the midst of his ministers. There appeared in his looks a phlegm, which
in

in different countries is taken to denote the different qualities of wisdom and stupidity; and which here seemed to have extended its soporific influence over all present, who sat with their eyes fixed upon the table, as if waiting in suspension of thought for something to set their faculties at work.

They had continued in this state for some time, when a female entered and placed herself at the right hand of the sovereign. Her features were strong, and masculine; she was dressed in the robes of independent royalty, and the haughtiness of her looks and deportment shewed that she esteemed herself superior to all the princes of the world.

The moment she entered, the whole council assumed a new appearance. The sovereign looked abashed, and the ministers, roused from their former serenity, waited for her words with fear and trembling. "I ordered your attendance, (said she, looking fiercely round, the fire of her soul flashing from her eyes as she spoke) to let you know what I will have done in the present conjuncture. I will no longer bear to be braved thus by my vassals, who by the weakness of some of my predecessors have acquired this unnatural power of rebelling against their sovereign. They shall be declared public enemies to the general state, and the rest of the feudatories obliged to join their forces, according to the ordinances of those who gave them the power they now possess, to reduce them to their proper state of obedience. When these have done that, the troops of my own dominions shall humble them also. I will no longer be op-

“posed by such ingrateful slaves; for such they
 “were, and such they shall be again. And
 “you, sir, (addressing herself to the sovereign)
 “must enforce this sentence with your authority.
 “The rank to which you have been
 “raised by your alliance with me, enables
 “you to do any thing, if you had but proper
 “spirit.”

“Madam, (answered the sovereign) I—I—
 “I can do nothing. You have taken all the
 “power into your own hands, and left nothing
 “for me to do.”

“Yes, (replied she, with a look of the
 “highest contempt) you can drink away your
 “senses; and that is all you mind. Had I
 “been blessed with an husband of spirit equal
 “to my own, we should have subdued the
 “world. All mankind would have been my
 “slaves. But now the work is all my own;
 “you only contribute an empty name.”——
 Then turning to her secretary, “Let this de-
 “cree be notified to all the other vassals with-
 “out loss of time, that they may prepare to
 “obey it.”

“May it please your most august majesty,
 “(said the secretary, making an obeisance as
 “low as adoration) is this sentence intended
 “only against the principal power with whom
 “you are at war? Or are all his friends, those
 “I mean who have not directly declared against
 “you, to be included?”

“All, all; (answered she) their presump-
 “tion is equal, and so shall be their punish-
 “ment. Those who even hesitate to obey my
 “commands I hold to be my enemies, and
 “will treat them as such.”

“Your

“Your most sacred majesty’s commands (replied the secretary) should be a law to all the world. Here is a memorial which I have this day received from the minister of his principal ally. It relates immediately to the purpose of this your majesty’s most magnanimous and just resolution, their conscious dread of which anticipates your tremendous declaration.”

“Let it be read; (said she, impatiently) I will hear what it contains, though all the world shall not make me alter my resolution.”

“Far be it from your servant to suppose any such thing; (answered the secretary) the will of so mighty a princess should be as immutable as fate. Shall I read the whole, or only give a summary of the contents? It is very long; and not always conceived with that respect due to your sublimity, from the other sovereigns of the earth.”

“The substance of it (replied she haughtily) will be as much as I shall hear, and more than I shall pay regard to.”

“Hem! ahem! In the first place, (said he, clearing his voice, and casting his eye upon the paper in his hand) the memorialist presumes to throw the blame of the present war entirely upon your majesty; accusing you of a design to overturn the just rights and liberties of those whom he calls the sovereign princes and independent members of the state; and in consequence of this accusation justifies the opposition made by your enemy, and the assistance contributed by others to the support of a cause common to them all.

"He presumes likewise to deny and protest
 "against your irresistible majesty's undoubted
 "right of employing the authority of his most
 "serene majesty, your royal consort, in a dis-
 "pute which interferes not with his state, but
 "belongs entirely to your own hereditary do-
 "minions, audaciously and directly insinuating,
 "that, instead of aiding your majesty's designs,
 "he ought to oppose his whole force to defeat
 "them, agreeably to the true intent of the
 "high trust reposed in him when he was raised
 "to his present exalted station. In quality
 "then of sovereign of other dominions, he
 "takes the liberty to upbraid your incompar-
 "able majesty with ingratitude, asserting, that,
 "without mentioning the many obligations
 "conferred upon your royal ancestors, your
 "majesty has yourself been supported on your
 "throne by his assistance, against the efforts
 "of those very enemies of your august house,
 "whom you have now most unnaturally join-
 "ed with against him, your only firm and ef-
 "fectual ally; and, lastly, he has the assur-
 "ance to declare, that he will now employ the
 "same power in defence of what he calls his
 "own rights, and those of his allies; with
 "which he most insolently adds, that he fears
 "not to humble that ingrateful——"

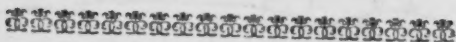
While the secretary was making this recital,
 every feature of his mistress's face was distorted
 with the different passions of pride, rage, and
 revenge; but these last words hurried her be-
 yond all patience. "Villain! (said she, snatch-
 "ing the memorial from his trembling hand,
 "and throwing it in his face) How darest thou
 "repeat such insolence before me? Obligations
 "to

"to him! he only did his duty; and was over-
 "paid by my acceptance of it. My house,
 "the first on earth, has a right to every thing
 "in the power of inferior princes, to contri-
 "bute to its exaltation; nor shall any petty,
 "limited, sovereign presume to call my com-
 "mands in question, or censure my making
 "alliances with whom I please. Whatever I
 "will is right; and this I will support against
 "all their opposition, while I have a subject
 "able to draw a sword."

The vehemence with which she spoke these
 words awoke her royal consort, who was so
 affected by the rebuke she had given him just
 before, that he fell asleep. Starting therefore,
 "Hah! What! What opposition? (said he,
 "staring about, and repeating her last word)
 "What opposition?"

"Peace, idiot! sot! (answered his gentle
 "mate) the only opposition I regard, is that
 "of your indolence and stupidity." — Then
 turning again to the secretary, "Draw up the
 "decree (continued she) directly, and enforce
 "it with every expression of contempt for the
 "writer of this insolent memorial. I'll shew
 "him what regard I pay to his upbraidings;
 "and that I hold the services he values himself
 "so highly upon, to be all cancelled from the
 "moment he dared to disobey my sovereign.
 "will in any instance." —

Saying this, she arose; and, dismissing the
 council with a motion of her hand, retired,
 her royal consort not venturing to speak a
 word.



C H A P. II.

A ready salve for a sore conscience, with a proper reward for piety. An unexpected disappointment shews greatness of soul in a striking light. A day concluded consistently.

FROM council her majesty went into her own apartment, where she met her confessor, who was waiting for her. "I sent for you, father, (said she) to unburthen my conscience, which cannot bear the weight of any thing that even looks like a crime. The event of this war not immediately answering my expectations, I have consented to a proposal made to me, of having my enemy taken off by poison: I have also given orders to one of my generals, to march into the territories of those states who refused to join with me in the war, and to burn and destroy all before him, putting man, woman, and child, to the sword, to revenge the disrespectful manner in which they refused to comply with my demands, and strike a terror into others for the future. Now, as I conclude that both these orders have been put in execution this morning, I sent for you to receive absolution."

"The piety of your most sacred majesty (answered the ecclesiastic) is highly commendable, and deserves the indulgence of the holy church in the most unlimited degree.

"Such

" Such things, to be sure, are in general criminal; but particular circumstances may change
 " their nature. The urgency of your majesty's
 " affairs requires dispatch, and your honour
 " must be vindicated. These considerations
 " are in themselves of weight to authorize what
 " else ought to be avoided. But there is another
 " reason still stronger, and which makes
 " the actions that hurt the tenderness of your
 " conscience meritorious, instead of reprehensible.
 " Your enemy is an heretic, and therefore
 " out of the protection of all laws human
 " and divine; and those who refused to assist
 " you against him, though not formally heretics
 " themselves as yet, discover by that refusal
 " a kind of tendency that way, and
 " should be prevented by wholesome chastisement;
 " the first duty of all true sons of the
 " church being to extirpate heresy."

Having quieted her majesty's conscience by this pious distinction, he proceeded to the ceremony of giving her absolution, which he performed with a solemnity and parade equally impious and ridiculous on such an occasion.

When this important affair was finished, addressing his penitent with a look of joy, " I
 " have the happiness (said he) to congratulate
 " your majesty on the highest honour which
 " can be obtained in this world. Our most
 " holy father, in token of his approbation of
 " your zeal for the glory of the church, has
 " thought proper to grant you an addition to
 " your titles, which gives you the pre-eminence
 " over all the potentates on earth; and
 " has blessed me with the office of imposing it
 " in his name, whenever your majesty pleases

“to appoint a time for the glorious ceremonies
 “which his wisdom has instituted for that purpose.”

“I have a just sense of his holiness’s favour,
 “(answered she) and shall be glad to receive
 “it in the proper manner as soon as possible,
 “as my whole soul is implicitly devoted to
 “the ceremonies of our divine religion.”

“To-morrow then (said he) will I perform the
 “sacred office of this second baptism, and give
 “you a title that shall be expressive of the regard
 “you so nobly shew at this time for the advancement
 “of the faith; for which purpose I
 “will go directly and give orders for adorning
 “the great church with all the precious and
 “costly images, and relics of the saints and
 “angels, who will look down with pleasure
 “to behold your majesty raised to a degree of
 “honour superior even to their own. You
 “will please to command all the great officers
 “of your court to attend, that nothing may
 “be wanting to make the ceremony truly
 “grand.”

While her majesty was preparing for this great affair, my curiosity prompted me to see how her royal consort disposed of his time. As soon as the council was broken up, in which he made the important figure that has been related, he hastened to his own particular apartments, where, throwing off the mockery of royalty with which he was encumbered, he sat down with some of his most intimate favourites, to drown the cares of state in wine.

The conversation was suited to the occasion. “For my part (said the sovereign, filling his rummer) I cannot conceive what pleasure
 “sure

THE REVERIE. 157

“sure those people find in politics, and wars,
 “and such like turbulent perplexing matters.
 “I never think of the former, that they do not
 “make my head ake; though the truth is, her
 “majesty, for the most part, saves me that
 “trouble. And then, for fighting! I bless
 “my stars I am no hero; nor, while I have a
 “bottle of such wine as this before me, envy
 “any of them their laurels.”

“It would be happy for the world, (said
 “one of the company, while the sovereign
 “quaffed off his bumper) if all princes
 “were of your majesty’s way of thinking.
 “The pleasures of life might then be enjoyed
 “in peace and satisfaction.”—— This turned
 the discourse naturally on those pleasures, which
 they all talked over with the greatest keenness,
 till it was time to go to the opera, where his
 majesty seldom failed to spend the evening.

His royal consort, elated at the thought of
 the mighty things which had been done for her
 that morning, and of the sacred honour she
 was to receive next day, went thither also, to
 indulge the happiness of her heart; but hap-
 pening in the course of the entertainment to
 observe that her husband looked with more than
 common earnestness at one of the female per-
 formers, she gave orders to one of her officers
 to remove her that very night out of her do-
 minions, without permitting her husband to
 see her, not bearing that any other should in-
 terfere with her in the only advantage she
 reaped from her marriage.

The ceremony of the next day exceeded all
 description. Every instance of pomp, both se-
 cular and religious, which superstition and va-
 nity

158 THE REVERIE.

nity could suggest, was displayed to make the farce complete, without any regard to the danger of offending the Deity by such an hypocritical prostitution of rites appropriated to his service, and many of them appointed by himself.

But the joy of her most pious majesty was soon damped. She had flattered herself, that the scheme for poisoning her enemy was laid so well, and committed to such trusty hands as to be safe from disappointment or detection. On this her confessor built so strongly that he resolved to promise some signal and speedy instance of success, as a divine ratification of her new title. Accordingly, in the oration with which he concluded the ceremony, he worked himself up into the appearance of prophetic enthusiasm, and ventured even to point out the death of her enemy, as if by immediate inspiration, describing his agonies in a rhetorical flourish, and attributing his fate to the hand of Heaven, as a punishment for his rebellion against his sovereign.

The effect which this had upon the multitude is not to be expressed. Prepared by their natural superstition to believe every thing their priests pleased to tell them, they looked for the instant accomplishment of this prediction with such strong faith, that, had the expected news arrived at that time, they would have received it implicitly as a miracle; and most probably have fallen down and worshipped their sovereign, in whose favour it would have appeared to have been wrought.

But, unluckily for the poor prophet, just as he had finished his declamation, an account was received that the attempt upon the king's life had

THE REVERIE. 159

had miscarried, and her most pious majesty's privity to it been detected in the plainest manner, so as to reflect an indelible disgrace upon her in the eyes of the world; and that her army, which was to have ravaged the territories of his friends, had been repulsed with great loss, and by a body of such inferior force as to look like the immediate interposition of Providence. The consequence of this may be easily conceived. The preacher was ashamed to shew his face: the glorious title was turned into ridicule; and her majesty was overwhelmed with vexation at her disappointment.

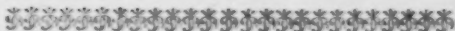
As soon as she had recovered herself a little, she summoned her council again on this important occasion. After long deliberation, it was at last concluded to give up a considerable part of the territories of some of her most faithful friends, to one of the powers confederate with her in the war, to induce it to exert all its force to oppress an enemy from whom they met such unexpected resistance; for, so strong was the hatred of her soul against him, that she would ruin herself rather than he should escape ruin. As to the charge of being concerned in the infamous and horrid scheme of poisoning him, she affected to treat it with contempt, as a groundless slander, to which she disdained to make any answer.

But the sanguine hopes she built upon this absurd expedient, which brought into her neighbourhood a rival infinitely more dangerous than the one whom she wanted to destroy, were soon overthrown. Her expresses were scarce dispatched, when she received an account of the death of her ally, upon whose assistance

assistance she depended; and from whose successor she had just reason to apprehend even worse than the disappointment of her hopes, as his avowed attachment to her enemy had engaged her in intrigues against his life also, which he had discovered, and would now most probably shew his resentment of, by turning his forces against her.

This event disconcerted all her schemes, and shewed her that the ruin of her enemy, which she had pursued with such inveteracy, and flattered herself with the thought of being so near, was now removed farther off than ever, if not absolutely out of her power to accomplish. However, the blind implacability of her soul was not to be convinced. She resolved to double all her efforts; she ordered every subject in her dominions to take arms; and lastly proposed to the professed enemies of her faith, to share with her the conquest which they should assist her to make in a war, alledged to have been undertaken on a religious motive, sacrificing every obligation, human and divine, to an impotent desire of revenge; and thus concluded a day hallowed in the annals of her reign, by the reception of her sacred title.

Such scenes were too shocking to be dwelt on. I resolved to leave that court directly; and took the opportunity of travelling with a courier whom her sacred majesty sent to one of her allies, that I might take a view of that part of his dominions in which he resided at that time, and learn something of the manners of the people with whom I was yet unacquainted.



CHAP. III.

More happy effects of greatness; with a new way of punishing disobedience, and making the most of power.

THE courier had scarce entered the territories of the prince to whom he was sent, when he was seized by a band of free-booters, who, without any regard to his character, dragged him away to their chief. It was late when he fell into their hands; and as they had prowled to a considerable distance from home, they concluded to stop at their own place of habitation till morning.

Nothing could equal the brutal behaviour of these savages, but their worse than brutal insolence, and the misery in which they lived. They threw their captive into the corner of a hovel, in which the leader of the gang dwelt, among their swine and cows; the best place in the hut, if any could be called by that title, being reserved for their horses, who fared in every respect better than their masters; and then, devouring a mess of food which any human creatures, not immediately impelled by famine, would have turned from with loathing, lay down to sleep upon an heap of straw, all mixed together, without any regard to decency or difference of sex, where they snored till next morning; when they arose as soon as it was light, and licking up what their dogs had left

left of their over-night's fare, hurried their captive away to their lord.

When they arrived at his castle they met him going to his stables, and, falling on their knees in the wet and mire with which the whole place was plentifully covered, informed him of their success. The courier, without waiting for his lordship's making them any reply, addressed him boldly, and, telling what he was, complained heavily of the outrage he had suffered, and demanded to be set immediately at liberty, to pursue his journey, as he was charged with dispatches of the utmost importance to his sovereign. The air of freedom with which he spoke offended the pride of the mighty lord; but his dignity was struck at by this last word in a manner that he did not think proper to bear, for he would not have his vassals even suspect that he paid obedience to any power upon earth. "Take hence that slave, (said he, without deigning to look at him) and throw him into the dungeon. I'll chastise him for his insolence. My sovereign! A *nobleman* owns no sovereign." Then turning to his people, who still continued kneeling, "What more have you brought me? (said he) I sent you word that I was going to attend the great convention of the states, and wanted money."

To this terrible speech the principal of the gang answered, that they had no money themselves, nor were able to get any, though they had scoured the whole country in search of it. "Villains! dogs! (exclaimed his lord, flying at the poor trembling wretch, and beating him unmercifully with his horse-whip) Tell
"me

“me not that you have no money. You must
 “find it for me, or I’ll sell yourselves, your
 “wives and children, for slaves. Be gone;
 “and either bring me money to-morrow morn-
 “ing, or every female in your families. I’ll
 “make you know that I will be obeyed.”

The wretches went away without daring to expostulate, while their potent lord strutted off, swollen with the thought of having so many of his fellow-creatures subject to his pleasure.

As soon as he entered his castle, he ordered the courier to be brought before him again, and having reprimanded him severely for behaving with such insolence to a person of his importance, dismissed him, now that his own vassals, into whom he meant to strike a terror, were departed. Every thing about him was in character. His castle, which his own people thought one of the grandest palaces in the world, was a mean, incommodious, but indifferently strong place; the furniture, some of it rich, but old, aukward, and ill-suited, and most of the lesser conveniences of life utterly wanting; and here was this petty tyrant served with a parade and ostentation, which were a severe though just ridicule upon the pomp and vanity of state.

There was something so new to me in this scene, that I resolved to pursue it farther. I therefore quitted the courier for the company of this *nobleman*, with whom I saw I should have an opportunity of travelling to the court, when he should go to the convention of the states, in equipping his horses, for which grand occasion he spent the rest of the day; for on them was all his pride displayed,

The

The next morning produced a scene that was a disgrace to the human name. His wretched vassals, in obedience to his dread commands, came with all their mothers, sisters, wives, and daughters, for he had made no exception of age or infirmity, driven before them like a herd of cattle to the market. They also brought all their worldly substance, consisting of the wretched utensils of their houses, their implements of husbandry, and their cattle, to give in the place of their women, if their lord would be graciously pleased to accept of the exchange, and let them starve together.

The cries of the females, and the distress painted in the faces of the men, for they did not dare to complain, are not to be expressed; but, neither made any impression on their lord, whose noble heart was above the vulgar weaknesses of humanity. "So! (said he sternly) then "you have dared to disobey my commands, and "not brought me the money?"

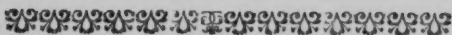
"Mighty lord! (answered an ecclesiastic, "who had ventured to come as their intercessor) they have obeyed your commands as far "as was in their power, and brought all their "women; but money it was impossible for "them to bring. The armies, which have "marched so often through the country of "late, have plundered them of every thing "which they might sell to raise money for your "use; nor do travellers venture to carry any "thing valuable with them in such dangerous "times; so that they cannot obtain any that "way neither. Have compassion therefore on "their distress, and tear not from them their "families, the only comfort which they enjoy
"in

THE REVERIE. 165

“in life. They have brought all their poor
“substance.”——

While the priest was making this pathetic address, the lord was viewing his property, and bargaining for them with some Jewish slave-merchants, whom he had summoned on the occasion, and who are always ready to purchase such unhappy creatures, to sell again to the Turks. “It is in vain for you to speak (said he, when he had concluded his bargain) “whatever I command shall be done; and “since they have neglected to provide money, “their women shall go. This will teach them “to be more diligent another time. They “mind nothing now but dallying with their “wives; but they’ll do better when they are “gone.”——Saying this, he made a signal to the Jews, who drew out the number they had bought, and, paying down their price, drove them away, without the least regard to their cries and distress at this violation of all the tenderest ties of nature.

The horror I felt at this abominable tyranny is not to be expressed; nor the gratitude with which I offered up my thanks to Heaven, for the inestimable happiness of living in a country where I was secure from such outrages against the common rights of mankind. “Too “happy Britons! (said I to myself, in the overflowing of my heart) did you but know your “own happiness! You live under the protection of laws enacted by yourselves; under the “government of a prince who exerts his power “only in acts of benevolence and virtue!”



CHAP. IV.

Account of an uncommon kind of council; with its natural conclusion.

WHEN this important affair was finished, the nobleman set out for the convention of the states, with a numerous and grand retinue. The country through which he travelled bore every-where the same appearance with his own territories; the vassals in the most abject slavery and wretchedness, and their tyrants in slovenly profusion, and aukward splendor.

The convention to which the nobles were all at this time going, was one of the most glaring instances of human absurdity. It was held in a large plain, where all these petty tyrants met on horse-back, armed, and at the head of their vassals, under the specious pretext of deliberating on the public welfare; but how likely they were to promote it is sufficiently obvious: for if the voice of reason is seldom heard with respect in the best regulated assemblies, and among the most civilized people, where every precaution which human prudence can suggest is taken, to prevent the animosity inseparable from difference of sentiment, from breaking out into acts of violence, what must be expected from a number of men like these, bred up in lawless insolence and outrage, and gathering together without a rule to direct, or power to controul them, prepared to support their own opinions by force
when

when arguments should fail, let them never be so extravagant and unjust; what, I say, must be expected from such a meeting but tumult, confusion, and slaughter?

This consequence was so well known to their sovereigns, that, although they could not abrogate a custom hallowed by its antiquity, whose sanction too often makes absurdity venerable, and which owed its rise to the most barbarous ignorance, they never would consent to so dangerous and ineffectual an expedient, except in times of public calamity, when their licentious subjects extorted such a concession from them; for the right of convening them was entirely in the sovereign, from whom the supreme power in its utmost latitude was transferred to the collective body of the nobles the moment they met, and for the time of their continuing together; which, however, was always limited to one day, to obviate their abusing their trust.

They assembled accordingly at sun-rise, and separating from their attendants, who stood around them at some little distance, waited for the arrival of their sovereign, to explain to them in form the cause of his summoning them to meet. The time of their waiting was spent in forming cabals, fomenting their mutual discontents, and stimulating each other to sedition, by aggravating every exertion of the royal authority into a breach of their privileges, and an encroachment on the liberty of the public; in behalf of which they declaimed with as much vehemence as if they were resolved to banish tyranny from the face of the earth, and restore all mankind to their original equality.

At length the sovereign appeared in a magnificence almost exceeding imagination; but his looks shewed that grandeur often gilds unhappiness. Advancing into the midst of the assembly, he opened the convention with a most affecting speech, in which he set forth the public distresses in the most lively and pathetic colours; and desired their assistance to remedy them, with as much condescension as was consistent with the dignity of his rank.

But it was far from their intention to comply with any thing he should require: they scarce gave him liberty to finish his speech, when, throwing off all respect and restraint, an hundred mouths opened upon him at once, accusing him of being the cause of all the public calamities, by the weak and pernicious measures of his government; and upbraiding him with tyranny, and a design of overturning the liberties of his subjects, which he had sworn to maintain.

The sovereign, unable to prevent, and, unwilling to hear such indignities, thought proper to retire, and leave them, to pursue their deliberations among themselves, from which he had never expected any advantage, though their clamours had obliged him to call them together. The event was what reason must easily foresee. All was tumult, riot, and confusion. Every one spoke at once; and though in the main they all intended the same thing, which was to dethrone their sovereign, that they might act their ravages with impunity, till another could be elected; their ungoverned heat and impatience defeated their design, and made them fall into the snares of some who were

THE REVERIE. 169

were his friends, who designedly raised a quarrel in which all took part; and in their madness fell to fighting, they knew not for what, nor cared with whom, without a possibility of their being calmed to conclude upon any thing. Their attendants, whom they brought to awe their sovereign, thinking it their duty to assist their lords, joined in the fray, which soon became more horrible than any pitched battle, every one murdering his neighbour without distinction of friend or foe. Night at length separated the survivors, who, without ever enquiring what had been the cause of the quarrel, returned to their respective homes, enflamed with the most virulent animosity against each other, which they wreaked with a fury that aggravated the public calamities a thousand-fold.

The consequence of this constant end of those meetings, and which only could induce the sovereign to submit to the hard expedient of permitting them, was, that it generally delivered him from a great part of his enemies, and diverting the rage of the rest from him for a time, left him at liberty to pursue his own measures, with whatever friends he had been able to attach to him; for all their power ended with the day, they having no right to meet again without a new summons, which such an event gave him just reason to refuse, could they even be reconciled among themselves to require it.

From this horrid scene I went to court, with one of those who had first began the quarrel; and having slipped out of the danger, as soon as he had set them together by the ears, hastened, as soon as all was over, to give an account

count of the event to the minister. The pleasure with which the latter received the shocking detail was painful to humanity to behold. He made it be repeated to him over and over, that he might not lose the minutest circumstance, and then went with the pleasing news to his master.

The moment he came into his presence, "I
 "congratulate your majesty (said he, with an
 "air of exultation) on the event of the con-
 "vention. It has concluded properly in a
 "general broil, in which the greatest part of
 "your enemies have met the fate they de-
 "served."

High as the triumph of the minister was, he could not communicate his joy to his master. "It is a melancholy case (answered the king,
 "with a deep-drawn sigh) that a sovereign, who
 "ought to be the father of his people, and stu-
 "dy only their happiness, should have reason
 "to hear such an horrid account with plea-
 "sure."

"I have often told your majesty, (replied
 "the minister) that this injudicious tenderness
 "was the ruin of your affairs. Had you let
 "your enemy be taken off in the manner I
 "proposed before the war broke out, you
 "would have avoided all the misfortunes
 "which you have experienced since. There
 "is no being any thing by halves. A great
 "man is above the restraints which bind the
 "prejudices of weaker people."

"Would to Heaven (returned the king)
 "that I had never aspired to that wretched cha-
 "racter. All the true happiness of life was in my
 "possession, and I was blessed with a taste to
 "enjoy

"enjoy it; but I unhappily mistook the part
"nature had designed me, and aspiring at what
"I could not be, fell from that which I
"was."

"Why will your majesty (interrupted the
"minister, with an accent of the most engag-
"ing tenderness and submissive expostulation)
"torture yourself with these vain reflections?
"Every thing you have done was with the
"best and greatest designs; and if fortune has
"hitherto frowned upon your attempts, the
"fault lies not in you; nor should you be dis-
"couraged by the disappointment. Persever-
"ance conquers the greatest difficulties; and
"one lucky event may yet put you in posses-
"sion of all your hopes. At any rate, it is
"beneath you to retreat now. It would argue a
"dejection more disgraceful than a thousand
"defeats. Resume your spirits therefore, and
"hope for the best. You have many resources
"yet, before it can be necessary for you to
"submit to the dishonour of receiving peace
"from your insulting foe; a foe whose affairs
"have been often in a much more desperate
"situation than your's, till his resolution re-
"trieved them."

"My dear baron! (answered the king,
"somewhat encouraged by this speech) I leave
"every thing to you. I know your attach-
"ment to my interest; I know your abilities,
"and confide in them. Do you what you
"think best; and may Heaven grant you suc-
"cess."



CHAP. V.

Mystery of favouritism. A remarkable instance of the art of making the most of a misfortune.

THERE was something in the absolute ascendancy which this minister evidently possessed over his sovereign, so contradictory to the natural reason, and spirited sensibility, which marked the looks of the latter, that my curiosity led me to take a view of both their characters, that I might see by what means it had been obtained.

The prince was descending fast into the vale of years. He looked dejected, and melancholy had thrown over his whole appearance a veil of listlessness and diffidence, whose gloom obscured the lustre of his virtues.

Born to the sovereignty of dominions on which nature had bestowed his blessings with a bounteous hand, the first cares of his life had been exerted to improve them by every assistance of industry and art. The success exceeded his most sanguine hopes; encouraged by his smiles genius raised its head in his court, and every finer art flourished in the sunshine of his favour.

So fair a morning promised the brightest day; but ambition soon overcast its radiance, and he forfeited those solid advantages, to grasp at this crown, more dazzling than his own to a superficial view, but far less rich in every real good,

THE REVERIE. 173

good, without being warned by the fate of his father, who had ship-wrecked his happiness on the same rock.

Adorned with every virtue that dignifies humanity, he seemed designed by Heaven to make his people happy; but the excess even of these virtues produced the contrary effect. He had contracted an intimacy in his earliest youth, when the tender mind receives the strongest impressions, with his present minister, who was placed in an honourable employment about his person by the king his father.

The superiority which a few years advance gives in the beginning of life, generally imprints a respect difficult to be got over ever after. This person was blessed with every qualification which nature could bestow, to improve the advantages of his situation; nor wanted address and care to exert them in their utmost force. He soon attached the infant fondness of his young master by every pleasing art, and, as his reason began, to expand itself, attracted the respect of that also, by displaying his own superiority in the most striking though delicate light.

The talents and disposition of the prince were such as, in the general sense of the world, denominated him rather *good* than *great*; whereas those of his favourite, on the contrary, were all of the other kind, and calculated to make a noise and figure in the highest scenes of life.

In a good mind friendship often arises from the same cause which would have produced envy in one of a different cast. The prince admired the qualities which he was conscious he wanted himself; and as they were never ostentatiously

tationously shewn in opposition to him, soon conceived the strongest esteem for their owner, and resolved to reap the benefit of them, by attaching him to his interest. The other, who soon saw the success of his hopes, omitted nothing that could possibly improve the influence he had acquired. He studied every turn of his temper, and read his inclinations as soon as they arose; so that he was able to anticipate his very wishes.

But the principal thing that established his ascendancy beyond a possibility of being supplanted, was the personal attachment, which he shewed upon every occasion for his master, whose pleasure appeared to be the only object of his attention and regard; and to which he was ready to sacrifice the strongest ties of nature. Of this he had had the good fortune to give an early instance of such a nature, as made reason and passion equally join to confirm his empire over the prince's heart.

He had fallen in love with a most beautiful and accomplished young lady, heiress to one of the richest nobles of the kingdom, and was so happy as to have his passion not only returned by her, but also approved of by her father.

In the overflowing of his heart, on this joyful occasion, he described his intended bride in such rapturous terms to the prince, that he raised his curiosity to see her, when her charms made such an impression upon his heart, naturally susceptible of every warm sensation, that he could not refrain from gazing at her with an earnestness too plain to be misunderstood, though respect restrained them from seeming to take notice of it. Inattentive to the consequence

quence of such an indulgence, the prince repeated his visits so frequently, that the lovers took the alarm, and she feigned sickness, to waive an honour which began to give them pain.

The manner in which he informed the prince of her illness opened his eyes to the nature of it. He took the hint in a proper light; and, as he had never had any particular design in visiting her, found no difficulty in resolving to go no more. But it was easier to form than keep such a resolution. Her beauty had taken too strong possession of his heart to be so easily expelled, and he was actually in love, without having suspected any such thing.

As respect had made the favourite conceal his fears, so delicacy kept the prince in silence also. He resolved to subdue his passion, however difficult the attempt; nor would seem to understand a suspicion that implied a doubt of his generosity. But his behaviour soon betrayed the conflict in his breast. He grew melancholy, sought retirement, and particularly avoided the company of his favourite, whose happiness, though he would not obstruct, he could not think of, without pain.

The other immediately perceived the criticalness of his situation, and was in the highest distress how to act between love and ambition; for he too plainly saw that one must be sacrificed, to secure the other. While he was in this suspense, an unexpected event decided the difficulty.

The king, whose age had not cooled his passion, happened one day to speak warmly in praise of the young lady's beauty; her lover,

who was present, was sufficiently acquainted with his temper, to see the consequence of this. He knew that he had been all his life a professed votary of love, and had never stopped at any thing, however unjustifiable, to gratify his desires. Convinced, therefore, that he must inevitably lose his mistress, his ready genius suggested it to him to dispose of her in such a manner as should turn the loss to his advantage. He instantly wanted upon the prince, and throwing himself at his feet, with an air of the most passionate and respectful tenderness, "What (said he) is the cause of this gloom which hangs upon my prince's brow? What uneasiness preys upon his heart, which he conceals from his faithful and devoted servant? Say, I conjure you, is there any remedy in my power to procure? If my life, if any thing dearer than my life can give you but a moment's pleasure, speak, and you shall see that I hold nothing in competition with it."

The prince was so struck with this unexpected address, that he had no power to make any answer; but his silence sufficiently expressed what the other wanted. "It is so, (continued he, embracing his knees in a well-feigned rapture) my anxious heart divined aright; the charms of *Louisa* have attracted your regard. Take her; and may you both be happy. I resign her to a worthier lover. Let what will be my fate, my happiness shall never interfere with yours."

It is impossible to express what the prince felt at such an exalted instance of regard. He raised him from the ground, and embracing him tenderly, "No, my dear baren! (said he,

THE REVERIE. 177

“as soon as he could speak) I cannot, will
 “not put your attachment to such a severe
 “trial. The very offer you have made is a
 “pain to me to hear; and I were the most un-
 “generous of men, should I take advantage of
 “it.”

These words, but a few hours before, would have made the baron happy; but circumstances were altered now, and he was resolved to complete the obligation, by appearing to bestow what he could not keep. He therefore repeated his offer so strongly, that he at length subdued all the prince's scruples, and brought him to a compliance which his heart panted for.



C H A P. VI.

Continued. A mirror for the female mind. Fear and resentment triumphant over love and virtue.

BUT this was much the easiest part of his undertaking. The prince's inclinations assisted his arguments, but his mistress's were on the opposite side. She really loved him, and had beside so high a sense of honour and virtue, that it seemed in vain to attempt persuading her to take a step so contrary to her principles, and so destructive to her passion. But he was not to be discouraged by difficulties. He had conquered his own love, and his opinion of female constancy was not so high as to make him despair of the same success with her; though he judged that some address might

be necessary to save appearances. He went to her, therefore, directly, when he left the prince, and putting on an air of the deepest distress, on her inquiring tenderly what ailed him, burst into a flood of tears, and turned from her; the regret which he really felt at the thought of losing her assisting his design.

Struck with such strange behaviour, she eagerly asked him what could be the matter? when, looking wishfully in her face for some moments, "O Louisa! (said he) must I lose you? Why have I not power to support my right against the lawless invasions of tyranny?"

"Good Heaven! (exclaimed she, terrified and amazed) What can you mean? What tyrant invades your right? Or, who should take me from you?"

"And have you not heard of it then? (said he) Has not the mandate yet arrived, that is to tear you for ever from my arms? Give orders to be denied to every one, even to the king. Let them say you are sick, confined to your bed; or any thing, to prevent your being seen. I must leave you now; but I will return, privately, in half an hour, when it will be dark, and unfold the whole of our misfortunes to you."—Saying this, he left her abruptly, with all the appearance of distraction and despair.

The astonishment and terror with which this struck the lady, may be easily conceived. She instantly gave the orders he desired, and withdrew to her chamber, where she waited for his return, with the most anxious impatience. At length he came; and, being admitted with every alarming circumstance of cau-
tion

tion and fear, after some most passionate exclamations at the severity of his fate, he acquainted her of the king's having unhappily taken a liking to her; the consequence of which was, that he would certainly enjoy her either by persuasion or force.

The character of the king made such a story too probable, especially as a woman wants but little proof of the power of her beauty. She seemed astonished at the news, and expressed the strongest concern; but vanity glistened through her grief, and the many and particular questions which she asked betrayed a levity at least, which lessened her in her lover's eyes.

As soon as she had recovered herself, however, from the first emotions of her surprize, she asked if there was no way of escaping such a misfortune? and even proposed an immediate marriage, to prevent it; but he replied, that such a rash expedient would only provoke the king's resentment to his ruin, without being any protection to her, as he had shewed on many occasions, that he made light even of that sacred tie, when it interfered with his pleasures.

When he had let her dwell upon her fears for some time, which he still heightened by new circumstances of danger, from the capricious and cruel temper of the king, whose fatal effects, the objects he was one moment fondest of often felt the next, the least violent of which was to be immured for life in a convent, he at length answered to her repeated intreaties of devising some way for her to escape such a misfortune, that he knew but

of one which would prevent the king's designs; but at the same time would be equally destructive to his own hopes.

"O name it!" (said she eagerly, terrified to death at the thought of a convent) Name any thing that will save me from him; and Heaven will inspire us with some means for acquiring every thing else afterwards."

"The prince (answered he with a sigh) the prince alone can save you from him."

"Why do you hesitate then to apply to him?" (interrupted she eagerly) his friendship, his goodness will do any thing."

"Say rather his love; (replied he) for that alone can do it."

—"His love! I understand you not."

—"Nothing but the love of the son can save you from that of the father. You must instantly resolve, therefore, which you will accept of. The king wastes no time in courtship. He will apply directly to your father, and tempt his ambition with some gilded bait; or, if that should not prevail, what subject can resist a monarch's power? The ministers of his pleasures may be this moment at the gate."

—"Direct me Heaven! Is there no other way, no other method of avoiding this dreadful alternative? Beside, the prince—he has never declared. What shall I, can I do? No! I will die first. Let us this instant fly this hated place. It were better to live in a desert, than under subjection to such tyranny."

—"O my Louisa! it were happiness to live any where with you; but, alas! whither could"

“ could we fly to escape his power? We should
 “ only heap tenfold ruin on our heads by such
 “ an attempt. No! since I cannot be blessed
 “ with you myself, let me consult your happiness.
 “ The prince loves you, passionately
 “ loves you. His eyes, his whole behaviour
 “ has long since declared it. He is generous,
 “ tender, and constant; and with him I shall
 “ at least have the consolation of seeing you
 “ happy: consider the difference between being
 “ dragged away by violence to the loathsome
 “ bed of an old imperious tyrant, . . . Fre-
 “ lease to be expected from which is to be
 “ locked up for ever in a convent; and yield-
 “ ing to a young and amiable prince, whose
 “ heart doats on you.” — Then seeing that
 her resolution began to waver, “ I will go
 “ (continued he) this instant, and resign my
 “ pretensions to him: and make him believe
 “ that I sacrifice to his favour what is the ef-
 “ fect of irresistible necessity; for he knows
 “ not of his father’s intentions. Do you, O
 “ Louisa! imitate my example, and, appearing
 “ ignorant of our misfortune, yield as if from
 “ inclination. It will enhance the favour,
 “ and establish his love on the solid basis of
 “ esteem. I’ll go this instant and send him
 “ to you. A moment’s pause for thought
 “ would lead me into madness and despair.
 “ Take care to be denied by every-one but
 “ him.”

The situation in which he left her is hard
 to be described. Her love for the baron, her
 principles of honour and virtue, all resisted the
 complying with the prince; but, on the oppo-
 site hand, there was no other way of escaping
 from

from his father ; and the baron's making the proposal raised a resentment that almost balanced her passion for him ; for she would have had him meet ruin rather than think of parting with her.

In this distress, she formed a thousand different resolutions ; but was still unresolved till the arrival of the prince decided the conflict ; when the reluctance with which she yielded confirmed him in the opinion of her love for the baron, and consequently of the greatness of the sacrifice he had made to him, to prevent the lessening the merit of which, by a discovery of the motive, the latter took care to make the prince's amour immediately public ; which prevented the king's taking any farther notice of her.

This affair, which in the beginning threatened to ruin the baron in the prince's favour, by this prudent management secured it to him for ever. He thought it impossible that a man, who had made such a sacrifice to him, should not be as faithful to his interest in every instance ; and the king, his father, soon after dying, he resigned the reins of government absolutely into his hands.



CHAP. VII.

Mystery of favouritism concluded. The necessary effect of ridicule. Ministerial use of unlimited power; with the natural consequence of ill-placed confidence.

THE first use which the new minister made of his power was, to traverse the measures, and remove all the ministers of the late king. To reconcile his master to a step so contrary to the natural mildness and benevolence of his temper, he had long taken every occasion to decry the understanding of the late king, and turn all his ways into ridicule. Every man has peculiarities which will not bear to be shewn separately, and in an unfavourable light. Not considering that he was guilty of many, equally inconsistent, and reprehensible, the young king had insensibly accustomed himself to find fault with, and deride the oddities and foibles of his father, which his favourite was never weary of displaying in the most ludicrous light.

The sting of ridicule is always poisoned. Though the wound it marks is at first so slight as even to be over-looked, the deadly venom soon spreads through the whole body, and infects the most distant parts. From laughing at the late king's foibles, the transition was easy to hold his most serious measures in contempt. He that was a fool in one thing, could not be wise in any; nor were the servants, who
could

could prostitute themselves so far as to minister to his folly, worthy of trust from a wiser master.

The court immediately assumed a new appearance. Every office of honour and profit was filled with the minister's creatures; while the king, who saw only with his favourite's eye, looked so coldly on all who dissuaded to enter themselves into that ignominious list, that they forebore coming into his presence, where they were sure of being insulted by those whom but a little before they would have scorned even to speak to; and left him invironed with a mercenary band, joined by their common interest in a confederacy, to keep honour, truth, and justice at a distance from the throne.

In the mean time, the minister was not at a loss how to maintain the influence he had acquired. He flattered the king's taste for pleasure and magnificence, and diverted his attention from every thing that looked like business; embarrassing with innumerable difficulties every motion which he did not immediately suggest himself; while he contrived so, as that all his own schemes met the readiest success.

The importance which this management gave him, with a prince naturally indolent and voluptuous, is obvious. Sure to be gratified in every thing he liked, he thought himself happy in having one upon whom he could so entirely depend, to ease him of the cares and fatigues of government. Not that his minister presumed to obtrude his opinions directly, or seem to dictate to his master; on the contrary, he insinuated his sentiments with such delicacy and address, that the king mistook them for his

own, and imagined he governed the man who directed his very thoughts.

But this happiness was far from being solid. The affections of the nobles, who were the real ornaments and support of the throne, were alienated from their sovereign, by a partiality equally injudicious and dangerous; and the people, who saw the tax which they paid, and which were no less than they were able to bear, hating in their sovereign and his greedy followers, a greed with discontent and indignation, which threatened to burst in a storm that should shake the throne; while the minister, as if he was impatient for his fate, lived in a magnificence that exceeded even that of his sovereign, and was an insult to their misery.

Nor did he stop here. Scorning to have the effects of his power confined within his master's dominions, he madly involved himself in the intrigues of the neighbouring princes, and entered unprepared into a war in which he had no concern. The consequence was what reason might have foreseen. His sovereign was driven from his capital, his country was laid waste, his cities plundered; his palaces, on which he had expended so much care and cost, spoiled of all their magnificence and riches, and his subjects compelled to serve in the armies of his enemies; and, to compleat his misfortunes, his reception from those to whom he fled for refuge, cold and insolent to such a degree as gave him too just reason to apprehend their proceeding to actual rebellion, and tearing the crown from his head. Yet amid all this ruin, though evidently the consequence of his

his favourite's counsels, the latter still preserved his ascendancy by the same flattery which first acquired it, and made him persist in his wild schemes, chusing that he should plunge into the gulph to the brink of which he had brought him, rather than enter into measures of accommodation, in the course of which his eyes might be opened, and his indignation raised to deliver himself from such a state of slavery, and take the reins of government out of such unworthy hands.

“Unhappy is the people (said I to myself, shocked at so gross an insatiation) whose king is governed by a favourite! Unhappy is the king who lets another stand between him and his people; who sees not with his own eyes, nor is able to redress their grievances, and reward their merits from his own experience; but, besieged by a set of sycophants whose aim is to deceive him, is kept in a state of darkness and delusion, till he is awoke from his dream of happiness by the stroke of ruin.”

I was diverted from these reflections by the entrance of the minister to his sovereign. “I congratulate your majesty (said he, with an air of exultation) on the most fortunate event that could have happened. The king of *Spain* has at length declared for our allies. The wealth and power of that mighty kingdom will overwhelm those haughty Islands, and oblige them to withhold the assistance which has hitherto supported the enemy; so that you are now delivered from the disgraceful necessity of accepting terms from him.”

“ Is it possible (answered the king) that he
 “ can have been prevailed upon to break a
 “ neutrality which has been so advantageous
 “ to him? Who has been able to make him
 “ take such a step? Or what motives can have
 “ urged him to intrude himself, as I may say,
 “ into a war in which he may lose much, and
 “ can gain nothing?”

“ The motives, replied the minister, which
 “ should influence every sovereign. A gene-
 “ ral indignation to see the different branches
 “ of his own family oppressed; and a prudent
 “ care to stop the progress of their enemies in
 “ time, before their power should become so
 “ great as to be dangerous to all their neigh-
 “ bours. All will go now as we wish. Your
 “ majesty’s enemies will be humbled in the
 “ dust; and you will return to your capital in
 “ triumph, strengthened by your victorious al-
 “ lies, to subdue this rebellious kingdom also,
 “ and make it hereditary in your family. Will
 “ your majesty honour me with your presence
 “ this evening, at an entertainment which I
 “ design on this happy occasion. I have some-
 “ thing to shew you that will give you plea-
 “ sure. The painter and statuary whom I sent
 “ to Italy are returned, and have brought some
 “ of the most curious and valuable remains of
 “ antiquity in their several arts. There is one
 “ in particular most remarkably fine. It is a
 “ statue of *good fortune*, dedicated by *Marius* on
 “ his last triumphant return to Rome, from
 “ whence he had been driven by his enemies.
 “ I was just looking at it when this account
 “ from Spain arrived, and own that I was af-
 “ fected with so striking a circumstance.”

“ I wish it may prove an happy omen ; (answered the king, somewhat elated at the news, and still more pleased with the account of the arrival of the painter and statuary) but we must hope the best. What is it o’clock ? I’ll go directly. I have a mind to see your new acquisition, and ask those people some questions about *Herculaneum*.”

Such an infatuation was too gross. I could bear it no longer ; but turned away, sick at heart, from the mortifying sight.



CHAP. VIII.

The scene changed. A national character. Another great man. Curious account of an inn, with an entertainment of political puffs.

THE motives which the minister had alleged for the king of Spain’s entering into the war, wore such an appearance of plausibility, that I resolved to visit his court, that I might see if all his measures were conducted with equal prudence and spirit.

I had seen enough of the country in which I was, to satisfy my curiosity ; nor did I desire to travel again, through the scenes of military glory, exhibited by those around it. I therefore wished myself directly into Spain, but at more distance from the court, that I might have an opportunity of observing the manners of the people, which, I apprehended, seldom appear in their genuine colours there.

The

The first thing that struck me, on my arrival, was the poverty in which the middle and lower ranks of the people lived. The real wants of nature are very few; but the conveniences which human ingenuity has discovered to make life more agreeable, (I speak not of the vitiated cravings of luxury) and which custom has made almost indispensable, comprehend a wider circle. Of these they were in a manner as utterly destitute, as if they were incapable of the arts which could procure them.

The compassion, which such a state of wretchedness must naturally raise, was soon turned into contempt, when it appeared to proceed wholly from themselves. The face of the country shewed that nature had most amply done her part to make the inhabitants happy; but every assistance of their own was wanting: and after a long and profound peace, the defects of idleness equalled the ravages of war in other countries. The lands were uncultivated, the cities in ruins, and the people wretched. Yet, amid all this, a pride peculiar to themselves appeared in every word and action, that made their misery ridiculous; but then at the same time it also enabled them to bear it, by diverting their attention from their distresses to their imaginary importance. They looked upon themselves as superior to the rest of mankind; and in consequence of this opinion submitted without repining to the severest wants, rather than debase their dignity by the exercise of any industry or art.

While

While I was making these remarks, I happened to take notice of two men, from whose conversation I learned that they were going to court. They were Frenchmen, and by their equipage and dress appeared to be persons of distinction; but I directly saw through their disguise, that they were ecclesiastics of the order of the Jesuits, who concealed their character for a special purpose. My opinion of those religious made me attach myself to them without hesitation, as the best guides I could possibly have.

When I joined them, they were entering the yard of an inn to which they had been directed as the best in the town. At the door of it sat a man who appeared to be in the vigour of life, healthy, strong, and formed for any kind of exercise or labour. Though the day was uncommonly hot, he was wrapped close in his cloak, with one leg thrown carelessly over the other knee, and his elbow rested on a heap of stones, which seemed to have been piled up as a buttress, to support the wall of the house, while he lolled back, lost in the contemplation of his own consequence.

As the travellers advanced to the door, one of their servants called aloud. The Don, without deigning to move a limb, or discompose the gravity of a single feature, having eyed him for some time, vouchsafed to ask him what he wanted. "We want (answered the elder of the two gentlemen) some body to take our horses, and shew us into the house."

"Yonder is the stable (replied the Spaniard, pointing to an hovel half of which was tum-
bled

THE REVERIE. 191

“bled down and the rest ready to follow,) you may put your horses there, and by that time the people of the house may be at leisure to come to you.”

“At leisure! (returned the gentleman impatiently) is not this an inn?” Then calling again, an old woman half naked came out, and going to take his horse; “What, woman, (continued he, vexed at being kept broiling so long in the heat) is there no other servant beside you? Where is the master of the house?”

“Here I am (answered the Don, rising deliberately and adjusting his whiskers) what is your business with me? I suppose you do not expect that I should wait upon you?”

“By no means, sir, (said the other, who did not desire any altercation with such an adversary;) I only want to have some of your servants called.”

“It is very well; (answered the Host) the woman will put your horses in the stable; and you may follow me into the house.”

The travellers, who directly saw into their host's character, thought proper to accept his polite invitation; and attended him into a room, the furniture of which consisted of two or three broken stools and an old table; but the very wretchedness of it proved at this time a convenience; the cracks in the walls drawing an air on every side, that was the best refreshment they seemed likely to find in such a place.

When they were seated, the gentlemen turned to their host, who had not waited for an invitation to sit down with them, and asked him what they could have for dinner. “Sir,

“ (answered the other) the house is plentifully
 “ provided with every thing, as my wife will
 “ inform you when she comes; I mind not
 “ these matters.” Then stroking down his
 whiskers, with great solemnity; “ Pray, gen-
 “ tlemen (continued he) what news is there? I
 “ hear the wrath of the king is kindled against
 “ the English; and that he is determined to
 “ extirpate their whole nation: It is a glori-
 “ ous resolution, and worthy of his power and
 “ magnanimity. I only wonder, why he has
 “ suffered them upon the earth so long.”

As he said this, the mistress of the house
 entered; and after the customary cant of being
 exhausted by an extraordinary run of company
 of late, confessed that all her house afforded
 was some bacon and eggs. “ For, (said she)
 “ this unlucky war has ruined us all. We
 “ used to have fish fit to entertain an Abbot,
 “ and flour that made bread white enough for
 “ the king’s table; but now we have nothing
 “ at all. They pretend indeed to comfort us,
 “ with leave from the pope to eat flesh; but
 “ they do not tell us where we shall get
 “ it. I wish those who advised his majesty
 “ to this war, may be the first who perish in
 “ it.”

“ Silence, woman, and mind your own af-
 “ fairs! (interrupted the husband, with a tone
 “ of authority) how should you know any
 “ thing of peace or war? Leave those mat-
 “ ters to us, who understand them.”

His wife obeyed the sovereign mandate with-
 out reply, and retired; when he, swelling with
 double importance from such a triumph,
 “ When we have subdued these English (con-
 tinued

"tinned he, addressing himself to his guests) "we
 "shall be better supplied with those things,
 "and many others than ever. They will be
 "obliged to bring them to us as tribute, not
 "for sale; and to perform for us all the servile
 "offices of trade, which it would be a disho-
 "nour to a Spaniard to defile his hands with.
 "Our slaves in America work better than
 "when they had their liberty. Beside, they
 "are heretics; and it is a sin, as well as a dis-
 "grace, to be at peace with such. Our cu-
 "rate preached us an excellent sermon to this
 "effect, last Sunday; when, among other
 "things, he told us, that all the catholic
 "powers had at length agreed to join and root
 "them out. It is a glorious and a pious
 "undertaking. Since the holy wars there has
 "been nothing like it."

As their sumptuous fare required not much
 time for preparation, the entrance of it inter-
 rupted this magnanimous politician here, at
 which he seemed not better pleased than the
 travellers were with their entertainment.

While they were refreshing themselves as
 well as they could, I took the opportunity of
 going to see the town, the inhabitants of which
 I found most exactly characterized by the inn-
 keeper and his wife; all those who applied to
 any kind of industry repining, like her, at the
 war; and the drones of society, who starve in
 idleness, vapouring with him of conquest and
 glory.



CHAP. IX.

*Wheels within wheels. Certain great transactions
deceit from unsuspected angles; with the ad-
vantage of having two strings to a bow.*

AS soon as the heat of the day was abated, the travellers continued their journey, when the elder addressing himself to his companion, "You seemed surprised (said he) at the odd composition of our host; but a little acquaintance with these people will make it familiar to you. Pride and poverty are the characteristics of this nation, not only in his low sphere, but also in the very policy and government of it, in which they maintain a struggle that makes them justly held in contempt by the rest of the world."

"If that is the case, (answered the other) I am the less surprised at their entering thus madly into a war, for which they appear to be so ill-provided; though, I own, the caution with which they avoided it so long gave me a better opinion of them; and I should be glad to know what motives induced them to alter a conduct which they seemed to understand the advantages of so well."

"The measures by which most of the nations in the world are governed (replied the former) are so inconsistent not only with reason and justice, but even with themselves, each day producing a new system contradictory to the last, that you must not expect a
"satis-

“satisfactory account of them. As an instance
 “of this, the motives of the Spaniards for en-
 “tering into this war are hidden, even from
 “the persons who think they are the authors
 “of it; and who, unknown to themselves,
 “are serving a cause which they had rather
 “ruin.

“It may be necessary to explain this to you.
 “The jealousy which the power of our order
 “has for some time raised in the very courts
 “whose favour principally exalted it to that
 “power, has at length burst upon us in a
 “storm, not to be resisted in Portugal, and
 “threatened not much less in France. To
 “avert this misfortune required the utmost ad-
 “dress. Our influence in Spain, though ra-
 “ther in decline, is still considerable. This
 “we obliquely proposed to the French mini-
 “stry, to exert in their behalf, to bring the
 “Spaniards to assist them in a war under which
 “they were ready to sink, on condition of their
 “protecting us from any further disturbance in
 “France; which they accordingly have pro-
 “mised.

“The lure, which we held up to the Spa-
 “niards, to draw them into a measure so con-
 “trary to their interest, was the crown of Por-
 “tugal. We know, by experience, that it
 “was not possible to make the court of Lisbon
 “break with the English. We therefore first
 “inflamed the ambition of the Spanish mini-
 “stry, by blazoning their king's claim to the
 “Portuguese throne in the strongest colours;
 “and persuading them that this was the pro-
 “per opportunity for asserting it, when the
 “hearts of the people were alienated from their

“ sovereign by the disasters of his reign, and
“ the English so taken up with the wars in
“ which they were already engaged, that they
“ could afford him no protection, though he
“ was so bigotted to their alliance, that he
“ would certainly give a colourable pretence
“ for attacking him, by refusing to enter into
“ the confederacy against them. Our scheme
“ was successful. The Spaniards, without
“ considering farther, broke with the English,
“ and we obtained the protection, for a time
“ at least, which we desired in France.

“ But this was not our only motive for urg-
“ ing this court to take these measures. The
“ wound we have received from Portugal is
“ not to be forgiven, nor to be healed but by
“ the ruin of that monarchy. If the Spaniards
“ should be able to establish the claim which
“ we have spirited them up to assert, our re-
“ venge will be amply gratified; though could
“ we even foresee the contrary, that would make
“ no alteration in our measures. The war it-
“ self, be the event what it will, must in some
“ degree wreak our vengeance, and be of far-
“ ther service to us, by diverting to other ob-
“ jects an attention that boded unfavourably
“ to our hopes.

“ Weighty as these reasons were, we had
“ others still of greater importance, which we
“ pursued with a policy so deep as to defy de-
“ tection. You know that the great object of
“ our attention has long been to establish an
“ independency in some part of the world.
“ A thorough knowledge of the present cir-
“ cumstances of Europe convinced us, that we
“ must not think of such a thing there. We
“ there-

" therefore naturally turned our eyes to America, where the weakness of the possessing powers was a temptation as strong as the riches and fertility of their possessions. By both these the dominions of Portugal were from the beginning marked out for our attempt; to give success to which we have for near half a century, been labouring to make that crown break with England. In that case, we should have immediately joined with the latter, and, by giving them a share of the spoil, gained the assistance of their naval force, to execute our designs. But the Portuguese were too wary, and for once understood their own interests too well to go so far, though we absolutely led them, in many instances, to act in such a manner to the English, as would have drawn the resentment of a people less prudent upon them.

" Being disappointed in this our first scheme, all that remained for us to do was, to make the like attempt upon the Spaniards, against whom we intended to turn the same weapons at a proper time; and doubt not but, by the help of the English, we shall be able to accomplish our design of erecting an empire in some part of their American dominions, while they are pursuing the chimerical claim we have set them upon here, and wreaking our revenge upon Portugal. As to the equity of these measures, that never comes into question till after the event. If they are successful, no one will deny it; if not, they will be condemned, though dictated by the voice of Heaven. Thus you see

K 3

" that

“that, at any rate, the war must answer some
 “of our purposes, at the same time that we
 “do not appear to be in the least concerned
 “in it.”

“I am much obliged to you for this account, (said the younger) which sufficiently
 “explains the motives of your engaging so
 “warmly in matters apparently so little interesting to you. I should be glad also to know
 “by what arguments you can have persuaded
 “the court of Spain into measures evidently
 “contrary to their interest. The voice of the
 “people, who seldom judge wrong, is loud
 “against the war.”

“Gold, my friend! (answered the other)
 “Gold, the great persuasive of the world, was
 “the argument we made use of. This was
 “the weight which set the main spring of the
 “machine in motion. The specious pretexts
 “indeed that covered it were prudence and honour, which a proper application to their
 “natural vanity made the crowd receive without examination; not to omit religious prejudice, that absolute tyrant of weak minds.

“We persuaded them, that it was a derogation from their honour to see a prince, so
 “nearly allied to their mighty monarch as the
 “king of France, distressed in such a manner;
 “that his conquerors, if not stopped in time,
 “would fall upon them next; and that it was
 “serving the cause of God, to attack heretics.
 “By these various arguments we have gained
 “our great point of making them break with
 “the English; but our trouble ended not there.
 “It will require equal address, and infinitely
 “more pains, to keep up their spirits, and prevent
 “vent

“vent their quitting it as poorly, as they undertook it rashly. This is the occasion of my coming here at this time; and as the bright abilities you are known to possess, and the strong attachment you have to our cause, have made the whole order expect the greatest things from you, I chose you for my companion and associate, and have given you this general view of the present state of affairs here, to direct your own observations in the course of our most delicate and disconcerting negotiations, and enable you to act in case any thing should happen to me.”

This account, which I have here thrown together, was the substance of several different conversations, during their journey to Madrid.



CHAP. X.

More great matters. Home truths. A character out of nature; with a new definition of the laws of war; and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience.

THE morning after they arrived, the elder went to wait upon the first minister. The silence and solemnity which reigned through the whole court struck me with respect. “Certainly, (thought I) the Jesuit must have misrepresented these people. Instead of the hurry, noise, and giddy bustle, so offensive in other courts, every thing here bears that

“ appearance of seriousness, which is the shadow of wisdom.”

The first sight of the minister confirmed me in this opinion. He was dressed in black cloaths, whose hue added a gloom of additional gravity to his whole appearance. By his looks and motions, his soul seemed to be wrapped in the most intense thought. His eyes were fixed; his features all strained to the strongest attention, and his steps slow and stately.

When the ceremonials of address were performed with proper punctuality, and the attendants dismissed, the Jesuit entered directly upon business. “ I am come (said he) according to your excellency’s desire, to settle every thing that may have been omitted, and conclude the treaty; for which purpose I have brought the proper powers from his majesty my master; who has also honoured me with the pleasing office of delivering to you some particular tokens of his esteem.”

“ I am obliged to his majesty; (answered the Don, with an air of more than ministerial importance) he does me justice in believing that my inclinations are to serve him; tho’ what I have undertaken is really most difficult, if not dangerous. We have declared war as you desired; but how we are to carry it on is hard to say. Our magazines are empty, our troops not half compleat, and even these undisciplined and badly provided; and our marine, far from being in a condition to cope with that of the enemy; so that really I am almost afraid to look forward to the consequences.”

“ Your

“ Your excellency will pardon me for saying
 “ (replied the Jesuit) that your apprehensions
 “ are too ready; you have money, and that
 “ will soon procure every necessary of war.
 “ The wealth of our enemies alone overpowers
 “ us; but with the addition of yours we shall
 “ be as much too powerful for them. You
 “ will have the honour of serving us in so cri-
 “ tical a conjuncture; nor is there any danger
 “ in the attempt. They are tired of the war,
 “ and want a pretence for making peace, as
 “ much as we want a peace itself. The in-
 “ constancy of their temper, never long plea-
 “ sed with any thing, is surfeited with suc-
 “ cesses. To take the advantage of this humour,
 “ our emissaries have set their ministers toge-
 “ ther by the ears in such a manner, that they
 “ think of nothing but supplanting each other;
 “ to effect which they would willingly sacrifice
 “ every interest of their country.

“ Of this I can give you an instance, that
 “ will remove every doubt. Their king having
 “ lately thought proper to change his ministry,
 “ those who were turned out, from a spirit of
 “ resentment, move heaven and hell to blacken
 “ the characters and decry the abilities of their
 “ successors; and, as disgrace with the prince
 “ is the sure means of favour with the people,
 “ exert their popularity with the utmost licen-
 “ tious boldness to make them distrustful, and
 “ defeat their measures, chusing to undo all
 “ their own work, and lose every advantage
 “ gained by the war, rather than their rivals
 “ should have the honour of bringing it to an
 “ happy conclusion; while the latter, with
 “ equal judgment, think it necessary for them

" to retort the abuse, and act directly contrary
 " to the system of the others, as it were in
 " justification of their removal; as if a king
 " were the only master who had not a right to
 " change his servants when he pleased; and
 " thus, while this altercation goes on, the
 " business of the nation stands still.

" Advantageous as this is to us, it is not the
 " only good effect we promise ourselves from
 " these disputes. The old ministers, who pur-
 " sued the war so obstinately while they had
 " the management of it themselves, will, by
 " this indiscriminate opposition to all the mea-
 " sures of the new, force them into a peace on
 " any terms, to preserve their power; for how-
 " ever finely it may sound in speculation, a
 " minister who will sacrifice his own ambition
 " to the interest of his country, and resign his
 " power to his rival rather than have the bu-
 " siness suffer by a competition for it, is a cha-
 " racter if not absolutely out of nature, yet so
 " rarely to be found, that there is no necessity
 " to guard against it; so that both parties
 " equally serve our interest, by their animosity
 " against each other.

" From this plain state of the matter, you
 " may see that you run no hazard in joining
 " with us, as a peace must necessarily and
 " speedily be the consequence of the measures
 " we have taken; and whatever expence you
 " may be at, will be amply paid by the con-
 " quest of Portugal, which you will never
 " have such another opportunity of annexing
 " to the crown of Spain, if you miss this:
 " besides that so close a connection between
 " your court and ours, will henceforward

" en-

“enable them to give law to the rest of Europe, and yours in particular, at a proper opportunity to recover the many parts of your dominions which have been torn from them, in the former division of our interests.”

“According to your reasoning then (said the Spaniard) there is no necessity for our making any extraordinary efforts but in Portugal, which I am very glad of, as we were never so unprepared.”

“No! (answered the Jesuit) nothing extraordinary; or that can be attended with inconvenience is necessary. But still, something must be done, if only to save appearances. Your laying siege to Gibraltar——”

“Gibraltar! (interrupted the minister) that is impossible! absolutely impossible! We are as well able to besiege the whole island of Britain, as Gibraltar. We have no provisions made which could give the least hope of success to such an attempt.”

“Your excellency is too precipitate; (answered the Jesuit.) Success! If by success you mean taking it, I never thought of any such thing. No! All we propose is to raise a ferment in England, and give their ministry an excuse for making a peace. We are sufficiently sensible that it cannot be taken.”

“But if we should make this point, (replied the minister) do you really think the English will ever suffer us to conquer Portugal? They are bound, by interest as well as honour, to defend it.”

“I grant they are, (returned the Jesuit) but that signifies nothing. Set but their mini-

“stry to wrangling among themselves, and
 “you may bring them into any thing.
 “Their desertion of the Catalans, on a simi-
 “lar occasion, is an instance of what the
 “Portuguese may expect by depending on
 “them.”

“Why, indeed, that is an encouragement,
 “(said the other) and therefore we will do all
 “we can to be ready to take the advantage of
 “it.”

“I am glad to find that affairs go on so well
 “in Portugal, (said the jesuit) the people, as
 “I travelled through the kingdom, are full of
 “spirits at the good news; and every one eager
 “to have a share in the conquest.”

“Yes! (answered the minister) if they could
 “get it by vapouring at home. As to the
 “good news, it is necessary to propagate such,
 “to amuse the populace; but, in reality, our
 “troops advance but very slowly, and meet
 “difficulties every day, which we did not fore-
 “see. If the assistance promised us by your
 “court does not arrive before the English join
 “the enemy——”

“Assistance! (interrupted the jesuit) Never
 “let it be said that the mighty monarch of
 “Spain wanted assistance to over-run the lit-
 “tle kingdom of Portugal. It would be an
 “indelible disgrace to your honour to accept
 “assistance. As to the English, I have told
 “you already how they will be taken off; and
 “then you will have the Portuguese entirely at
 “your mercy. But has your excellency con-
 “sidered of the advice I took the liberty to
 “hint to you, of extirpating the present race
 “of inhabitants by every severity authorized

“by

" by the laws of war, that is, by every method
 " which the conquerors please to make use of.
 " Their hatred to your nation is such, that it
 " is impossible ever to reduce them to a proper
 " degree of subjection and loyalty. Above all
 " things, there should not be one of the race
 " of the present king or even of the nobility
 " left, as experience shews that they will
 " watch every opportunity to revolt, and
 " assert an independency, in the same man-
 " ner as this family gained the crown by re-
 " bellion."

" What you say (answered the minister)
 " agrees entirely with my own opinion. I had
 " resolved upon this from the first moment I
 " thought upon the war. I am just now going
 " to attend the king, and, as matters of such
 " consequence cannot be conducted with too
 " much caution, will obtain an order express-
 " ly to that purpose, under his own hand, to
 " the general of his forces, to vindicate me
 " from the odium of such an unpopular mea-
 " sure. His natural turn is to cruelty, so that
 " he will most gladly take the hint. In the
 " mean time, you may assure his majesty of
 " France of every service in my power, to
 " humble his haughty enemy, and procure him
 " the peace he desires."

Satisfied with the success of his negotiation,
 the jesuit then withdrew, and the minister com-
 posed his countenance into proper gravity, to
 appear in public.

The natural pride and ostentation of the
 Spaniards at first made me something surprised
 at the freedom and candour with which the
 minister confessed the weakness and wants of
 the

the Spanish government: but a moment's reflection explained his conduct, and shewed that he acted with the strictest consistency of character. He had suffered himself to be gained by bribery, to serve the interests of France, and therefore could not pretend to assume a consequence, or make a vain parade of power which he could not exert, to the very agent who had corrupted him, and was beside as well informed as himself.



C H A P. XI.

A peep behind the curtain. Royal amusements; heroic principles and valour; with an approved shield against certain terrible dangers.

WHEN the minister had gone through the ceremonies of his levee with proper dignity, he went to his master. The king appeared to be in the prime of life, hale, strong, and active. He was seated at a table with a parcel of shuttle-cocks before him, and mending a racket with as much earnestness as a school-boy of seven years old.

The moment he raised his eyes from his work, and saw his minister, "Come (said he, "starting up, and stripping himself to his shirt) "I have been waiting for you some time. I'll "try if I cannot beat you more shamefully to-day than I did yesterday."

The minister, who knew his cue, forgot all his gravity in an instant, and following the royal

royal example set him, threw off his cloaths also, and, taking up a racket, prepared for the attack, which he seemed to maintain with as much eagerness and delight as his master, till he saw him begin to be tired, when, feigning himself unable to strike another stroke, he dropped the racket out of his hand, and sat down puffing and blowing on the floor, while the king, to shew his superior abilities, and insult his antagonist, gave half a dozen strokes more by himself.

As soon as they had recovered their breath, and put on their cloaths, "May it please your majesty, (said the minister, resuming his solemnity) I have just received an account from Portugal. Your invincible arms bear all before them, and will soon reduce the whole kingdom. They have already taken a considerable village, and burned two farm-houses."

"Have they so? (interrupted his sacred majesty) that's well done. Send them orders to burn all before them. I wish I was with them. I love such sport in my heart. I'd soon make their king rue his refusing my friendship. But how soon will they take Lisbon? I long to go there, and see how it looks after the earthquake, whether it is any thing like Herculaneum."

"Your majesty's army is advancing toward it, (answered the minister) but the roads are bad, and the country-people oppose them, so that they are obliged to march with great circumspection."

"Why do not they shoot them? (replied the monarch) If I was there, not one of them

“them should escape. I’d kill them all myself, as I’ll shew you just now. The enemy is drawn up ready for battle, and I only waited for you to see me attack them.”

Then going into another apartment that looked into a close court, and leading his minister to the window, “There they are, (continued he, laughing with delight, as he pointed to a number of cats which were immured in the court;) there is the army of the enemy. The red ones are English, the rest are Portuguese. Go, reach me those guns yonder. I’ll attack them directly. It will be a glorious surprize. While I shoot with one gun you shall load the other, so that we’ll keep up a constant fire.”

With these words he began the attack, shouting in triumph at every shot, “There falls an Englishman. There a Portuguese! Now I charge them on the right; now on the left; now in the front; now in the rear. I’ll shew them that I am a general. See how they run! helter, skelter, pell mell.”

His heroic majesty carried on his attack in this manner with such eagerness, and continued it so long that his minister was more tired of loading for him, than he had been of his match at shuttle-cock; at length, observing that one of the wounded cats screamed in an uncommon manner, “A truce! A truce! (said he) your majesty should slacken your fire. The enemies acknowledge your victory, and send a trumpet to desire leave to bury their dead. According to the laws of war, that is never refused: beside, if you kill them all to-day, what will you do for an ar-

“my

“ my to attack another time? There is not
 “ one cat left in all Madrid; your majesty’s
 “ wars have consumed the whole species.”

“ Well then, (said the victorious monarch,
 “ who was by this time sufficiently fatigued
 “ himself) I will grant them a truce; and do
 “ you take care that there is a supply of pro-
 “ visions sent them. Their magazines I ima-
 “ gine are nearly exhausted; I scorn to starve
 “ my enemies. Hah! hah! hah! Don’t you
 “ think now that I could kill all those Portu-
 “ guese? Egad I’ll go and head my army my-
 “ self, as I did once before, and not let one
 “ of them escape.”

The smook of the monarch’s artillery, and
 the screaming of the wounded cats making the
 field of battle not a very agreeable place to stay
 in, the king and his minister returned to the
 closet. As soon as the latter had once more
 composed his features, “ May it please your
 “ majesty, (said he) by the accounts from your
 “ invincible army in Portugal I find, that it is
 “ in vain to think of reducing that people to
 “ subjection and obedience. Those who sub-
 “ mit one day rebel again the next; so that
 “ there is no end of giving them quarter. Be-
 “ side, the English are expected every day to
 “ land to their assistance, and then their num-
 “ bers may prove troublesome. I am therefore
 “ come to know what orders you will please
 “ to send to your generals, to direct their con-
 “ duct.”

“ Orders! (answered his most sacred ma-
 “ jesty) to put them all to the sword; that is
 “ the surest way to make them obedient. As
 “ for the English, we must take care what we
 do.

“do with them: they are all hereticks, and
 “magicians, and deal with the devil. I re-
 “member very well how they frightened me
 “once before, till I got the pope to bless my
 “night-cap; and then I defied them and their
 “witchcraft too. They could do me no harm
 “while I had that on. I am sorry that it is
 “worn out, or I would go and have a stroke
 “at them myself; but I could never bear to
 “be one minute without it, while there hung
 “a rag of it together. However, I’ll send to
 “him for another; and, at the same time, it
 “would not be amiss to send enough for the
 “whole army, and his holiness might bless
 “them all together; and when the sol-
 “diers have got them, they’ll be a match
 “for the heretic English, and the devil to
 “help them.”

“What your majesty says is extremely right,
 “(replied the minister) and it would be very
 “improper for you to hazard your sacred life,
 “before you have gotten such an infallible de-
 “fence to guard it. In the mean time though,
 “will your majesty please to send orders to
 “your generals, for putting the country un-
 “der military execution? They will have
 “double weight, when under your own
 “hand.”

“Aye! (returned the gracious monarch)
 “Give me pen and ink, and I will write to
 “them this instant, to burn and destroy all
 “before them, and put man, woman, and
 “child to the sword, without mercy or dis-
 “tinction. Or, stay! It will do as well after
 “the puppet-shew; I am in haste now: and,
 “do you hear! Order public rejoicings to be
 “made;

"made; and send to the bishops, to sing *te Deum* for what we have already done."

It was some time before I could recover myself from the astonishment and horror with which this scene struck me. "Just Heaven! (thought I) are these thy substitutes on earth? Can the vices of man have sunk him so entirely below thy care, that he should be given up thus to the most despicable destruction? be made the play-thing of a fool, and slaughtered for his meer amusement? I can bear the sight no longer."

Saying this, I flung out of the court, in honest indignation, and *wished* myself directly into France, in hopes of being relieved by the contrast between the manners of that dissipated, gay people, and those where I was. "If I must be among fools, (said I) let them be merry ones. Let not the affectation of wisdom make folly more disgusting."



CHAP. XII.

Scene changed. Pleasant instance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secrets of favouritism.

THE effect which I felt from this change is scarce to be conceived. The smile of pleasure and complacency that softened every face I saw, soon dispelled the gloom which I had contracted in the late solemn scene, and infected me also to such a degree, that my features

tures began insensibly to relax into a grin, and I could hardly keep my feet from capering as I went along with the croud, whom I found going to pay their court to the king's mistress.

They all stopped in the antichamber to her apartments, where they waited with the most complaisant patience for the return of the favoured few who were admitted into her presence, to learn from them the modes of thought and action which she pleased to prescribe for the day.

Curious to see a person who was able thus to rule the happiness of so many, I entered the dressing-room, where I found her at her toilet, attended in a manner that exceeded my imagination, accustomed as I was to uncommon scenes. At her feet kneeled a bishop, in all his sacred robes, buckling her shoes. The bason in which she washed her hands was held by a peer of the first rank. A counsellor of the parliament painted her cheeks. A farmer of the revenues set her jewels in order. A general powdered her hair. An admiral tied her ribbons; and, to entertain her, a cardinal read a loose lampoon.

When this important work was finished she arose, and, rewarding her happy servants with a gracious nod, retired with the cardinal into another room, to talk upon business. As soon as they were alone, "Your ladyship, I think," (said the cardinal, laughing) "has been grandly waited on this morning. Pray, have you the same attendance every day?"

"If I would receive it, (answered she) I might have ten times more. There is nothing so fulsome that those sycophants will
"not.

“not say; nothing is so servile that they will
 “not do. I know the baseness of their souls,
 “and therefore trample them thus under my
 “feet, to anticipate the insults which I am
 “sensible they would heap upon me on any
 “reverse of fortune. As they worship the sun-
 “shine of court-favour, it is but just to let
 “them toil in the heat of it for a while.”

“But how did your ladyship gather such a
 “groupe? (interrupted the cardinal, who seem-
 “ed not much to like some part of what she
 “said, and therefore was desirous to put a stop
 “to reflections so general) Almost every pro-
 “fession in the state had a representative at
 “your toilet.”

“Yes, (replied she) and I design to set most
 “of these representatives at the head of their
 “professions too, which was the occasion of
 “my desiring to see you this morning.”

“But does your ladyship know (said the
 “cardinal) whether they are qualified to fill
 “those places? Many of them require parti-
 “cular judgment and experience.”

“Qualified! (interrupted her ladyship, with
 “a contemptuous smile) Yes; I have taken
 “care to be satisfied, that they all have the
 “qualifications I want; and as for any other,
 “they are answerable themselves; so let them
 “take care of that. I am to give them all
 “their definitive answers this morning; so if
 “you will go into that closet, you may over-
 “hear what passes, and will be a judge of
 “their qualifications.”

The cardinal obeyed; and her ladyship ring-
 ing for one of her attendants, ordered him to
 let

let the general know she was at leisure to speak with him.

As soon as he entered, "Well sir, (said her ladyship, cutting short all compliments, and entering directly upon business) I have spoken to the minister about you, and am sorry to find there are so many objections made, that it will be necessary for me to exert my utmost interest to serve you. However, as I have undertaken it, I will not be foiled."

"I am under infinite obligation to your ladyship, (answered the general) and shall endeavour to make a return."——

"Sir, (interrupted she) the return I expect is a punctual performance of your proposal; which was, to give me two thirds of all (exclusive of your part) that you can possibly make by this commission, as well what you can subtract from the superfluous appointments of your own army, as the plunder and spoil of the enemies. You remember, sir, that this was your own proposal."

"I do, Madam, (answered he) and shall faithfully perform it, though really the appointments of the army at present are so very short, and even these so badly supplied, that I fear what may be saved from them will not answer your expectation, though I will do what I can; in an enemy's country soldiers may shift for themselves. But whatever this falls short shall be made up in the other article. The enemies have have had a long opportunity to enrich themselves, which will turn out well to your account now. I'll strip them to the skin for you. It is good

“policy to ruin an enemy’s country which we
 “do not design to keep possession of; as it dis-
 “ables them from making head again for a
 “considerable length of time. I hope also to
 “conduct the military operations of the cam-
 “paign in such a manner, that your ladyship
 “shall not be ashamed of having recommend-
 “ed me to the command.”

“As to that, sir, (replied she) it is no affair
 “of mine. You are to take care of that up-
 “on your own account; and I wish you may,
 “if it were only to disappoint the presages of
 “those who opposed your promotion; some of
 “whom went so far as to say, that you were
 “destitute of every qualification necessary for
 “so important a charge.”——Saying this, she
 turned from him, leaving him to enjoy the plea-
 sure of meditating on her last words.

The departure of the general made way for
 the entrance of the admiral, who was sum-
 moned next, and whom her ladyship addressed
 with as little ceremony as she had shewn to
 the former.

“You have been recommended to me, sir,
 “(said she) by one of my women to whom, I
 “understand, you have the honour of being
 “related, as a proper person to be entrusted
 “with the command of a fleet, to cruize upon
 “the enemy; and, on her vouching your me-
 “rit, I have got you preferred before several
 “officers of known ability.”

“I am eternally devoted to your ladyship,
 “(answered he, elated at his success) and hope
 “I shall be so happy as not to disappoint your
 “expectations in any respect.”

“I

" I hope not, (replied she) and, as I con-
 " fide in the character given me of you, have
 " not yet expressly stipulated any conditions;
 " but you must not imagine upon that account
 " that I do not expect any. You know the
 " nature of the command which you are to go
 " upon. It is to attack the enemy's trade,
 " and plunder their settlements in those places
 " where you expect to meet the least resistance.
 " Now, sir, in executing such a commission
 " you must certainly make many valuable cap-
 " tures; three fourths of the clear produce of
 " which I shall expect, for procuring you the
 " command; the rest you may divide among
 " yourselves. If you approve of this, your
 " commission shall be made out directly."

" I am too sensible of your ladyship's favour,
 " (returned he) to dislike any thing you pro-
 " pose. As for myself, I have nothing in view
 " but honour; and that, at least, I shall have
 " an opportunity to acquire."

" Honour, sir! (interrupted she hastily)
 " How do you mean? If it is by fighting with
 " the fleets of the enemy, you quite mistake
 " the matter. Instead of that, you must use
 " all possible care to avoid them, and not run
 " the hazard of disappointing the design upon
 " which you are sent, and losing the fleet en-
 " trusted to you in attempting to acquire ho-
 " nour. Acquire profit, and leave honour to
 " the enemy."

" Yes! — But please your ladyship, (an-
 " swered the seaman, who did not so well re-
 " lish the latter part of his instructions) How
 " shall I answer that to the king? I shall be
 " broke with infamy."

" Never

"Never fear, (replied she :) do you take care to make a profitable cruize, and I will protect you from all danger of that kind ; and perhaps make interest also to have you sent out again with a greater force, when you shall not be under a necessity of observing such caution." Encouraged by this, the admiral promised to obey her orders, and went away with an high heart.

The admiral was succeeded by the farmer-general, who, advancing to her ladyship with a confident air, "I have taken the liberty (said he) to bring your ladyship a suit of jewels, which I hope you will like. I should not presume to offer them, if they were not fit for the first sovereign in Europe to wear."

"You are always very obliging; (answered her ladyship, casting her eye carelessly upon the jewels as she took them) they are indeed pretty enough."

"Your ladyship does not see half their beauty; (replied the farmer) if you will please to look a little closer, you will have a better notion of their value."

"I beg your pardon, sir, (returned she, taking notice of the paper they were wrapped in, which was a bill of exchange for a great sum of money) I like them extremely. They certainly are very fine; and I must say that you have the politest method of presenting any thing of any man I know. I have wanted to see you for some time, to let you know that your proposal is accepted of."

"I am much obliged to your ladyship (answered he) and shall strive to merit your favour on all occasions; though really I am

“not quite free from apprehensions of meeting
 “with such difficulties in this affair, as may
 “make it much less advantageous than is ima-
 “gined. The people are so exhausted by the
 “multitude of their taxes, that they declare
 “themselves unable to pay any more, and in
 “their despair express a discontent little short
 “of rebellion; so that I believe we shall be
 “under a necessity of calling for assistance from
 “the army to levy any thing.”

“And you shall have it, (replied her lady-
 “ship) whenever you require it. That is a
 “proof of their being exhausted, indeed! If
 “they are in want, let the men all list in the
 “army, that is the proper place for them;
 “and then the women and children will have
 “enough. Don’t you shew the least tender-
 “ness to one of them. It only encourages the
 “rest. Their complaints are all feigned. If
 “they were in such distress as they pretend,
 “their spirits would hardly be so high.

“I shall punctually observe your ladyship’s
 “directions, (returned he) and depend on your
 “protection, if any thing should happen.

The counsellor of the parliament succeeded
 the farmer-general, to whom her ladyship ad-
 dressed herself with as little ceremony as the
 others. “Sir, (said she) I have considered of
 “what you said to me, and fear the scheme
 “is impracticable. Your people seem too
 “refractory to be influenced by such me-
 “thods.”

“Madam, (answered he) I must beg leave
 “to say, your ladyship’s apprehensions are
 “groundless. I know the temper of every
 “man among them, and what will prevail
 “on

"on each. If you please to make the experiment, I will answer for the event."

"Well, sir, (replied she) then it shall be so, and you shall have the place on the terms proposed; though, if your scheme succeeds readily, I shall expect a farther consideration, as it will then be much more valuable."

"Your ladyship (returned he) may depend on my obedience to any thing you require."

"That's true, (added her ladyship, calling him back just as he was going out of the room) there is one thing which I had like to have forgot mentioning, though indeed it was plainly implied in what we said. It is likely that the jesuits will offer large sums of money, to avert the storm that threatens them. That, you know, I am to share in, equally with the other perquisites of your place."

"Why—really—(said he) if your ladyship insists upon it——; though, as it is but a contingency, it is difficult to bring it within any rule."

"Sir, (answered she warmly) I do and will insist upon it; and think it odd for you to make any difficulty."

"No, Madam! by no means! (replied he) I make no difficulty at all; but till your ladyship had declared your pleasure, it was impossible for me to foresee it. Is there any thing else?"

"No, (returned her ladyship) not that I recollect now. If I should think of any thing farther, I will let you know."

The next who was admitted to an audience was the nobleman who had held the bason to her ladyship, as she washed her hands. "I am sorry, my lord duke, said she, (as soon as he had paid his compliments) that I have been obliged to make you wait so long; but business, my lord——"

"Your ladyship (answered his grace, with the utmost complaisance) need be under no concern. I am no stranger myself to the urgency of state-affairs."

"Well, my lord, (said she) at length I have the honour to congratulate your grace on your son's success. His majesty made many difficulties at first; but they all vanished when I told him of the match between the marquis and my cousin. He said, he could refuse nothing to any one who was to be allied to me."

"My son is in duty obliged to his majesty, (replied his grace) and I have a just sense of your ladyship's favour."

"I am glad, my lord, (continued she) that your good sense and prudence have enabled you to conquer that absurd pride of family, which makes fools of so many. Though your son's intended wife is the daughter of a mechanic, she is my kinswoman; and, if I live, I'll make the proudest peer of France glad to marry into my family. The king is the fountain of nobility, and what he can bestow they shall not want."

"Your ladyship's own merit (answered he coolly) makes it an honour to any family to be allied to you. I will send my son to re-

"turn

THE REVERIE. 221

“turn his thanks to your ladyship, and receive your farther commands.”

The bishop was now the only one who remained; but her ladyship had already had too much business that morning, and therefore sent him word, that she could not see him till some other time.

C H A P. XIII.

Make hay while the sun shines. All go to the market, where they can have most for their money. A conversation concluded in character.

THESE important matters being thus dispatched, the cardinal came out of his closet, and smiling at her ladyship, “It is a pity (said he) that your ladyship cannot publicly assume the office of prime minister, you do business in such a masterly manner.”

“Why, (answered she, laughing) I have no notion of making many words, when I have resolved upon a thing; nor of using the agency of others in what I can do better myself. They always make such bungling work, that I have no patience with them. Plain-dealing prevents mistakes. Beside, they cannot get such good terms as I do. People chaffer and higgler with them, who do not in the least object to what I require. As to the breach of decency, I despise it. I study

"my own conveniency, not other people's opinions."

"Your ladyship judges very rightly; (replied she) great minds are above the rules which direct the conduct of their inferiors."

"Well! (resumed her ladyship) Do not you think now that all these persons are properly qualified for my purpose? I hold my power by a very precarious tenure, and therefore think it prudence to make the most of it while it lasts. What is the interest or honour of the kingdom to me? I know that with the king's favour I gained the hatred of every other person in the kingdom, and that on the loss of that I should feel all the weight of the latter; to avoid which I'll take care to provide what shall make my retreat elsewhere comfortable, for I will never stay a moment after I become subject to their insults; and for that very reason I send my money before me as fast as I can."

"Then your ladyship (replied the cardinal) is resolved on going to England!"

"Most certainly; (said she) What other place could I expect the same safety or satisfaction in? A person that has but money enough to give into the extravagancies of the mode will never want an agreeable reception there. As to the difficulty you made about going with me, there is nothing in it. There will no more objection be made to your character than to mine. As soon as the novelty is worn off, we shall pass as unnoticed as we can wish, and meet as much respect as we can pay for. The pope himself, so-

"lennly

“Jemmy as he is abjured, would find a well-
 “come in England for his money; so that you
 “need not be so delicate and timorous. It is
 “but laying aside your red hat, and you need
 “apprehend nothing.”

“Your ladyship (answered the cardinal, who
 “did not much like the manner in which she
 “spoke these last words) cannot think that I
 “should make any difficulty of following you
 “to the remotest part of the world. The hap-
 “piness I enjoy in your favour exceeds every
 “other consideration. As to those people who
 “have been with you this morning, is it your
 “pleasure that I should mention them to the
 “king; or will your ladyship rather do it your-
 “self? Those I mean whom the importance of
 “the employments which you design them for
 “makes it necessary to observe such caution
 “about. There will be great murmuring at
 “their promotion among the nobility, who
 “have applied for those commands.”

“Let them murmur on; (replied she haugh-
 “tily) I despise every thing in their power to
 “say or do! I’ll humble their pride, by show-
 “ing them how little I regard them. I made
 “the duke wait so long to-day, to let him see
 “that his son’s marrying my relation gave him
 “no consequence with me. As to this affair,
 “I’ll speak to the king myself, for form-sake;
 “but you may order their several commissions
 “to be got ready in the mean time.”

“Really, (returned the cardinal) I think
 “you gave his grace sufficient reason, even
 “after he was admitted, to see that you
 “held him not in very high respect. But how

"came you not to see the bishop? Had he any particular business?"

"Business! (said her ladyship, after a loud laugh) Yes; and that no less than a cardinal's hat, I assure you. Because I got you one for gartering my stockings, he founds his pretensions on buckling my shoes. Hah! hah! hah! It is true he offers fair. He undertakes to be either for or against the Jesuits, for or against the constitution; in short, any thing, or every thing I please, now, or at any other time."

"Pious prelate! (added the cardinal, after he had joined in the laugh) He has a most convenient conscience, and cannot fail to rise in the church. I presume you have not rejected so ample offers."

"I am not resolved about him yet; (replied she) I must try his patience here first for a while. When I have broken him sufficiently by attendance, I'll then consider whether it is proper to gratify his ambition, or give him a refusal."

Their political conference was broken off here, by one of a softer nature. The cardinal was too gallant not to dedicate some part of his private audience to love, and her ladyship too tender to refuse his addresses. After some time spent in dalliance, the cardinal recollected that the king was by that time returned from hunting, and accordingly hastened away to wait upon him; while her ladyship prepared to receive the visit which his majesty never failed to pay her every day.



C H A P. XIV.

*A curious, though not an uncommon picture. Play
a trout properly, and you'll catch it. The fasci-
nation of ease.*

IT was not very long before the king arrived. From the nature of their connection I expected that their meeting would be attended with the warmest expressions of passion; but there appeared no traces of any such thing between them. The king entered her apartment with a listless, indifferent air, as if he knew not what else to do with himself; and, loolling into a chair, scarce returned any answer to her enquiries after his health; which she also expressed with the coolness of compliment and words of course.

When he had sat, or rather dozed thus for some time, in a kind of suspension of thought, he seemed as it were to awake, and turning to his mistress, gave her an account of his morning's sport, as particularly as if she understood it as well as himself; while she listened to him with the greatest attention and appearance of pleasure, asking him every now and then such questions as should lead him to repeat those passages in which she saw he took the most delight.

When his spirits were somewhat raised in this manner, and the lady thought him in a proper humour for her purpose, she artfully

turned the conversation upon business. "I hope (said she, as if carelessly and only from common curiosity) that your majesty has received agreeable accounts from your armies this morning. I hear there are expresss arrived."

"Aye! (answered he) so the cardinal informed me; but I suppose they have brought nothing material, as he said no more."

"I cannot help thinking it very strange, (continued she) that such powerful armies as your majesty sends into the field do not bear down all before them. Your enemies are no way able to oppose them with equal force. I should fear that there must be a fault somewhere."—Then observing that he seemed to listen to her with some attention, "Is your majesty certain (continued she) that the generals to whom you intrust the conduct of your armies are equal to the charge, or at least that they do not protract the war, for the sake of continuing in their commands? Some thing or other must be the reason of it."

"Why, yes! (replied the king) I have often thought so myself; and therefore I believe I'll even make a peace, and so have done with them all."

"A peace! (exclaimed she suddenly, equally surprised and alarmed at the word) I did not know that your majesty had any thoughts of peace; to be sure, it is most desirable—on proper terms."

"I can't say (returned he) that I should have any thought of the kind in the present situation of affairs, if so many miscarriages
— did

“ did not in a manner force me to it. It is
 “ very disagreeable to be disappointed in all my
 “ great designs, and that after so vast an ex-
 “ pence of blood and treasure.”

“ Disappointed! (returned her ladyship, who
 “ now took her cue) Your majesty can never
 “ be disappointed in any design, till you are
 “ pleased to drop it. Inferior princes, who
 “ want power to execute their will, may be
 “ disappointed; but not a monarch, whose
 “ word is a law to millions.”—— Then rais-
 “ ing her voice, and assuming an air of indig-
 “ nation, “ A peace! No! (continued she) Your
 “ majesty will never think of a peace, till your
 “ enemies are brought to beg it on their knees.
 “ It were beneath the dignity of your crown,
 “ and a lessening of your own honour. As for
 “ the trifling successes, which have dejected
 “ some of your own subjects as much as they
 “ have elevated the insolence of your enemies,
 “ one campaign, properly conducted, will ef-
 “ fectually reverse them. Shall it be said that
 “ the mighty kingdom of France, governed by
 “ a prince equally the delight of his people, and
 “ the terror of his foes, was obliged to receive
 “ the law from a few mechanic islanders?”

“ But what can be done to prevent it? (said
 “ he, roused from his lethargy by the spirited
 “ manner in which she spoke) They tell me,
 “ that my revenues are quite exhausted, and
 “ my subjects crying out for peace.”

“ Who tells your majesty so? (answered she)
 “ A dastardly, slothful set, who, regardless of
 “ your glory, think of nothing but enjoying
 “ in luxurious ease the fortunes they have
 “ amassed by every iniquitous means. The reve-

"nues of a king of France can never be ex-
 "hausted, while his subjects have a penny left.
 "All the wealth in your kingdom is yours.
 "You are not obliged to beg from your peo-
 "ple, as the king of England does. As to
 "their seditious cries for peace, if your majes-
 "ty was to pay attention to them, you would
 "never carry on a war; and for their wants,
 "they are all feigned. Look around your
 "court, look at those very people (traitors I
 "had almost called them) who tell you such
 "stories, and see whether any thing like want
 "appears about them. Perhaps they mean
 "that the populace is dissatisfied, because they
 "cannot live in such luxury as they do them-
 "selves. If they really do want, why do not
 "their compassionate advocates assist them out
 "of their abundance, without applying to your
 "majesty? Are you only to suffer for the wants
 "of the people? Must your glory, your ho-
 "nour be given up, to save the superfluous
 "wealth of your nobles? The very thought is
 "treason; and no loyal subject would harbour
 "it himself, much less presume to suggest it
 "to your majesty. Every one who mentions
 "peace till your enemies are humbled, and all
 "your great designs accomplished, is a traitor
 "to your interest and glory."

"But if I continue the war, (said the king)
 "how can I be sure of better success than I
 "have met hitherto?"

"Change the persons who have the conduct
 "of the war, (answered her ladyship, who had
 "now drawn him to the point she wanted) and
 "never doubt of the success. You have hi-
 "therto employed the nobility, who look up-

"on the command of fleets and armies as their
 "birth-right, and consequently take no pains
 "to acquire that military knowledge which
 "alone gives a just title to command, and
 "promises success; but upon any misfortunes,
 "though evidently occasioned by their own er-
 "rors, grow weary of the war, and advise
 "peace. I would remove them all, and em-
 "ploy only those who have given instances of
 "merit equal to such a trust; and who, having
 "no dependance but upon your majesty's fa-
 "vour, shall omit nothing possible to obtain
 "it; nor, when their own ambition is satis-
 "fied, insolently presume to advise your ma-
 "jesty to sacrifice your glory to their ease."

"But where (replied he) shall I find such
 "persons? I know of none."

"There are enough, (returned she) if your
 "majesty pleases to make use of their service.
 "I myself could at this very time name both a
 "general and an admiral, for whose success I
 "would be security to your majesty: and as to
 "your revenues being exhausted, and your
 "parliament uneasy, I have just now been
 "talking with a counsellor who undertakes to
 "make the latter as implicitly submissive to
 "your will as you can desire: as I also know
 "a farmer, who will make no excuses of the
 "people's incapacity to pay your majesty's
 "taxes. All the difficulties which those peace-
 "makers talk so much of are owing solely to
 "their own mismanagement; and they are
 "unfaithful servants, who make so many ob-
 "stacles to obeying your commands. When
 "the proud lazy nobles see that you can be
 "better served without them, their insolence
 "will

“ will be humbled, and they will strive to merit the employments which now they in a manner demand as their due.”

“ Well! (said the king, who was now worked up to the proper pitch) Be it so then! Let those people whom you speak of be employed. I am resolved I will hear no more of peace, till I have accomplished my designs. I will not submit my will to their’s, nor postpone my glory to such mean considerations.” — Then, rising from his chair in a heat, he expressed several sentiments of magnanimity and heroism, as he walked about the room, till, cooling from his passion, he sunk into his former serenity, and, returning to his chair, took a nap, to dream of conquests and glory, and compose his spirits for his dinner; while his mistress dispatched a billet to the cardinal, to let him know that she had settled every thing, and he might give their several commissions to the persons she had appointed in the morning.

“ By what despicable agents (said I to myself, turning away in disgust) does Heaven work the most dreadful events! How weak is the thread by which a mighty people are guided! At length I see the mystery of favouritism. To leave the mind absolutely at ease, watch its ruling passions, and, without seeming to have any thing else in view, artfully suggest the objects of one’s own designs, as the means of their gratification. My soul is sick of vice and folly. I’ll seek relief in that happy land where a free people is governed by a king who is himself free, before such manifold abuses of the blessing.”

“sings of Heaven, as have for some time engrossed my attention, make me hate my own nature, and abjure the name of man.”——
Saying this, I *wished* myself directly into England.



CHAP. XV.

The scene changed. A pleasing prospect suddenly over-cast. An easy way to get rid of a wrangler, with a comfortable plaister for a broken head. He that throws dirt always soils his fingers.

ON my arrival in England, I found myself near the seat of a nobleman of the first rank, in that part of the island which lay next to France, not having thought of any particular place when I *wished* myself from thence.

The largeness of the house, and the flourishing condition of the extensive demesne around it, shewed the wealth of the owner; as the smile of content on the faces of his tenants proved his generosity and justice. Industry procured plenty, and liberty sweetened at the same time that it secured enjoyment.

Struck with the contrast between this, and the scenes I had lately seen, I shared sympathetically in the general joy; and in the honest pride of my heart resolved to please myself with taking a more particular view of the man whose virtues diffused such happiness around him. But what was my surprize and disappointment, to find the prospect overcast where I expected to have seen it brightest! In his own family, and
where

where his more immediate presence should have operated with the greatest force, ambition had banished harmony, and poisoned every breast with animosity and rancour.

The flames of this dissention, which had long been smothered, burst out with the most ridiculous violence, just at the time I entered. Though such a domestic scene as this was a descent from those *great* ones which I had lately been engaged in observing; yet, as it displayed the inconsistency of the human heart in a new light, I thought it merited my attention.

The occasion of the breach was this: One of the lord's agents, who, by the activity and sanguineness of his temper, had in a manner engrossed the whole management of his master's affairs, had taken it in his head to go to law with one of the principal gentlemen in the neighbourhood, from an apprehension that he intended to take the part of a cousin of his, with whom his lordship had had a long suit for encroaching upon his side of the common.

The agent had conducted this suit with equal judgment and success, and at a very great expence, for it was not his disposition to starve any cause he took in hand, foiled his adversary in all his attempts, and not only recovered from him the places he had unjustly possessed himself of, but also obtained several decrees for costs, by which he turned him out of so many other parts of his estate, that he had not left him a penny to see an attorney to carry on the suit any longer, though his proud and litigious temper would not permit him to give it up.

Matters were in this situation, when the agent proposed filing a bill directly against the cousin, who (he said he had received undoubted intelligence) had entered into a private agreement with the other to supply him with money to go on with his law-suit, and assist him also with his interest to recover his losses. This was a direct breach of a former agreement between him and his lordship, by which he had obliged himself not to meddle in the dispute at all; the agent was for falling upon him without any ceremony, acknowledging, that it was much better to be plaintiff than defendant in any suit; as must certainly be their case if they were not before-hand with the other, who was at that very time preparing to attack them, as appeared by several late instances of his behaviour.

To this proposal his lordship did not think proper to give a determinate answer, till he should consult with the rest of his tenants and servants; as, by their leases, they were all bound to defray the expences of any suits which were for the general good of the estate. But when the agent acquainted them with his design, though he supported it with very strong reasons, and which in the sequel proved to be well-founded, they were all of a different opinion, and said, it would be very imprudent to entangle themselves in a new dispute before they were out of the old, especially as they were already at a greater expence than they could well bear.

The agent, whose temper was too warm to brook opposition, without any respect to his master's presence, flew into a violent passion, and

and called them a parcel of poor-spirited trimming fellows, who would lose a pound to save a penny. They were not behind-hand with him in abuse, but said, that he was a hot-headed beggarly upstart, who, having no fortune of his own to lose, cared not what expence or danger he drew others into.

The lord thought it but just, in such a case as this, to follow the opinion of the majority, and therefore rejected the agent's proposal. But he did not give it up on that account; but resolved to try another method, by which he did not doubt of carrying his point. The great success with which he had managed his master's business, ever since he had been employed, had made him such a favourite with the tenants, and given him beside so great a consequence in his own eyes, that he thought his lordship could not do without him, and would therefore submit to any thing rather than part with him. Full of this opinion, he went to him next morning, and giving him up his keys, in a kind of pet, told him, he was sorry he could not serve his lordship any longer, as he thought proper to prefer other people's advice to his.

His lordship, as if he had been prepared for the thing, received the keys very calmly, and telling him he was also sorry to lose so good an agent, dismissed him most politely, with thanks for his past services.

This was a stroke the other was not prepared for. He stood thunder-struck for some moments; then, bursting into a flood of tears, kissed his lordship's hand passionately, and, declaring himself overcome by such goodness,
said,

said, he was ready to spend the last hour of his life in the service of so kind a master. The consequence of this he thought would have been, that his lordship would directly return him his keys, and re-instate him in his employment, for he was far enough from designing to resign it; but he found himself disappointed in this also. The lord, much as he valued him for his abilities and honesty, both of which were unquestionable, had for some time felt the warmth of his temper, not without uneasiness, and was glad of so fair an opportunity of getting rid of a servant who had shewed on many occasion, as well as this, that he meant to be master; not doubting but he had others in his family capable of managing his affairs with equal fidelity and judgment.

The situation of the late agent on this occasion may be easily conceived. He retired to his own house, and throwing himself on his bed, gave his mind up to the most mortifying reflections. But what he felt from his own thoughts was nothing to the vexation he received from others. Such an affair could not in the nature of things be long kept a secret. The moment it came to the ears of his relations, and dependants, that he had lost his employment, they all flocked about him, croaking like so many ravens about a carrion; some of them asking impertinent questions, others giving absurd advice; this upbraiding him with his rashness, that accusing his master of ingratitude; and all lamenting the disappointment of the hopes they had built on his favour, till their noise and nonsense quite turned the poor man's head; the consequence of which was,
that

that in his delirium he wrote a letter to the clerk of the parish, which he was to read at the vestry, giving as a reason for his throwing up his employment, that his lordship truly would no longer submit to be guided by him; and therefore he did not think it proper to serve him any longer.

This effectually clinched the affair. If his master had even been inclined to over-look what had passed, and take him into his service again, the folly and insolence of this letter put it out of his power; as it would have been plainly acknowledging, that he resigned himself absolutely to his guidance.

The late agent's enemies did not fail to exaggerate this unaccountable conduct in the most malicious manner; but his lord viewed it in another light, and justly imputing it to madness, not only took no notice of it, but also, to comfort him in his distress, generously gave him an annuity sufficient to support him in the rank of a gentleman, expressly as a reward for his past services; and wrote a letter with his own hand to his wife, who was an high-spirited dame, and came from a good family, in which he soothed her vanity, by paying her the compliment of calling her a lady.

Though this act of bounty proceeded merely from the generosity of his lordship's heart, the enemies of the late agent gave it a very different turn. The success which the latter had had in his business, and his sanguine professions of regard for the interest of the tenants, had won him their confidence and favour to such a degree, that they immediately looked upon his giving up his employment as a sign
that

that there were some schemes to their disadvantage in meditation, which he would not join in; and, consequently, that their interests would be betrayed, and the law-suit which he had conducted with so much credit, and brought almost to an happy conclusion, at so great an expence, patched up in a paultry manner, and all the money lost.

To lessen him, therefore, in the opinion of the populace, was considered as the most effectual method to stop their clamors, and disable him from making mischief between them and his lordship's servants. For this purpose, to make the news of his having got the annuity soon enough and sufficiently known, the town-crier proclaimed it at the market-cross; and it was immediately insinuated, with the greatest industry, that it was the price of his boasted regard to the tenants; that he had sold his influence over them, and engaged to make them approve any measures his lordship pleased, however contrary to their interest and honour.

But though this ruined his consequence, it was far from having all the effect that was expected. The tenants seemed resolved to think that their interest was to be sacrificed, because the person who succeeded to the management of his lordship's business was not immediately of their own chusing; and therefore, instead of minding their work, and going to plough and cart, as they ought to do, they spent their time tippling in ale-houses, and railing at the new agent, even before he had time to do any thing that should shew whether he was capable of the business or not; and for fear this humour should cool, some mischief-making folks hired

a pack

a pack of ballad-singers, to go about the streets singing black-guard songs of the agent and all his friends; who, to return the compliment, got as scurrilous a crew as the others, who threw dirt and called foul names as fast as they, for their lives: so that the whole village was in an uproar, and any stranger, who should have heard both sides, must have concluded, that there was not a man in the parish who was not a beggarly, lousy, lying, pick-pocket, vagabond, cheat, and scoundrel.



CHAP. XVI.

A receipt for popularity. Turn a cast-horse to graze on a common. The old steward acts the second part to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye.

THE lord, whose own good-nature made him wish to live in harmony with all the world, was greatly vexed at such scandalous wrangling thus under his nose; not that he knew it all either: the new agent, who from a long acquaintance had a particular influence over him, let him hear no more of it than he thought proper, contriving to keep every one from him who should say a word which he did not dictate; so that his lordship was made to believe, that all the disturbance and abuse came from the other side, and was levelled at him, as well as his servants.

Though all the servants were glad of the late agent's disgrace, in hopes of sharing some part of that power which he had engrossed so entirely to himself, that they were no more than meer cyphers in the family, the one who rejoiced most openly, was the old steward.

He had been many years a faithful servant, to the best of his knowledge and abilities, to his lordship's family; and though he was never thought to be so clear-headed or resolute in the management of affairs as the late agent, yet he was very useful in some things. He had made a considerable party among the tenants, for this lord's father, when he came first to the estate, to which he was apprehensive of having his title disputed, by the generous manner in which he gave his beef and beer among them, for he was very well to-pass in the world, and never failed to treat the mob with a bonfire and a barrel of stingo every now-and-then; by which means he also won their hearts so, that he had always a party among the parishioners, to choose what officers he bade them, so that he was able to carry any point he pleased at the vestry, which, to do him justice, was ever what his lordship directed.

By this extravagant way of living, it is true, he had gone behind-hand a good deal, but he never stopt for that, he had still something left; and the stewardship, which he had had so long that he looked upon it as his own, brought him in a good penny beside, that enabled him very well to live on at his old rate.

The imperious manner in which the late agent behaved, had made the steward long wish to be rid of him; but he did not know
how

how to bring it about; and, especially at this time, he would not even attempt it, for fear of giving any hinderance to his lord's affairs, which the other managed so well: but when he saw it thus done to his hand he could not contain his joy, but ran up and down to every servant in the house, from the butler to the scullion, poking his nose in their faces, and shaking hands with them on their happy deliverance. Coming among the rest to the new agent, and addressing him in the same manner, "My good friend, (returned the latter dryly) "take care. Do not run mad with joy to-day, nor with grief to-morrow."

The steward's heart was too full to take notice of this speech now, but he understood it when it was too late. I have observed that the new agent was in particular favour with his lord. Though getting rid of that over-bearing wrangler was a great point gained, it was far from being all that he had in view. The stewardship was the thing he had fixed his heart upon. It was the first place in rank in the service, and, by the command of the cash, gave a power of every thing to one who had spirit to exert it; which he was resolved to do to the utmost extent, and not be encroached upon and brow-beaten by any under-servant, as the other had been.

But, though he was sure of getting the place from his lord when it should be vacant, the long services of the old steward, and the interest which his hospitality had acquired him among the tenants, from the wealthiest of whom he had always found means to borrow any money his lord wanted, till the rents came in,

in, made him think it necessary to proceed with address, in getting him turned off. For this reason he paid him uncommon compliments, and let him go on just as he pleased, in expectation of his doing something, now that he was freed from restraint, that might give a colour for removing him; but, whether by chance or design, he disappointed his schemes, and proceeded so regularly that he could take no hold of him.

This obliged him to change his measures. Accordingly he gave orders to the receivers under the steward, (some of whom, tho' brought in by him, and under the greatest obligations to his bounty, basely betrayed him, the moment they saw him totter in his place) to perplex the business of his office as much as possible, and even dispute his orders, which, it was not doubted, would put him off his guard, and make him give the advantage that was sought for against him, by doing something irregular, in his resentment.

This scheme had the desired effect, though not precisely in the manner that was expected. The steward, ignorant of the snare laid for him, in the usual course of his business gave one of the attorneys, concerned in carrying on the law-suit, an order upon the receivers, for a sum of money to clear off his bill of costs. The receivers, as they had been directed, made a difficulty of paying it without an express order from his lordship. This was a direct attack upon the steward's authority. He ran instantly to the lord, and sputtering out his story as well as his passion would permit him, demanded that those insolent fellows should be

discharged directly, or he could not do his business any longer.

The lord, who by the bye was prepared for this second part of the agent's farce, answered him carelessly, that he was sorry to lose so old a servant; and, turning about, walked away, humming a tune. The steward, who had lived in a kind of familiarity with the late lord, could not bear such a slight; he left the room directly, and ran about the whole house, telling every one he met how ill his lordship had used him.

But he soon found that he had more cause of complaint than he knew of; for the very next morning his letter of attorney was superseded, and the stewardship given to the new agent, who thus got the whole business into his own hands, having put a creature of his own into the agency, who dared not to disobey his orders in any thing.

It is not easy to describe the old steward's astonishment at such an unexpected stroke. However, he preserved the dignity of his character much better than the late agent had done; for when he waited upon his lordship, to give him up his keys, &c. he made no mean attempts to recover his favour and keep his place; and when the lord, in the goodness of his heart, offered him an annuity also, being unwilling that he should want in his old days, he refused it with disdain, declaring it should never be said, "that old *True-penny*, who had "spent so many pounds in good beef and strong "beer, in his lordship's service, was glad to "take up with a poultry annuity at last."

Such

Such a return for his labour and expence should have been sufficient to open his eyes to the folly he had been so long guilty of, and have taught him to live frugally and quietly the remainder of his days; but the habit had taken too fast hold on him to be ever shaken off. The moment he went home to his own house, he gathered all his old pot-companions and trencher-friends about him, and fell to carousing as usual, flattering himself with a foolish hope, that they would stand so firmly by him at the next vestry, that his lord should not be able to have his business done, and therefore must be glad to give him his place again.

While he squandered away the remains of his substance in this idle manner, and his new friend the late agent (for society in disgrace had united them) sat brooding over his resentment, and meditating schemes of revenge, the new steward was far from enjoying his triumph in happiness. The fall of his predecessor, who had so long thought himself as firmly fixed as man could be, was a warning to him; and though he took all possible care to secure himself, by filling every place in the family, down to the very stable-boy, with his dependants, and letting no body, as I have observed before, come near his lord, who he was not satisfied was absolutely in his interest, yet his fears every moment formed new dangers to torment him; and he could not see his lord smile upon the most devoted friend he had in the world, without feeling a jealousy of having his own arts played upon himself, and being supplanted in his turn as he had supplanted the others.

However groundless these fears were at first, they soon threatened to realize the dangers which were only of their own creation. That openness and gayety of temper, which first gained him his lordship's favour, gave place to gloomy silence and reserve; and the universal benevolence and philanthropy which gave irresistible charms to his conversation, and commanded the esteem of every good mind, were soured into jealous envy, and suspicion, that sickened at the mention of a virtuous action.



C H A P. XVII.

*An holiday, and a jolly day. A sumptuous feast,
and a raree-show.*

SO many successive instances of folly, which could thus poison a profusion of happiness, and turn it into misery, filled me with the most melancholy reflections; but I was soon diverted from them, by something of a less serious nature.

The constable of the village in which the lord's house stood, in conformity to old customs, made a feast at this time for his lordship and his whole family, to which he sent them a solemn invitation by the parish-officers. Such a scene promised some amusement at least. I therefore returned with the officers who had come upon this important errand, desirous to see the whole process of so extraordinary an affair.

As

As the feast was to be given at the joint expence of the village, the principal inhabitants had assembled at the constable's house, and were sitting over a pot of beer, waiting for the return of those who had been sent with the invitation; though the whole was a thing of course, their anxiety was so great that not one of them could speak a word till their arrival: the moment they entered the room, all the rest laid down their pipes, adjusted their perriwigs, and wriggling their chairs nearer to the table, listened to the account with open mouths, and looks of the profoundest sagacity.

"Well, gentlemen, (said the constable, who sat in an arm-chair to shew his authority) since his lordship has condescended to accept of our invitation, we should take care that every thing is prepared in the best manner for his reception. There will be many things wanted to make a proper appearance on such an occasion, and no one would stop at a trifling expence, especially as the money will be laid out among ourselves."

This speech opened every mouth in the room at once. "We shall all want new cloaths," cried the taylor.

—"New shoes,"—said the shoe-maker.

—"New stockings,"—said the hosier.

—"New wigs,"—said the barber.

—"Our horses must be shod,"—said the farrier.

—"Our houses repaired,"—said the brick-layer.

—"Our chimneys swept,"—said the chimney-sweeper.

——“ Our vaults emptied,”—said the night-man.

——“ We must have a sermon,”—said the curate.

——“ A speech,”—said the vestry-clerk.

——“ A vomit, in case of repletion,”—said the doctor.

——“ A clyster,”—said the apothecary.

——“ A coffin,”—said the undertaker. In short, every person present asserted the want of something in his own way, to make the entertainment compleat; and the less necessary it was, the louder they roared.

When they had all bawled themselves hoarse, and the constable, by repeated thumps with his fist upon the table, obtained leave to speak, “ Silence, gentlemen, (said he) we shall never do any thing at this rate. You are all for providing other things before we have fixed upon the victuals. Let us settle about them first.”

This word raised a tumult, ten times greater than the former; every one in the room roaring out at once for some particular dish, either that it was his trade to provide, or which he was fond of himself.

The butcher bawled out, Beef.—

The poulterer, fowls.—

The fishmonger, fish.—

——“ A turtle,”—said an alderman.

——“ A ragou,”—squeaked a Frenchman.

——“ Pickled herrings,”—belched Mynheer.

——“ Potatoes,”—cried an Irishman.

——“ An haggis,”—said a Scot.

——“ Leek-pottage,”—sputtered Taffy. In a word,

word, they all raised their voices with such vehemence, not one attending to what another said, that, since the building of Babel, there was not such a scene of confusion.

At length, the contest grew so high that they were just ready to fall together by the ears, when the constable, who sat all the while fretting his guts to fiddle-strings at this interruption of his speech, which he looked upon as an insult to his authority, put a stop to the whole tumult, by an accident. "Fire and fury!" (exclaimed he, raising his voice as loud as ever he was able) "Are you all mad?"

The word *fire*, which was all they attended to, filled them with affright. They thought the house was on fire, and repeating the cry with equal vehemence, they overturned the table, spilled the beer, and tumbling over one another, made the best of their way out.

As soon as they were undeceived, they returned into the room, and having recovered themselves a little by the help of a fresh supply from the ale-house, the constable, composing himself into proper dignity, resumed his speech: "I say, gentlemen, (said he) that, if we go on in this manner, it is impossible for us to conduct this affair with due decorum. We had better chuse out a set of us who understand these matters, to agree upon what is proper; and because there will be a great many things wanted beside victuals and drink, that no business should be overlooked, it will be right to have one of every trade chosen, and then there can be no mistakes."

This motion was universally approved, and accordingly they proceeded directly to make the

choice; but in this they were very near falling into as great confusion as before, every one being ambitious of the honour. At length, however, and with difficulty, it was settled; and then the selected few withdrew to the next ale-house, to consult undisturbed upon the affair.

When they were seated and had smoked a whiff or two, to settle their heads, the constable, who by his office was one of the number, opened their deliberations." "Gentlemen," (said he, puffing out a pillar of smoke) "I believe I may say, without vanity, that there is no one in this company who understands these matters better than I do: I keep a good house myself, an hot joint every day, and roast and boiled, both, on Sundays; beside, my wife, it is well known, was bred up in a gentleman's family, and there learned a proper notion of doing things genteely. It is my opinion, therefore, that you leave the *whole* to me, and I will prevail upon her to give me advice."

"With your leave, Mr. constable, (answered a person who sat opposite to him, and heard him out with great impatience) though it be your luck to be in office this year, there are others in the parish who keep as good houses as you; and I believe my dame also has as good an opportunity of knowing these matters as another: I serve two or three gentlemen who keep French cooks, and she never goes to their houses with goods, that she does not learn some new piece of cookery from them; for she is a well-spoken body, and always asked to sit down among the
"up-

“upper servants; and then she is so fond of
 “practising what she thus picks up, that I
 “hardly ever know the name of what I eat;
 “but she tells me they are quite the mode, and
 “so I submit; though, in truth, I cannot say
 “but I should often prefer a cut of honest old
 “England; in my opinion, there is nothing
 “beats a roast sir-loin.”

This eloquent speech was followed by one as eloquent from every one present, declaring his own ability for this important affair, and putting in his claim to it. At length, when all saw that not one would give up his pretensions to another, they came to an agreement, that each should draw a bill of fare according to his taste and judgment, out of which they imagined they should certainly be able to make a proper choice.

Accordingly, they all went to work; and the streams which flowed from every mouth, while they were writing, proved with what candour they set down the things they liked best, and how glad they should be to eat them.

The bills of fare, produced upon this occasion, shewed that the English were not degenerated, in their stomachs at least, from their mighty ancestors. Buttocks upon buttocks, and sirloins without number.—Legs of pork, and saddles of mutton.—Filletts of veal and slices of bacon.—Hams by the dozen, and fowls by the groce.—Flocks of geese, and droves of turkies.—In short, the quantities of meat, when the bills were all read over together, turned the stomach of every one present, and made them readily accept the proposal of the man of the house, who undertook to furnish

furnish out a magnificent feast, if they would leave the whole to him. This great point being thus happily settled, they settled their stomachs also with a glass of right coniac, and then retired to their respective homes, to give their wives an account of these important transactions.

The fuss which was raised among the females upon this occasion, is not to be described. All their finery was immediately drawn forth, and examined; and then such consultations, and disputes with one gossip or another; such a clatter with mantua-makers, and milleners, putting lappets to this, and flounces to that, altering and turning, to set all things in order for making a proper appearance before my lord and my lady, that every house in the whole village was a scene of litter and distraction, from that till the day of the feast; many a poor tradesman sacrificing more than a year's profit of his business to his wife's vanity. Not that the husbands entirely neglected to adorn themselves either; but as their wives care was chiefly about their tails, theirs was confined to their heads, upon which every one heaped a bundle of grey hairs, as an emblem of his wisdom and experience, more huge than ever grew upon the oldest goat on *Giledd*; he that peeped out of the largest fleece thinking he cut the most respectable figure.

As for the feast, the ale-house man was not a moment at a loss in providing it. He had formerly been scullion in a gentleman's kitchen, so that he was not utterly unacquainted himself with the nasty ways of tossing up nice dishes: and now, with the help of an old
French

French woman who sold Bes-à-la-mode in a cellar, a German who made Bologna saussages, and a Jew who travelled about the country with ginger-bread and cheese-cakes, he made up a sufficient number of things with hard names, to satisfy the vanity of the entertainers, and poison all their guests, had they been fools enough to taste them; banishing the wholesome victuals of the country to the tables of the servants, as coarse and unfashionable; and giving nothing in the way that God made, or nature required it for nourishment and health.

Nor were the decorations less elegant and grand than the feast. As every trade in the parish had a representative in the set, to whom the management of matters was committed, it may be thought that they had a proper understanding among themselves, and did not neglect any article, however unnecessary and even absurd, which could possibly be soisted in to swell their respective bills.



C H A P. XVIII.

- “ *Impress’s quaint caparisons, and steeds;*
 “ *Bases, and tinsel trappings; gorgeous knights,*
 “ *Then marshall’d feast*
 “ *Seated up in hall, with sewers and seneschals.*

AT length the much wished-for day arrived. Words are too weak to convey an idea of the noise, hurry, and confusion, which reigned through the whole village; it seemed as if

chaos was come again. The streets, the lanes, the tops of the houses were filled with gaping crouds, who left their houses, at the first dawn of the morning, to secure the most convenient places where they might stand fasting all day, to see others go to a feast, in the afternoon. Nor were the happy few, who were admitted to the envied honour of seeing them eat, more provident. The thought of such a sight took away their appetites; and besides, they could not spare a moment from the important work of dressing, to take the least refreshment.

Tired of such complicated folly, I turned to his lordship's house, to see in what light he, and his attendants, looked upon this grand affair. My former knowledge of his natural good sense made me judge that he was above being infected with such absurdities. I was not deceived. He looked with pity upon the extravagance and folly of his tenants, at the same time that he received every testimony of their attachment with pleasure. But his servants were far enough from being so cool. The passion for seeing, and being seen, raged as violently in them as in the villagers themselves, and produced effects to the full as ridiculous.

When it was time for his lordship to go to this grand feast, he was summoned by a procession, from the village, who came to wait upon him. The extravagancies shewn upon this occasion exceed description; *devices without design, antics and emblems, destitute of meaning, humour, or ingenuity*, led the van; *asses in sur'd-gowns, and lambs in lasse-board armour*, marched lovingly together. *Fools, from the hand of nature*, drop'd their their broad sleeves,
and

and grin'd as savages ; in a word, every guise, that folly could put on, without even attempting to mimick reason, made up the motley cavalcade, and kept the croud agape.

When they had exposed themselves in this manner through the whole village, they ushered their guests into the place appointed for their entertainment, where they were marshalled according to their different ranks. I went with the croud, and took my station in the place from whence I could most conveniently see all that passed.

The numbers of every age, sex, and rank, which I saw around me, presented such a complicated scene, that notwithstanding the extraordinary powers conferred upon me by my guide, my eyes were dazzled, my head grew giddy, and I was unable to view it with that distinctness which alone could give me pleasure. I hung down my head, disappointed and abashed, and swelling with an hopeless sigh, "O that I had my kind guide here now (said I) to deliver me from this confusion and distress, by directing my attention to the objects most worthy of it, and enabling me to overlook every thing else, as he did before."

I had scarce uttered these words, when raising my eyes, I saw, to my inexpressible joy, my guide standing before me. "I heard your wish (said he, smiling at my surprize) and am come to gratify it." I see your senses sink under the pressure of such a multitude, and variety of objects."——Saying this he touched my eyes once more with his wand, when instantly the mists which swam before them were
dis-

dispelled, and I beheld all things with the greatest clearness and accuracy.

When I had indulged my curiosity for some time in gazing idly round me, "The scene before you (said my guide) is a just representation of the world in which you are. This truly may be called, *The Paradise of Fools*. You have seen with what eagerness and pains these people prepared themselves for this great occasion; with what anxiety they panted for the arrival of this moment; and you now see to what a wise end! In such pursuits is the life of man, in general, consumed. He looks forward to some particular object, paints it in the colours most pleasing to his imagination; and then, full of the idea, flights the enjoyment of every thing else, and fixes his happiness on the attainment of this; but when he has succeeded, when that for which he so long sighed, so eagerly laboured, is at length in his possession, his wishes are as unsatisfied as ever, and he finds it is no more than *gaping at a feast, which others are eating*.

"The persons who compose this croud are principally the inhabitants of the village, and the servants and attendants of the lord and his lady. The different pursuits of these two classes of people used formerly to create as great a difference in their manners, and appearance; but of late the case is quite altered; the bounds, which were wont to separate them are for the most part broken down, and they intrude into each other's provinces without distinction; his lordship's servants, and the gentlemen of their neighbourhood practising every mean craft to get money,
"for

“ for which they were accustomed to despise
 “ and ridicule the villagers; as these, in their
 “ turn, affect all the follies and vices of the
 “ fashion, and with an aukward profusion run
 “ into the expences and extravagancies which
 “ used to mark the character of the others.
 “ Hence you see tradesmen keep hounds and
 “ running horses, and their wives go as fine
 “ as ladies; while gentlemen turn stock-job-
 “ bers, and compound their debts to cheat their
 “ creditors: and this is the reason of that odd
 “ contrast, that contradiction of character in
 “ every face you meet.

“ Just as these general reflections are, they
 “ will be still more convincing when confirmed
 “ by particular instances. Observe that over-
 “ grown heap of mortality who sweats beneath
 “ the load of her lace and jewels. From the
 “ splendour of her appearance, you might rea-
 “ sonably conclude that she was a person of the
 “ first rank; but examine her nearer, and you
 “ will see that the meanness of her looks ful-
 “ lies the lustre of her diamonds, and her over-
 “ acted airs of gentility shew that she is not in
 “ her natural sphere.

“ She was the daughter of a country farmer,
 “ who tho’ he had several good farms of his
 “ own, was so bad a manager that he never
 “ could keep a penny in his pocket. To pre-
 “ vent his posterity’s feeling the same incon-
 “ veniencies, he married his daughter to that
 “ person, who sits neither asleep nor awake in
 “ yonder corner, a shop-keeper in the village,
 “ that she might be able to go to the till, and
 “ take out money, whenever she pleased. For
 “ some time they had good business, and went

“ ON

“ on very well, till he unluckily got in with
“ some of his lordship’s people, whom he must
“ immediately imitate in all their ways, drink-
“ ing and carousing at every public house in
“ the parish; while his wife, not to be less
“ genteel than he, scraped an acquaintance
“ some how at a puppet-show with one of her
“ ladyship’s maids, from whom she learned all
“ those fantastic airs, and became so fine a
“ gentlewoman, that she would scarce vouch-
“ safe to take the least notice of the green-
“ grocer’s or haberdasher’s wife, at the next
“ door, or indeed any of her old neighbours
“ in the village, with whom she had been in-
“ timiate before. The consequence of this was,
“ that while she was learning fashions, among
“ her ladyship’s maids, and he tippling at the
“ tavern with my lord’s men, or perhaps treat-
“ ing them at his own house, his shop was
“ neglected, and his business left at sixes and
“ sevens.

“ But their folly is still aggravated by this
“ circumstance, that the persons, for the sake
“ of whose company they do all this, laugh
“ at them the whole time, and would not fail
“ to turn their very ruin into ridicule. Of this
“ they both have had instances enough to open
“ the eyes of any who were resolved not to
“ see. One or two of these may not be unen-
“ tertaining.

“ As the wife’s education had been entirely
“ in the country, her father took pleasure in
“ seeing her practise all the rural sports he had
“ formerly excelled in himself; by which
“ means she could soon cudgel, vault, and play
“ at cricket as well as any of the rustic swains
“ around

“ around her. Of these polite accomplishments
 “ she could not forbear boasting, in the pride
 “ of her heart to her new acquaintance; who,
 “ to humour her vanity, and expose her folly,
 “ not only seemed to approve of them, but al-
 “ so mischievously encouraged her to display
 “ her dexterity at them in public company,
 “ while, under a sneer of seeming applause, she
 “ joined in the general laugh against her.

“ There is nothing that betrays a weak head,
 “ into more or grosser absurdities, than imita-
 “ tion. The great emulation among the fe-
 “ male sex at present is, who shall gather the
 “ greatest number of persons, no matter whe-
 “ ther of their acquaintance or not, or how in-
 “ famous in life or character, provided they
 “ dress well, and will game, at those nocturnal
 “ meetings, called with emphatical propriety,
 “ *Routs*.

“ As this woman's new acquaintance was
 “ particularly famous for the multitudes that
 “ always assembled on these occasions, she too
 “ must have her *Routs*, to shew her politeness
 “ and importance. An affair of such conse-
 “ quence required much deliberation. Whom
 “ to invite, and whereto put them, were the two
 “ material questions. The way to the parlour
 “ was through the shop; that therefore would
 “ not do by any means; and the room up-
 “ stairs, which for fashion-sake was called the
 “ dining-room, was so little, that three females
 “ in full dress could not move in it together.

“ After much consultation, a lucky thought
 “ at length removed both the difficulties. As
 “ the route was desired out of pure respect to
 “ her new acquaintance, she judged that it
 “ would

" would not be proper to invite any person to
 " it, who was not not a fit companion for her.
 " This reduced the number to the constable's
 " wife, and two or three more, and even these
 " were desired to come without their hoops,
 " that they might not incommode her, a com-
 " pliment, that it was thought could not fail to
 " please her. These difficulties being thus
 " happily got over, the lady was applied to, to
 " fix her own time, and cards of invitation
 " sent accordingly to the rest of the intended:
 " company.

" But an unlucky accident had like to have
 " spoiled all, in the very critical minute.
 " When the dining-room was swept out clean,
 " and lighted up in readiness, the mistress of
 " the route went down, and sat in the par-
 " lour to be at hand to receive her principal
 " guest, before whose arrival she did not
 " think it proper that the rest should go up
 " stairs. While she waited thus, with heart
 " pit a pat, for the rap at the door, the appren-
 " tice, who had put on his Sunday-cloaths to
 " officiate as a servant out of livery on the oc-
 " casion, happened to peep into the dining-
 " room, and not seeing a great chair at the
 " upper end of it, as he had observed in the
 " club-room at the alehouse where he used
 " some times to go for his master, he conclud-
 " ed it was forgot in the hurry. He resolved
 " therefore to correct such an over-sight, with-
 " out saying any thing of the matter, that the
 " surprize might enhance his merit with his
 " mistress: accordingly he would not go down
 " for his master's smoaking-chair, that stood
 " by the kitchen fire, but opening the bed-
 " chamber

“chamber to look for one there, he unluckily
 “cast his eye on the night-chair, by his mis-
 “tress’s bed-side, and never considering what
 “it was, brought it out, pan and all as it stood,
 “and placed it in state at the upper end of the
 “dining-room.

“He had scarce finished this notable piece of
 “management, when a thundering at the door
 “proclaimed the lady’s arrival, to the whole
 “neighbourhood. The new-made groom of
 “the chambers instantly flew to his post, happy
 “in the thought of what he had done, and held
 “open the door, while his mistress shewed her
 “guests up stairs.

“The lady, who of course led the way, no
 “sooner entered the room, than she was struck
 “with the sight of the uncouth piece of furni-
 “ture. Her delicacy instantly took the alarm,
 “she puckered her nostrils up to her eyes, and
 “turning away, exclaimed in a voice of disgust,
 “*Lard!* where am I got to.”

“The mistress of the *route*, who brought
 “up the rear, and had not yet come into the
 “room to see the horrid sight, nor heard dis-
 “tinctly what the lady said, imagined she was
 “taken suddenly ill, and ran up to her to
 “know what was the matter. *Lard!* woman!
 “(snuffed her ladyship through her handker-
 “chief, which she held to her nose) where
 “have you brought me? What is that?

“It is impossible to express the astonish-
 “ment and confusion of the other, when she
 “saw the unfortunate chair. Ruined and un-
 “done! (exclaimed she, as she fainted away
 “on the floor, where she lay for some time
 “before she could be brought to herself.)

“In

“ In the mean while one of the compa-
 “ ny, perceiving the cause of all this con-
 “ fusion, ordered it to be taken away, and
 “ assuring her ladyship, that it must have
 “ been brought there by some mistake, as she
 “ herself had been in the room but a few mi-
 “ nutes before, when she could vouch that
 “ there was no such thing to be seen, her la-
 “ dyship was pacified; and, when the mistress
 “ of the house at length recovered, conde-
 “ scended to comfort her, and even staid four
 “ minutes longer than she had designed (for
 “ she had many visits to make that afternoon,
 “ and could not possibly sit down to cards) to
 “ shew that she was not offended; though, not-
 “ withstanding all her good-nature, she told
 “ the whole affair, with several ingenious il-
 “ lustrations of her own in every company she
 “ went into that night; which was the real
 “ motive of her being in such haste to go away.

“ But this ridiculous end of an affair, that
 “ cost the person before us so much anxie-
 “ ty, was not sufficient to make her see her
 “ folly. She goes on still in the same strain
 “ of awkward imitation, sacrificing every solid
 “ happiness of life to the absurd vanity of striv-
 “ ing to appear in a character for which nature
 “ never designed her.”



C H A P. XIX.

In what the great are easiest to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if less ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances.

“**N**OR is her husband more fortunate in his attempts of the same kind. Behold him yonder, dozing off his last night’s debauch. The virtues of the great are generally above the ambition of their inferiors; but their follies and vices are of easy imitation. By these they descend to the level of the lowest part of the human species, who, proud to resemble them in any thing, take every opportunity of aping their example. Hence those unnatural inconsistencies, which offend reason in every view of life. Servant-maids in silk gowns, and countesses drinking gin. Tradesmen keeping whores, and lords riding races.

“The bloated features and bursting blood-shot eyes of this person shew how eagerly he imitates his betters in the most beastly vice that can disgrace a rational being; but his ambition stops not here. Resolved to be upon an equal footing with the freeholders of the manor, he has made interest to be put upon the jury of the court-leet, that he may have an opportunity of displaying his abilities and consequence.

“In

“ In speculation, it must appear advantageous
 “ to have the trades-people admitted thus to
 “ share in the government of the manor, as
 “ they should naturally be supposed to under-
 “ stand their own mysteries best, and for that
 “ reason be most capable of making such regu-
 “ lations as should promote trade, as well as
 “ for their own interest, most careful to prevent
 “ the land-holders from burdening it with
 “ unjust or injudicious impositions.

“ But experience has proved the vanity of
 “ such expectations. No sooner can a trades-
 “ man get upon the jury, than instead of tak-
 “ ing care of the interest of his trade in gene-
 “ ral, he immediately enters into a combi-
 “ nation with the lord’s servants; and, for the
 “ sake of bringing their custom to his own
 “ shop, assists them to carry every by-law they
 “ propose to serve any present purpose, how-
 “ ever ruinous in its consequences to the very
 “ trade in which he earns his bread. Thus,
 “ for instance, a shoemaker, for the sake of
 “ supplying shoes for his lordship’s labourers,
 “ shall consent to lay a tax upon leather, that
 “ must ruin his craft in the end: and if they
 “ betray their own trades in this manner, what
 “ will they scruple to do to others!

“ It is true, they take care to pay them-
 “ selves well for this prostitution; the badness
 “ of the goods they supply giving them such
 “ an exorbitant profit in their contracts, that
 “ they expect soon to be, and too often re-
 “ ally are, raised above the necessity of at-
 “ tending to their business, at the same time
 “ that the poor labourers, who are obliged to
 “ take these goods as part of their wages, suf-
 “ fer

“fer hardships, shocking to humanity, from
“this double dishonesty.

“But justice obliges me to acquit the per-
“son who gave occasion for these reflections
“from all such designs. Vanity was the sole
“motive for his getting upon the jury, and in
“the gratification of that consist his only plea-
“sure and employment; though this vanity
“is in its effect no less prejudicial, than the
“venality of the others; for, as the ambition
“of his shallow heart is to be upon good
“terms with his lordship’s servants, he never
“refuses any thing they require: so that the
“only difference between his conduct and
“that of the others is, that he does those dirty
“jobs for nothing which they do for hire.

“In contrast to these instances of vi-
“cious and absurd vanity, behold in yon tall
“meagre-looking person, and his wife, who sits
“behind him in the croud, instances of mean-
“ness, equally vicious and out of character.

“The place in which he stands shews the
“rank he holds among his lordship’s servants,
“to which he has been raised, not for any
“personal merit in himself, or liking of his
“master, but solely on account of the influ-
“ence which his wealth gives him among the
“tenants; he being possessed of the greatest
“property in the whole manor.

“It has been said that Heaven shews its
“disregard for riches, by the unworthy ob-
“jects on whom they are generally bestowed.
“The remark is rather witty than just; but,
“perhaps, there never could a stronger in-
“stance be alledged in support of it than this
“person. Though his wealth exceeds not
“only

“only the wants of nature and reason, but
 “also almost the very wishes of avarice itself,
 “his soul still yearns for more, with as much
 “greediness as a wretch perishing of famine
 “can for a morsel of bread. The whole bu-
 “siness of his days, his dreams by night, are
 “how to encrease his boundless store, to do
 “which there is not a mean or iniquitous art
 “invented by the perverted ingenuity of the
 “human mind, when sharpened and made
 “desperate by want, which he will not prac-
 “tise.

“Versed in the whole black mystery of gam-
 “ing, how often has he drawn in unexperi-
 “enced youth to ruin? How often have the
 “rewards earned by the merits of illustrious
 “ancestors, the fruits of the industry of ages,
 “melted in the magic of his art, and sunk in-
 “to his possession?

“Nor is he content with this exertion of
 “his skill, which, infamous as it really is,
 “custom, that can efface the distinctions of
 “nature, has sanctified it with the name of
 “*polite*. For those whose fears may fortunately
 “prevent their encountering him at his fa-
 “vourite weapons, cards and dice, he spreads
 “the inexplicable snares of usury, keeping a
 “public office for lending money to all who
 “can give him security on every contingency
 “of life, the chances of which he has calcu-
 “lated with such accuracy, that his expecta-
 “tions of gain are seldom disappointed. And
 “this is the source of his influence, there be-
 “ing few of the tenants of the manor, and
 “more especially of his lordship’s servants,
 “who are not in his debt. As for the place
 “he

“ he holds in his lord’s service, he sought it
 “ only for the lucrative emoluments which at-
 “ tend it. Stranger to every praise-worthy
 “ ambition, he sets honour at nought, and
 “ grasps even at power, only as it brings him
 “ profit.



C H A P. XX.

*He that plays at BOWLS must meet RUBS. The
 bitter DRUB'D. An old fox caught nap-
 ping. A penny saved is a penny got. Splen-
 did œconomy; with the unfortunate candle-ad-
 venture. A mortifying instance of the force of
 vanity.*

“ **I**N the occurrences of such a life, it is
 “ not possible for all his art, consummate
 “ as it is, to save him from some rubs. An
 “ instance in each character of a gamester
 “ and an usurer, will gratify honest indigna-
 “ tion.

“ Exerting his talents in the noble science
 “ of *betting*, some time ago, at a cricket-
 “ match, a butcher, whom he had taken in,
 “ (for the first rule of gaming is, that it le-
 “ vels all distinctions; a porter, who can
 “ pull out a full purse, being equal to a
 “ lord) was so provoked at being *bit*, that he
 “ resolved to take satisfaction with his hands,
 “ for the mistake of his head, and paid him with
 “ a hearty *drubbing*.

“ Such an affair naturally made a noise ;
 “ but the sufferer had the address not only to
 “ evade the scandal, but even to turn it to
 “ his own advantage with his lord, making
 “ him believe that he had met with such an
 “ insult on account of his known attach-
 “ ment to his interest, the butcher being an
 “ avowed partizan of a certain gentleman’s,
 “ who was at that time going to law with his
 “ lordship for the best part of his estate.

“ But he did not come off so much to his
 “ own satisfaction in an affair that happened
 “ to him, some time after, in his other capacity
 “ of an usurer. A gentleman took up at his
 “ office a sum of money, payable at the death
 “ of an uncle to whom he was heir ; for which
 “ he mortgaged the reversion of his uncle’s
 “ estate : as he did not rightly understand *the*
 “ *calculations*, he agreed to pay an exorbitant
 “ premium ; but, his uncle dying very soon,
 “ when the usurer went to demand his debt,
 “ the gentleman expostulated with him on the
 “ unreasonableness of the terms which he had
 “ inadvertently submitted to, and offered him
 “ the sum he had borrowed, with an handsome
 “ gratuity, beside the interest allowed by the
 “ law. But the other, unmoved by any thing
 “ he could say, insisted positively on his whole
 “ demand, and threatened to seize upon the
 “ estate mortgaged to him, if it was not paid
 “ directly.

“ Incensed at such iniquitous extortion, the
 “ gentleman had immediate recourse to a learn-
 “ ed practitioner of the law, to try if he could
 “ not have redress ; who, on perusing the deeds
 “ which had been executed between them,
 “ found

“ found that, by an oversight of all parties,
 “ the mortgage affected only a very small part
 “ of his estate, which was not worth half the
 “ sum lent, much less what was demanded; a
 “ particular subdenomination only, which had
 “ always been distinctly known from the rest,
 “ being named in the deeds.

“ Though the gentleman was above taking
 “ any dishonest advantage in such a case as
 “ this, he thought it justifiable to fight the de-
 “ vil at his own weapons, and defend himself
 “ by any means he could; accordingly he sent
 “ the usurer word, that, if he would not ac-
 “ cept of his debt, with the bare legal interest,
 “ he might take possession of the estate mort-
 “ gaged to him; as soon as he pleased; but,
 “ at the same time, let him know what that
 “ estate was.

“ Surprized at such a message, the usurer in-
 “ stantly sent for his lawyers, who, upon con-
 “ sultation, informed him, that the affair was
 “ too true, and the mistake now irremediable;
 “ and, therefore, he must only strive to make
 “ the best he could of it. When he had vent-
 “ ed his rage on his agents and lawyer, and
 “ cursed himself for confiding in them, he was
 “ not ashamed to go in person to the gentle-
 “ man, to try if he could not prevail upon
 “ him, at least to give him the gratuity he had
 “ offered at first. But his arguments were
 “ now as ineffectual as the gentleman's had
 “ been before; and, for once, he was obliged
 “ to take only his just debt, where he had
 “ thought himself secure of sinking the whole
 “ estate.

“ While he labours with this assiduity to
 “ heap up wealth by every iniquitous means,
 “ his wife is equally diligent in her province,
 “ practising every species of parsimony, how-
 “ ever scandalous and unjust, to cut off her
 “ tradesmen’s bills, and shorten the most ne-
 “ cessary expences of life by saving from the
 “ very bellies of her servants; for, however
 “ her fortune may seem to raise her above at-
 “ tention to such minute œconomy, there is
 “ nothing by which money can possibly be got
 “ that she thinks beneath her. An affair that
 “ happened not long since, will shew this in
 “ the strongest light.

“ It has been remarked, that the most oppo-
 “ site and apparently irreconcilable passions
 “ often spring from the same cause, and in-
 “ habit the same breast. The profusion that,
 “ in a particular manner, marks the character
 “ of the present age, is blended with an ava-
 “ rice so strong, as to seem capable of coun-
 “ teracting all it’s effects. An incontestible
 “ instance of this is the mean practice which
 “ prevails among those whose elevated rank
 “ makes them lead the mode, of permitting
 “ their servants to receive hire from their
 “ guests. Upon this practice some of supe-
 “ rior œconomy have improved so far as to
 “ lay a tax upon it, and bargain with their
 “ footmen to defray a great part of the ex-
 “ pence of their entertainments out of these
 “ scandalous perquisites.

“ But even this did not satisfy this lady.
 “ Her rank, as well as her eager passion for
 “ play, laid her under a kind of necessity of
 “ making a splendid appearance, and invit-
 “ ing

“ ing as much company as she could to her
 “ gaming parties. I have observed that the
 “ expence of these entertainments was borne
 “ by the servants. But still there was one
 “ thing which she had set her heart upon,
 “ though custom had not yet given her a
 “ right to it; this was the pieces of candles
 “ that remained after the company retired
 “ from her *routes*, which she thought would
 “ serve in her family on ordinary occasions,
 “ and save the expence of buying; but how
 “ to get them was the difficulty, as the foot-
 “ men who found the lights, retained them
 “ as their due.

“ At length, one night, when the compa-
 “ ny by some accident broke up much sooner
 “ than ordinary, so that the candles were not
 “ half burnt out, she was not able to resist
 “ the temptation, but resolved to have them
 “ some way or other. Accordingly, as soon
 “ as the hurry was over, and the servants, as
 “ she thought, all gone to sleep, she stole
 “ out of her bed, and went down stairs, naked
 “ to her shift as she was, with a design to
 “ steal them; which she imagined she might
 “ easily do, as the servants, impatient to get
 “ to rest after their fatigue, used only to blow
 “ them out, and to leave them in the candle-
 “ sticks, till they went to clean up the rooms
 “ next morning.

“ It happened unluckily that one of the
 “ footmen suspected some of his fellows had
 “ found a way of opening the box, in which
 “ their alms-money (for, literally, they stood
 “ like beggars to receive it) was kept, till it
 “ was divided, and resolved to be upon the

“ watch this night, to try if he could discover
 “ the thief.

“ He had not waited long, when he heard
 “ his mistress treading softly through the
 “ apartments; and imagining that she was the
 “ person he watched for, (for there was no
 “ light to let him see who it was) he stood
 “ still till she came to him, and then, spread-
 “ ing his arms in her way, caught her, load-
 “ ed as she was with the pieces of candles,
 “ with which she had filled the fore-part of
 “ her shift; for she had, in her haste, for-
 “ got to bring any thing to carry them off
 “ in.

“ It is easy to conceive her surprize and
 “ confusion at such an encounter; nor was
 “ the fellow’s much less. But the discovery
 “ of her situation soon restored him to his
 “ senses, and instantly suggested the method
 “ of his revenge. “ And so, my dear, (said
 “ he) you want wax-candles! But I’ll make
 “ you pay for your pilfering.” Saying which
 “ he prepared to gratify a passion more na-
 “ tural at least, if not more delicate, than
 “ that which had brought her into such a
 “ scrape.

“ The lady, who could not be at a loss
 “ to know what he designed, was in the
 “ highest distress. Her *virtue* instantly took
 “ the alarm at such an attempt; but how to
 “ avoid it was the difficulty. If she spoke
 “ to refuse him, she knew her voice would
 “ betray her, and she should be exposed for
 “ ever, at the same time that the fear of losing
 “ her booty prevented her letting go her hold
 “ to struggle with him, and strive to repel
 “ force

“ force by force. It is not easy to say what
 “ resolution she would have taken in such an
 “ embarrassment; or, indeed, whether she
 “ would have taken any before it was too
 “ late, had not a very singular circumstance
 “ most unexpectedly proved the safeguard of
 “ her honour.

“ The fellow had scarce taken her in his
 “ arms, when the perfumes, which steamed
 “ from every part of her, gave such offence
 “ to his nostrils, accustomed to no stinks but
 “ those of nature, that, his stomach instantly
 “ turning, he discharged its contents full in
 “ her face, before he had time to let her go;
 “ and then, damning her for a stinking brim-
 “ stone, spurned her from him with abhor-
 “ rence. As soon as she had wiped her face
 “ with her sleeve, and recovered her breath,
 “ she picked up some of the candles which she
 “ had dropped, and retired, the manner of her
 “ deliverance a good deal lessening the plea-
 “ sure of it; though it was some satisfaction
 “ to her, however, to think that she had
 “ preserved her booty, and escaped undiscover-
 “ ed.

“ But, in the latter, she soon had the mor-
 “ tification to find herself deceived. The fel-
 “ low told the whole story, with some obvious
 “ additions, to all the servants next morning
 “ at breakfast, when her waiting-woman,
 “ (from whom she could not possibly conceal
 “ some part of it, as she was obliged to have
 “ recourse to her assistance to get herself clean-
 “ ed; though at the same time she gave her
 “ the strictest charge not to mention a syl-
 “ lable of the matter, laying it upon her hus-
 “ band,

“band, who, she said, had drank a little too freely the night before) her woman, I say, out of a principle of conscience, and that none of her innocent fellow-servants should be under such a scandalous aspersions, betrayed the whole secret to them all, from whom, through the channel of intelligence of their fraternity, it soon spread over the whole village.

“The feast, you see, is finished, at which you must have observed that the hospitable entertainers and their guests seemed to have exchanged characters; the former, willing to have something for their money, eating as voraciously as if they were half starved, and never expected to meet so good a meal again; while the latter have been wholly taken up in looking about them, and making good-natured remarks on every thing they have seen. But, soft! a curious scene yonder demands your attention for a moment, after which we will return to the lady’s husband again, who will supply more matter for your observation.”

Just as my guide said this, I heard an uproar at the door of the house, and, turning about to see what was the occasion of it, was witness to a scene sufficiently ridiculous to have put vanity itself out of countenance.

As his lordship’s late agent, who had been invited by the villagers to their feast, was going away, a parcel of attorneys clerks and bailiffs, who had been employed by him while he conducted the law-suit, gathered about him, and insisted on carrying him in triumph to his own house on their shoulders.

The

The zeal of the poor fellows on this occasion was natural. The agent had given them constant employment, in which, to do them justice, they had earned their wages very well, and on his losing his place they apprehended the suit would be made up some how, and they should want work; they therefore took this method of testifying their grateful regard for him; which they imagined might also convey an advantageous opinion of them to his successor; but the affected modesty with which he faintly repelled their attempts, while the vanity of his heart glistened through the thin disguise, shewed in the most mortifying light the inability of man's boasted reason to resist the impulse of the most contemptible passions. The fight was too painful; I turned away, vexed and disgusted, while he went off intoxicated with their empty shouts and applause.

The tumult and confusion at the breaking up of the company are not to be described. "You see (said my guide) the conclusion of
 "an affair that raised such expectation. The
 "life of man has not unaptly been compared
 "to a feast, from whence some depart empty,
 "others satiated; and all unsatisfied and disappointed, and as impatient to get away as
 "they were eager to come. We will leave
 "the entertainers to congratulate themselves
 "on their elegant taste and judicious conduct
 "in this important matter, to spread the fame
 "of which they have resolved to hire the
 "common crier, to proclaim the bill of fare
 "of their sumptuous entertainment at the
 "market-cross, and follow that person who,

“as I told you, will soon do something that
“shall compleat his character.”



C H A P. XXI.

*Interesting hints, which set some matters much con-
vassed in a new light.*

AS soon as his lordship was returned home from the feast, his servants met together to consult upon the conduct proper for them to observe in the present critical conjuncture. “While these people are making the unmean-
“ing preambles (said my guide) with which
“the most urgent business must be ushered in,
“I’ll give you a few leading hints, to enable
“you to enter the reader into the spirit of the
“scene opening before you.

“You must have observed that the bubble
“of the day, the subject that engrosses the
“thoughts of all the inhabitants of the na-
“tion, is the law-suit in which they are
“at present engaged. About this they are di-
“vided into two parties, directly opposite to
“each other in their opinions; one for prose-
“cuting it with the utmost vigour, without
“considering what consequences may attend
“such a conduct, or setting any limits to
“their expectations; the other, for compound-
“ing the dispute almost at any rate, to save
“the expence of carrying it on. At the head
“of the latter is the person whom we have
“followed hither; as the former flatter them-
“selves

“ selves that they have the late agent on their
 “ side, because he had conducted it with
 “ judgment and spirit, while he was in his
 “ office.

“ It is hard to say which of these parties
 “ acts on the most irrational principles. The
 “ One, from a mean and absurd motive of
 “ parsimony, would betray the honour of their
 “ lord, and the interest of the manor; the
 “ other, composed principally of the various
 “ retainers of the law, and tradesmen who
 “ make an advantage of supplying them with
 “ goods, on the lord's account, from motives
 “ equally selfish, though disguised under the
 “ pompous pretext of public spirit, and a pas-
 “ sion for glory, which never fail to take
 “ with the mob, are for pushing on their suc-
 “ cesses against the dictates of reason and jus-
 “ tice, magnifying every advantage that has
 “ been gained as of the most essential im-
 “ portance, and not only grasping at more,
 “ but also insisting on keeping all they have
 “ gotten; while the former with equal sincerity
 “ decry them as insignificant, and not worth
 “ the trouble and expence of acquiring, much
 “ less of retaining, and therefore are for giv-
 “ ving up them all indiscriminately.

“ In the same manner do they differ about
 “ the conduct to be observed with some of
 “ their neighbours, who have taken part with
 “ them in the dispute; these are for dropping
 “ them directly, and leaving them to shift for
 “ themselves as well as they can, without re-
 “ gard to any promises which may have been
 “ made them to the contrary, or to their be-
 “ ing drawn into the scrape, merely because

“ of their being some way connected with this
 “ manor; as the others are for supporting
 “ them, right or wrong, without ever consid-
 “ ering whether they are able to bear such an
 “ expence, or not.

“ It is obvious that the right course lies in
 “ the middle between these opinions, could
 “ their directors divest themselves of preju-
 “ dice, to discern and find reason in to pur-
 “ sue it. As this it was intended to do first
 “ not wantonly, or from a hasty disposi-
 “ tion, but to assert a legal right, and recover
 “ losses unjustly suffered, it would be a
 “ dishonourable and weak to drop it before
 “ those ends are obtained; again in the course
 “ of the contest some regulations have been
 “ made, which were not originally intended,
 “ the voice of reason directs to return to
 “ many of them as still indemnify for the ex-
 “ pences of the law-suit, and disable the ag-
 “ gressors from attempting the like injustice
 “ for the future; as, on the other hand, when
 “ that right is incontestably established, and
 “ not only those losses recovered, but also a
 “ sufficient indemnification for the past, and
 “ security against the future obtained, to grant
 “ at more inverts the nature of the contest,
 “ and makes those the aggressors who before
 “ had justice on their side.

“ The same middle rule holds equally good
 “ in respect to their associates in the suit; such
 “ of them as have been involved in it merely
 “ on account of their connection with the ma-
 “ nor, should most certainly be protected;
 “ that is, if it can be done without ruining
 “ their protectors; farther than which nothing

" can oblige a community to go. Where that
 " cannot be, self-preservation cancels every
 " thing, and renders commands to yield to a
 " necessity that cannot be refused, till an hap-
 " pier hour shall offer for redressing their
 " wrongs, and making them amends for
 " their loss; and for those who may have
 " entered into the dispute, to have particular
 " proposals of their own, or for the sake of
 " peace, it is staining honour to say that it is
 " any way concerned to keep up a connection
 " with them, one moment longer than it is
 " convenient. All that is necessary to be done
 " is, not to break with them without giving
 " them notice to provide for their own
 " safety.

" Certain the Prince is not insensible; but,
 " though he is sensible of his own concurrence
 " in what he thinks proper to do, there
 " are obstacles in his way, which make him
 " at a loss how to proceed, and hinder the
 " enjoyment of his evil power. The par-
 " ty which is for continuing the suit is against
 " him of course, from the circumstance of his
 " coming into the management of affairs in
 " the place of their favourite, the late agent;
 " (as for this old Steward, though some of
 " them perhaps have not yet forgot the good
 " cheer he used to give them, as they have no
 " opinion of his capacity for business, they
 " give themselves no great concern about his
 " dismissal) and even the more rational of
 " those who wish to see the dispute termin-
 " ated, in an amicable and just manner, are
 " afraid he will be in such haste to make it
 " up, in hopes of securing himself in his place,
 " that

“ that he will not take sufficient care of their
 “ interests, nor make the most of the advan-
 “ tages gained by his predecessor, for fear any
 “ part of the merit should redound to him.

“ Opposed thus by one party, and distrusted
 “ by the other, he stands in the utmost em-
 “ barrasment, unable to follow the dictates
 “ of his own judgment, and obliged to adopt
 “ the measures of those who alone will join
 “ with him. These are they who are for
 “ *compounding* matters at any rate, at the
 “ head of whom is this person, who, as his
 “ great property makes a large portion of the
 “ expence of the suit fall to his share, has
 “ ever been averse to carrying it on, *weeping*
 “ over the successes which have attended it, as
 “ he imagined they would raise the expecta-
 “ tions of the tenants still higher, and con-
 “ sequently make the composition he wanted
 “ to bring about more difficult.

“ I have drawn this short sketch, to assist
 “ your judgment in a matter which preju-
 “ dice and party represent in such different
 “ colours. To some, perhaps, the concerns
 “ of a private manor may not seem worth so
 “ much trouble; but the heart of man, and
 “ the motives of his actions, which are the ob-
 “ jects of your observation, are often as clear-
 “ ly shewn in such trifles as in matters of the
 “ greatest moment. “ But soft! the grand de-
 “ bate begins.”



C H A P. XXII.

Disputes will arise, where every man is for himself. A sure method of removing scruples, and reconciling opposite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMPOUNDER finished. The conclusion.

COMPLIMENTS being mutually paid, and judgment passed upon the feast, and the dress and characters of the entertainers and their various guests, the company at length seated themselves round a table, and the steward proceeded to business.

“I have desired this meeting, gentlemen, (said he) that I may have your advice how to act in the affair of this law-suit in which we are entangled. Whether it is to be carried on, or made up? and how we are to accomplish which ever we resolve upon? It is a matter of consequence, and requires the most deliberate care and attention.”

“Whether the law-suit is to be carried on, or made up, sir! (answered the grand compounder) cannot admit of a moment’s doubt with any one who considers the distressed situation to which we are reduced by it. All our ready money is gone, and our farms mortgaged so deeply that no one will lend us any more. How then should we carry it on, if we were so inclined? Or, how far are we to go, even if we were able? When first

“we

“ we begun it, we were told that a term or
“ two would certainly bring our adversary to
“ reason. But we have gone on, term after
“ term, I don't know how long, at an ex-
“ pence that no other people upon earth would
“ be such fools as to undertake ; and still are as
“ far from a conclusion as the moment we set
“ out. As for the mighty advantages, which
“ the lawyers and their party make such a noise
“ about, what have they done but filled our
“ wise heads with notions of new demands,
“ which our adversary will never comply with ;
“ and we should not have dreamed of making,
“ had it not been for them : So that, the more
“ advantages as they are called we gain, the
“ farther we are from the conclusion we wish
“ for. The lawyers, indeed, have gained
“ advantages. They receive their fees from
“ us, and extort costs from the adversary also ;
“ which, in our great wisdom, we have given
“ up to them, as an encouragement to be ho-
“ nest, instead of reimbursing ourselves with
“ them as we ought ; and therefore they are in
“ the right to spin out the suit as long as they
“ can. But I hope their reign is at an end ; and
“ that we have seen our folly too plainly, to
“ be dupes to them any longer. My opinion,
“ therefore, Mr. Steward is, that we compound
“ the matter directly. We must take care of
“ ourselves. Any composition in our case is
“ better than none.”

“ It is to be hoped (replied one who sat at
“ the other side of the table, and by his green
“ bag full of papers, appeared to be their clerk
“ in court) that Mr. Steward will have more
“ regard to his own character (a consideration
“ that

“ that appears to have lost all weight with the
 “ gentleman who spoke last, as well as to his
 “ lordship’s honour and the interest of the ma-
 “ nor, than to be influenced by such sordid, base
 “ advice. It has been owing to such scandalous
 “ complaints of our inability to carry on the
 “ suit, that it has continued so long, they only
 “ having encouraged our adversary to persist,
 “ not from any hope of getting the better of us
 “ fairly, but of wearing out our resolution;
 “ and if this is not directly betraying his lord-
 “ ship, the consequence is just as bad.”

So home a charge put the *compounder* out of all patience. He started up, sputtering and foaming like a madman, for his passion had deprived him of the power of utterance, and, tearing open his waistcoat, was going to demand instant satisfaction from his accuser. But a gentleman who sat at the upper end of the table interposed, and catching hold of his hand, “ For heaven’s sake, Sir, (said he) how
 “ can you take notice of what he says? The
 “ gentleman perhaps thinks that he will have
 “ no more business, if the suit should be made
 “ up, and therefore says any thing to support
 “ it. But you have a fortune of your own,
 “ and do not depend upon the precarious in-
 “ come of a place.”

“ Whatever I depend on, (returned the
 “ clerk eagerly) I do not prostitute my honour
 “ and abilities, and make myself the hackney
 “ tool of every party that is uppermost, to
 “ keep that place, changing like a weather-
 “ cock with every gust of wind, and counter-
 “ acting one day the measures of the last, as
 “ I happen to be ordered.”

Such

Such reflections were too general. Every mouth was instantly opened to reply, when the steward commanding silence, with a tone and air of authority, "I was in hopes, gentlemen (said he) that you would have thought proper to deliberate coolly on the matter I proposed to you; but, instead of that, you have fallen out among yourselves, and that about nothing at all. You may all be assured, that whatever measures I take, no gentleman here shall be a sufferer. You, Mr. Clerk need not be so warm! If the suit is made up, there are other places as profitable as the one you have at present. I design to make you first clerk in my own office, which I hope will remove all your scruples; and on the other hand, if it cannot be made up quite so readily as you, Sir, (addressing himself to the *grand compounder*) may wish, there are ways of making up to you, not only what you may suffer by the delay, but also a good part of what you have been out of pocket already: so that you had no occasion for being so much alarmed at what the gentleman said, nor stripping to fight with him, like a porter. Such wrangling is most unbecoming gentlemen."

This speech healed all animosities, and restored the general harmony in a moment. The clerk bowed with a smile of the most cheerful acquiescence; and the *grand compounder*, unable to conceal his joy, blubbered out, between laughing and crying, "I am sorry, Sir, that I should misbehave myself before you; but it was impossible to bear such an aspersions unmoved. I am sure I have shewn my

"at-

"attachment to his lordship's honour and in-
 "terest in many different instances, in the
 "several capacities I have served him in.
 "When I was *cockswain of his barge*, I
 "obliged his watermen to wear a particular
 "livery, at their own expence, and regulated
 "their rank; and t'other day again, when I
 "was steward of the manor on the other side
 "of the river, I drove away that *sinuggler* and
 "his gang who put them all into such a pa-
 "nick, by the great preparations which I
 "made to attack them; and even in this very
 "affair of the law-suit, I have been at greater
 "expence than any man in the whole manor;
 "and it is very hard, if a man may not even
 "speak who parts with so much money for
 "nothing. I am sure it has gone to my heart
 "many a time, when I have given away the
 "rent of a whole farm at once! After all this,
 "I say, it is too much to be accused of be-
 "traying his interest and honour. But, as I
 "can depend upon your word, I shall think
 "no more of it."

When the *grand compounder* had thus unbur-
 dened his heart, the steward once more re-
 sumed the subject of their meeting. "As for
 "this law-suit, gentlemen, (said he) I own I
 "am heartily tired of it, as I presume every
 "man in his senses is; and am determined to
 "make it up as soon as I can, that is, without
 "prejudice to his lordship's honour and the
 "real interest of the manor, which, however
 "some people may pretend to distinguish be-
 "tween them, are essentially one and the same
 "thing. But how to bring this about is the
 "difficulty. The mob is intoxicated with
 "our

“our successes to such a degree, that they
 “would be ready to drag any man through
 “the kennel who should only mention stop-
 “ping, though they do not even know what
 “they would be at, in going on. In these cir-
 “cumstances, I think it will be the best way
 “to let our adversary privately know, that
 “we are not averse to an accommodation;
 “and that if he will send one of his people
 “here with such a proposal, to give a colour
 “to the affair, one of us will go to him, with
 “full power to settle all matters in dispute
 “between us. In the mean while we must
 “let the lawyers go on, at least till the end of
 “the term, to keep the mob in good humour;
 “and when the affair is finished, we must con-
 “trive to throw some new bubble or other up
 “in the air, for them to gaze at, which may
 “divert their attention from every thing else.
 “This, gentlemen, is my opinion: I only am
 “at a loss for a proper person to send. It
 “must be one of some consequence, to give
 “weight to what he says, and who does not
 “regard the abuse and insults of the mob, of
 “which he will probably be the chief object,
 “in the first sallies of their resentment, before
 “there can be any thing done to appease them.”

“I am the man! (said the *grand compounder*,
 “starting up in a transport) I am the man!
 “I have given proof, that I defy the resent-
 “ment of the most desperate mob; and no
 “person’s word will have more weight with
 “our adversary than mine. I am intimately
 “acquainted with most of his principal ser-
 “vants, with whom I have all along kept up
 “a friendly intercourse; which has made him
 “think

“ think that I am well inclined to his interest;
 “ so that he will have proper regard to every
 “ thing I propose. Let me but go; and I will
 “ undertake to settle every thing.”

“ With all my heart, Sir, (answered the
 “ steward) you shall go, since you desire it.
 “ But take care that your eagerness is not seen
 “ through, and taken advantage of. I’ll draw
 “ up your instructions without delay, and give
 “ you a sum of money to bear your charges,
 “ that shall make you easy; for I know you are
 “ not extravagant in your expences.”

“ And do, pray Sir, (added the *grand com-*
 “ *pounder*) add some little matter on my wife’s
 “ account. I know she will be for going too.
 “ It will not be thrown away: she has an ex-
 “ cellent knack at fishing out secrets, and will
 “ be a great assistance to me.”

“ Well Sir, (returned the steward) we shall
 “ not differ about that. But, gentlemen, there
 “ is one thing more, which I must observe to
 “ you. As you all approve of this step, I
 “ shall expect that when the accommodation is
 “ concluded, you will all sign it as well as I;
 “ for light as some people make of the resent-
 “ ment of a mob, I do not chuse to stand
 “ single before it neither.”

Matters being thus settled, the company
 broke up; and the *grand compounder*, in the
 fullness of his joy, muttering to himself as he
 passed me, “ Aye! aye! let me alone to com-
 “ pound matters! I shall not stand upon terms.
 “ *Any composition is better than none!*” I was
 so provoked at his premeditated baseness, that,
 forgetting the positive injunction of my guide,
 I could not forbear crying out aloud, “ Vil-
 “ lain!

"lain! take that!" and at the same time gave him a kick on the posteriors with all my might.

But I soon had reason to repent of my rashness. The whole scene instantly vanished! I awoke from my *Reverie*; and found myself sitting in the same chair, where I had forgot myself a few hours before, with the additional vexation of having broken my shin against the frame of the table by my inconsiderate kick.

F I N I S.

ERRATA.

Vol. I. Page. II. line 7. *Dele*, with my mother.

line 8. *For* (her fortune) *read*,
his wife's fortune) &c.

John H. H.